This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

Digitized by Google

5C
CRCB

2 vols
£3 | 15 | -

2 vols
£3 | 15 | -

747.53 (1)

Beit
Fund.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

5C
CRCB

2 vols
£3 10 7 -

747.53(1)

Beit
Fund.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Carriage drawn by Dogs; used at Kamchatka.

Mentioned page 149. of Vol: I.

Digitized by Google

Published as the Act directs Nov.r 12.th 1789. by G. Robinson & Partners

MEMOIRS AND TRAVELS

OF

MAURITIUS AUGUSTUS COUNT DE BENYOWSKY;

MAGNATE OF THE KINGDOMS OF HUNGARY AND POLAND, ONE OF THE CHIEFS OF THE CONFEDERATION OF POLAND, &c, &c.

CONSISTING OF HIS MILITARY OPERATIONS IN POLAND, HIS EXILE INTO KAMCHATKA, HIS ESCAPE AND VOYAGE FROM THAT PENINSULA THROUGH THE NORTHERN PACIFIC OCEAN, TOUCHING AT JAPAN AND FORMOSA, TO CANTON IN CHINA, WITH AN ACCOUNT OF THE FRENCH SETTLEMENT HE WAS APPOINTED TO FORM UPON THE ISLAND OF MADAGASCAR.

WRITTEN BY HIMSELF.

TRANSLATED FROM THE

ORIGINAL MANUSCRIPT.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL I.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR G. G. J. AND J. ROBINSON, PATER-NOSTER-ROW.

M,DCC,XC.

Digitized by Google

Sir Francis Edwards £3/10/- 2 vols (BF)

RHODES HOUSE
16 APR 1935
LIBRARY

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

OF THE

FIRST VOLUME.

AN ACCOUNT OF THE TROUBLES IN POLAND IN THE YEARS 1768, 1769; MORE PARTICULARLY THOSE EVENTS IN WHICH THE COUNT BENYOWSKY HAD A SHARE, AND WHICH TERMINATED IN HIS BEING MADE PRISONER BY THE RUSSIANS. Page 1

JOURNAL OF THE TRAVELS OF THE COUNT BENYOWSKY INTO SIBERIA. 53.

CHAP. I.

Introduction. The Count arrives at Tobolzk, the capital of Siberia. Humanity of the governor. Departure from that place. Villages on the road. City of Tara. River and town of Tomsky. The Tartars intereſt themſelves in favour of the exiles. A propoſal is made to the Count to eſcape to China, to which his wounds prevent his acceding. Preſent to the Exiles from the Tartars. Diſintereſted behaviour of their conductor. Page 53

CHAP. II.

Departure from Tomszky. Juſka Kraſnoiarſzk. Illimſk. Price current of European goods and furs at that place. Jakutzk. Privileged company of traders in furs. The Count projects his future eſcape in concert with M. Hoffman. A ſociety of Exiles formed. They depart for Jakutzk. Leaving M. Hoffman behind. Their guards quarrel. Alarming conſequence of Mr. Hoffman's death. Its effects happily prevented. - - 61

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. III.

Village of Judoma. Sledges drawn by dogs. Arrival at Ochoczk. Deſcription of that town and harbour. State of its commerce. The exiles embark for Kamchatka. Their dangerous paſſage. 72

CHAP. IV.

Arrival at Kamchatka, Conference with ſome Exiles there. They wait upon the governor, and receive inſtructions. Village of the Exiles. Ordinances of the Czar Peter for their regulation. 80

CHAP. V.

The Count forms an intimacy with Mr. Cruſtiew, an exile. Society eſtabliſhed for projecting the means of Eſcape. The Count's ſpeech and plan of a conſtitution. The exiles wait upon the governor and the chancellor. The governor appoints the Count to teach the languages to his children. An unforeſeen event tends greatly to mitigate the diſtreſſes and advance the projects of the exiles. - - 89

CHAP VI.

The Count enters upon his office as language-maſter. The governor preſents him with a female ſlave, and a ſledge drawn by dogs. A propoſal made to him by ſome of the chief gentlemen of the town to eſtabliſh a ſchool. A party at cheſs. An evening's entertainment. Partiality of Miſs Aphanaſia Nilow, the governor's youngeſt daughter, for the Count. Madame Nilow approves her attachment. - - - - - 98

CHAP. VII.

A building erected for a ſchool. Converſation with Madame Nilow. Profits ariſing from the Count's ſkill at cheſs. Miſs Aphanaſia converſes with the Count. The ſociety of exiles reinforced. Hunting the bear. - - - - 103

CHAP

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VIII.

Public ſchool opened. The ſociety of exiles meet on buſineſs relative to their eſcape by Sea. Cheſs. The Count compoſes charts of the coaſts and iſlands adjoining to Kamchatka. Dangerous conſequence of the affair laſt debated in the ſociety of exiles. Averted by the Count, who narrowly eſcapes aſſaſſination. His enemy puniſhed. 109

CHAP IX.

The exiles narrowly eſcape poiſoning, on New Year's Day. Diſcovery of the author, who diſcloſes their project, as communicated to him by one of their number. The exiles meet, and put the traitor to death in the night. Farther enquiries made by government, which are rendered abortive by an accidental circumſtance. - 117

CHAP X.

The Count conſtructs a muſical inſtrument for his ſcholar Miſs Aphanaſia. Members propoſed to the ſociety of exiles. Plan of operation ſettled. The governor propoſes a journey. Large ſums of money won at cheſs, and part preſented to the governor's family. Miſs Aphanaſia declares her affection for the Count in the preſence of her father, who is exceedingly irritated, but is pacified by his colleagues in office. The governor makes the neceſſary diſpoſitions to reverſe the ſentence of exile under which the Count was baniſhed. - 121

CHAP XI.

The Count is in danger of being put to death by his aſſociates. Their ſuſpicions removed. An embarraſſing dilemma. Preſents made to the Count. The manner of his abſolution from the ſentence of exile. He makes a propoſal to the council. Generous diſpoſition of the chief inhabitants of the town. Conſequences of the Count's advancement. - - - - 126

CHAP

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XII.

Proof of the confidence and attachment of the exiles to the Count. The governor and council liberate the exiles. The Count promises to procure the enlargement of the person who attempted to poison him. Farther progress of the exiles in their projects to escape. An entertainment proposed. The gentlemen of the town make presents to the Count. Good effects of the Count's exertions in favour of his enemy. - - - - 134

CHAP. XIII.

Preparations for marriage. Singular preliminary custom. Precautions for preserving secrecy and securing the progress of the undertaking of the exiles during the Count's absence. Grand projects for creating governments and empires in the north. An entertainment on the occasion of the freedom of the exiles. - - 141

CHAP. XIV.

A journal of an excursion made by the governor of Bolsoretsky Ostrogg, in company with the Count de Benyowsky. - - 149

CHAP. XV.

An abridgment of the history and description of Kamchatka - 155

CHAP. XVI.

An account of the natives of Kamchatka, their origin, food, habitations, religion, &c. The narrative of the proceedings of the exiles resumed

Digitized by Google

resumed. Preparations for war. The constitution of the society of exiles altered. Consequence thence arising. - - 161

CHAP. XVII.

Various proceedings in the association for projecting the escape of the exiles from slavery. - - - - 169

CHAP. XVIII.

The exiles in danger of treachery. They endeavour to procure a vessel, but without success. Their military arrangement. Final project. - - - - - 176

CHAP. XIX.

A journey to Lopattka. Siberian sorcery. Return to Bolsha. 185

CHAP. XX.

A dangerous disturbance among the exiles. Its consequence. - 193

CHAP. XXI.

The Count negociates with the captain of a vessel. Preparations for the approaching crisis. - - - - 201

CHAP. XXII.

Preparations for departure. Miss Aphanasia discovers the intention of the exiles. - - - - 208

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XXIII.

Various proceedings. The chancellor receives information of the attempts of the exiles. The Count's exertions to prevent the conſequences of this diſcovery. - - - - - - 215

CHAP. XXIV.

The ſubject of the preceding chapter continued. - - 221

CHAP. XXV.

Various proceedings relative to the projected eſcape of the exiles and the diſcoveries made by government. - - - 225

CHAP. XXVI.

Proceedings of the Government of Kamchatka, in conſequence of the diſcovery of the Count's plan to liberate the exiles. - - 232

CHAP. XXVII.

The Government ſends a military force to take the Count priſoner. The exiles oppoſe them and by their ſuperior bravery and military ſkill, aſſiſted by a fortunate concurrence of events, they gain poſſeſſion of the fort. The Governor is ſlain in the attack. - 141

CHAP. XXVIII.

The proceedings of the Count and his party of exiles, from the time of gaining poſſeſſion of the fort, to the time of the ſurrender of the military

Digitized by Google

tary force of the government, who gave hoſtages to the Count. - - - - 246

CHAP. XXIX.

Tranſactions from the time of the receiving of hoſtages from the military of the province, to the final embarkation of the Count aud his party in the St. Peter and St. Paul. - - - - 254

CHAP. XXX.

A ſhort extract of the voyages made to the eaſtward of Kamchatka. 264

CHAP. XXXI.

Minutes drawn up, for the purpoſe of forming a chart, together with details reſpecting Siberia and the ſea coaſt of Kamchatka; and a deſcription of the Kurelles and Aleuthes iſlands. - 269

CHAP. XXXII.

A deſcription of Kamchatka. - - - - 276

CHAP. XXXIII.

Remarks on the Coaſt of Kamchatka. - - - 279

CHAP. XXXIV.

A deſcription of the Aleuthes iſlands diſcovered to the eaſtward of Kamchatka. - - - - - - 280

CHAP. XXXV.

A deſcription of the Kurelles iſlands. - - - 286

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XXXVI.

A deſcription of the iſlands of Jedzo. - - 292

CHAP. XXXVII.

A ſupplement to the deſcription of the coaſt of Tartary and the iſland Saghalin. - - - - - - 297

A continuation of the Memoirs of the Count de Benyowſky: being a journal of his voyage by ſea, from the peninſula of Kamchatka to Canton in China. - - - - - - 299

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

OF THE

SECOND VOLUME.

A Memoir concerning the expedition to Madagaſcar, for the formation of a Royal eſtabliſhment on that iſland; the execution and chief command of which were entruſted by His Majeſty to the Count de Benyowſky, Proprietary Colonel of a corps of volunteers, in 1772. page 93

A full account of particulars relating to the Royal eſtabliſhment at Madagaſcar, entruſted to M. the Count de Benyowſky: from his arrival on the iſland on the 14*th of February,* 1774. 114

Pieces referred to in the Memoirs. - - - 283

Obſervations upon the diſorders of the iſland of Madagaſcar. 340

Supplement to ſerve as a ſequel to the Memoirs coucerning Madagaſcar. - - - - - 354

Copies of the Miniſterial letters of France, of the oath of the Madagaſcar nation to the Count de Benyowſky: his election to the dignity of Ampanſacabé, his full powers to treat in Europe, his declaration made in England, and his propaſals to the Engliſh Government. 2 365

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE

EDITOR's PREFACE.

IN preſenting the following Memoirs to the public, it will not be incumbent upon me to make any remarks on the intereſting nature of their contents. It is ſufficiently eſtabliſhed, that the author was a man of ability, poſſeſſed of a diſpoſition ſingularly calculated for adventures, and brought up in a ſchool of irregular warfare, in which the intrepidity of his mind, and the power he poſſeſſed of agitating and impelling the minds of others, were matured by a ſevere courſe of practice. The obſervations and remarks, which might ariſe from conſiderations of this kind, are left to the reader: my taſk will conſiſt in the ſimple expoſition of ſuch facts as tend to ſhew the authenticity of the work, and the degree of credit to which it is entitled.

About the latter end of the year 1784, Mr. J. Hyacinth de Magellan, F. R. S. &c. a gentleman well known in every part of Europe, by the philoſophical correſpondence he has for many years carried on with the firſt literary characters, ſhewed me a printed paper in French, containing

Digitized by Google

containing propoſals for publiſhing the memoirs and voyages of the Count de Benyowſky, in three volumes, by ſubſcription; a deſign which was afterwards given up. The Count was not at that time in England, but had departed upon a private expedition to the iſland of Madagaſcar; in the fitting out of which, Mr. Magellan had advanced a very conſiderable ſum. This expedition was not, however, attended with ſucceſs: Mr. Magellan determined therefore to publiſh this work; and accordingly diſpoſed of the copy to the preſent proprietors, at the ſame time that he engaged to communicate the tranſactions of the Count, from the concluſion of the preſent Memoirs to the time of his death. An unforeſeen event rendered him incapable of performing this engagement: for ſoon after Chriſtmas, 1788, he was attacked with a ſevere illneſs, which affected his memory ſo much as to prevent his attending to any literary purſuits, and has continued ever ſince. I need not enlarge on this unhappy event any farther than to obſerve that it has deprived me of the expected information, and obliged me to give a detail of the facts from his correſpondence.

This ſhort hiſtory may ſerve to ſhew by what progreſs the manuſcript came into my hands; and in order to clear myſelf of the ſlighteſt ſuſpicion of ſtanding before the public in any other character than that which I profeſs, as editor of the work, I have recommended to the proprietors, to preſent the original copy and drawings to the Britiſh Muſeum, as a place of depoſit peculiarly calculated for the ſecurity of the public in ſuch caſes. To this they very readily agreed; and the original French manuſcript has accordingly been preſented. It contains all which is exhibited in the following volumes, except the drawings of Plates 8, 9, 10, 11, 15, and 27, which were loſt by a fire that conſumed the houſe of Mr. Heath, the engraver. Proofs of theſe plates happened to be preſerved; but the originals and engraved plates which were numbered 3, 4, 12, 23, 24, 25, were irrecoverably loſt by the ſame accident, and do not therefore appear either in this

Digitized by Google

this publication, or the original. They conſiſted chiefly of views and figures. I have likewiſe thought it of advantage to divide the matter which preceeds the journal into chapters, and have added the titles, inſtead of retaining the form of one undivided narrative, as it is in the original.

The credibility of any work can be tried in two ways only; by internal, or by collateral evidence. It is from the internal evidence, or the mutual coincidence of facts, that we judge of the fidelity of any writer in the firſt place: if this be wanting, it is an infallible concluſion, that the author is either deceived himſelf, or intends to impoſe on his readers; but if, on the contrary, this evidence be perfect, it is not ſo ſtrongly concluſive of truth, as the defect is of falſhood. Internal evidence amounts to an high degree of probability, and is the only dependance we can have when a writer ſpeaks of facts and places not known or viſited by others. I have not perceived any defect of this kind in theſe memoirs: they contain nothing which is at all improbable or contradictory. As far, therefore, as the adventures of the Count de Benyowſky are peculiar to himſelf, we muſt depend on his authority. The greater part, however, is capable of being ſupported by collateral evidence. His ſhare in the troubles in Poland is a recent buſineſs: moſt of the perſons he mentions poſſeſſed eminent ſtations in ſociety, and many are ſtill living. We are not now in the dark with regard to the land paſſage acroſs the Ruſſian dominions in Aſia, nor the general poſition and other circumſtances relative to a conſiderable extent of the North-Eaſt part of the old Continent. When we proceed to conſider the ſituation of the coaſts and iſlands of the Northern ſea between Aſia and America, it is true that great difficulties * ariſe from the ignorance and inaccuracy of the Ruſſian accounts and obſervations made by unſkilful, and perhaps in ſome inſtances unprincipled men, without proper inſtruments,

* See Coxe's Ruſſian Diſcoveries, and the authors by him cited: alſo Cook, Clerke, Gore, and King's Voyage to the Pacific Ocean. III, p. 262.

Digitized by Google

ments, in a tract covered with fogs of such frequency, as to be almost perpetual. Here, however, we have the ineftimable advantage of recurring to the observations of those judicious navigators, Cook, Clerke, Gore, and King, whose labours have reflected so much honour upon the liberality and scientific zeal of our sovereign. The only part therefore of the Count's adventures which cannot readily be compared with the collateral testimony of others, consists in his visitation of the islands of Japan, Liqueio, and Formosa; and the discoveries which he made in the course of a voyage through an unfrequented part of the ocean. On the evidence of these facts, I need not make any observations, because they stand exactly in the same predicament as all other new discoveries do: they must be admitted on the credit of the discoverer, until subsequent researches shall either confirm or disprove them.

Before I proceed to consider the degree of accuracy of the Count's journal, I shall present the reader with a passage or two of Captain Cook's last voyage, which strongly confirm several particulars in the narration of the former. When Captain Cook was at Oonalashka, several civilities and mutual communications took place between him and Erasim Gregorioff Sin Ismyloff, who exhibits a conspicuous figure in the following memoirs. After relating these [vol. II, p. 496 * of his voyage] he proceeds [page 499] to add the following: "But a voyage which he himself [Ismyloff] had performed, engaged "our attention more than any other. He said that on the 12th of "May, 1771, he sailed from Bolsheretzk in a Russian vessel, to one "of the Kuril islands, named Mareekan, in the latitude of 47° where "there is a harbour, and a Russian settlement. From this island he "proceeded to Japan, where he seems to have made but a short stay. "For when the Japanese came to know that he and his companions "were christians, they made signs for them to be gone; but did "not, so far as we could understand him, offer any insult or force. From Japan

* The Edition before me is the second.

Digitized by Google

"Japan he got to Canton; and from thence to France in a French "ſhip. From France he travelled to Peterſburg, and was afterwards "ſent out again to Kamtſchatka. What became of the veſſel in which "he firſt embarked we could not learn; nor what was the principal "object of the voyage. His not being able to ſpeak one word of "French made this ſtory a little ſuſpicious. He did not even know "the name of any one of the moſt common things that muſt have "been in uſe every day while he was on board the ſhip, and in "France. And yet he ſeemed clear as to the times of his arriving at "the different places, and of his leaving them, which he put down in "writing."

In the third volume, p. 193, it appears that Iſmyloff, in a letter to the commander at Bolſheretzk, had repreſented the Engliſh veſſels as two ſmall packet boats, and cautioned him to be on his guard; and that it was not without the exertion of all the commander's authority, that the inhabitants were prevented from abandoning the town, in conſequence of their fears, leſt their viſitors ſhould prove to be French.

"Their extreme apprehenſions," continues Capt. King, "were "principally occaſioned by ſome circumſtances attending an inſurrec- "tion that had happened at Bolcheretzk a few years before, in which "the commander had loſt his life. We were informed that an exiled "Poliſh officer, named Beniowſki, taking advantage of the confu- "ſion into which the town was thrown, had ſeized upon a galliot "then lying at the entrance of the Bolchoireka, and had forced "on board a number of Ruſſian ſailors, ſufficient to navigate her: that "he had put on ſhore a part of the crew at the Kourile iſlands; "and among the reſt, Iſmyloff, who, as the reader will recollect, "had puzzled us exceedingly at Oonalaſka with the hiſtory of this "tranſaction; though for want of underſtanding his language, we

Digitized by Google

"could not then make out all the circumſtances attending it: that "he paſſed in ſight of Japan; made Luconia; and was there di- "rected how to ſteer to Canton; that arriving there, he had appli- "ed to the French, and had got a paſſage in one of their India ſhips "to France; and that moſt of the Ruſſians had likewiſe returned to "Europe in French ſhips; and had afterward found their way to "Peterſburg. We met with three of Beniowſki's crew in the har- "bour of St. Peter and St. Paul; and from thence we learnt the "circumſtances of the above ſtory."

Capt. King mentions that the arrival of Beniowſki at Canton was confirmed by the gentlemen of the Engliſh factory there, and obſerves that from Kerguelen's voyage, it appeared that this extraordinary perſon had entered the French ſervice, and was commander of a new ſettlement at Madagaſcar, when that navigator touched there in 1774.

The public prints of the year 1772 took notice of the arrival of the Count de Benyowſky at Canton in the month of September, the year before (1771.) The Gentleman's Magazine for June, 1772, page 272, contains an account which is too long to be quoted, more eſpecially as the circumſtances are in ſome reſpects improbable, and in others unfounded. This account ſays that a veſſel of uncommon appearance arrived at Canton with ſixty-five perſons on board, five being in women's apparel, commanded by the Baron de Benyorſky, who was taken priſoner by the Ruſſians, in Poland, and carried to Caſan, from which place he made his eſcape with others, by overpowering their guard; that they directed their route to Kamchatka, where he had a friend, who ſupplied him with a veſſel; that he ſailed for China, but by ſtreſs of weather was obliged to ſtand to the Eaſtward, and made the coaſt of America, in latitude 57°; was prevented by contrary winds from proceeding to Acapulco, and then ſtood for the Philippine iſlands, but was again diſappointed by contrary winds;

Digitized by Google

and that laſtly he reached Macao after five months paſſage from Kamchatka.

A paper ſubjoined to this account with the ſignature of Benyorſky aſſerts, that he left Kamchatka in May 1771, and arrived at Macao in September, after having put in at Japan.

This information from the Gentleman's Magazine is evidently no more than the reports of the day. For it is not in the leaſt probable that priſoners at Caſan ſhould imagine and execute a peregrination of at leaſt four thouſand miles, over the moſt inhoſpitable part of the ſurface of the globe, with the hope of finding a friend who would preſent them with a ſhip: or that they ſhould actually obtain a ſhip, and then wander over the face of the ocean in the ſtrange way they are here ſaid to have done. It may be admitted however as an evidence, that the Count did not arrive at China at an earlier period than is ſpecified in his Memoirs, and this fact will be of uſe in conſidering the value of the information obtained at Kamchatka by the Captains Cook and King.

I muſt obſerve therefore that Iſmyloff, who is not repreſented in any very favourable light by the Count in his Memoirs, and was guilty of a trick which ſeems in ſome reſpect to degrade him, by writing an unfriendly and falſe letter to be carried by the Engliſh navigators to the Commander at Bolcheretzk, was probably diſpoſed to conceal ſome part of the knowledge he poſſeſſed,* and does not appear incapable of perverting ſuch facts as his own views, whatever they were, might require to be falſified; that it is by no means probable that the Count, at the head of a ſet of daring men over whom he had no well ſupported authority, ſhould touch at the Kurilles iſlands, for the reaſon he himſelf mentions, namely, the probability

* II. 497.

Digitized by Google

probability that they ſhould change their minds and force him to return to Kamchatka; but on the contrary, that he ſhould wiſh to render their return impracticable by ſtanding for the Aleutian iſlands or American ſhore, in the firſt place, as being more remote; and on the other hand the diſpoſition of his crew to proceed to the Northward might have been partly grounded on their fears of quitting the peninſula of Kamchatka. Again, it does not appear how four months could be employed in paſſing ſimply to Marikan, touching at Japan, and making Luconia in his way to Macao, even ſuppoſing he had ſailed ſo far out of his way as to that Spaniſh ſettlement. On theſe accounts then, I think that Iſmyloff's information, with that of the three Ruſſians at Kamchatka, conſidered under all the diſadvantages of a want of language for mutual intelligence, which Capt. Cook complains of,* are really valid, ſo far only as to prove that the Count Benyowſky did really exert his military abilities at Kamchatka in a ſerious inſurrection in which the Governor loſt his life; that the inhabitants of Bolſheretzk were ſo greatly affected and the impreſſion of their fears was ſo ſtrong and permanent, as to urge them to think of abandoning their habitations after an interval of eight whole years; an impreſſion which the threat of burning their women and children in the church may readily account for: that a very conſiderable time having elapſed between his departure, which is correctly given by Iſmyloff, and his arrival at China, which is an object of no queſtion, he could not have ſubſiſted without putting in ſomewhere; and that after leaving the Aleutian iſlands, there are no places into which choice or neceſſity could more immediately have driven him than the iſlands of Japan, Liqueio and Formoſa. In a word, the collateral evidence appears clear and poſitive where it ſupports the credibility of the Count's narrative, but confuſed and uncertain in the particulars wherein it differs from him; and the whole is of ſuch a nature as not to be put in competition with an authentic journal from the hands of the author.

Without

* II. 497.

Digitized by Google

Without entering into any compariſon of the voyages of the Count Benyowſky with thoſe of others who have navigated the Northern ſeas, I ſhall confine my remarks to ſuch parts of his journal as will admit of elucidation from the voyages of our illuſtrious countrymen. But in the firſt place it muſt be premiſed, that the Count's ſkill in navigation, whatever eminence it might have procured him in Kamchatka, appears to have been very moderate. In his journal we find the latitude, longitude, wind, current and courſe. He never diſtinguiſhed the latitude by account from that by obſervation. I ſuppoſe however that he may have had one of the old quadrants of Davis, or perhaps a foreſtaff; but he certainly did not poſſeſs one of Hadley's*. His latitudes in general therefore may be ſuppoſed to be within half, or perhaps a quarter of a degree of the truth. I have not paid any attention to the winds and courſe made good, but apprehend that his longitudes muſt be ſubject not only to all the uſual errors of the dead-reckoning, but likewiſe to others, ariſing from his not knowing the variation of the compaſs, (except perhaps by conjecture) and from his conſidering the current as a daily element in his log-book. He has no where mentioned the method he uſed to aſcertain the direction and velocity of theſe currents, and as every experienced navigator muſt be aware that no ſuch method exiſts, except ſuch as may be derived from comparing the reckoning with celeſtial obſervations or a time-keeper, it will follow of courſe that this element has rendered his longitude more uncertain.

By tracing the Count's voyage to the Northward upon the chart numbered 36 in Cook's third Voyage, I find that he made Beering's iſland when his reckoning placed the ſhip a degree and a half to the Weſtward.

* Iſmyloff, or Iſmaeloff, received an Hadley's quadrant from Captain Cook as a preſent, of which he in a very ſhort time learned the uſes. Hence it ſeems probable that Hadley's quadrant is ſcarcely known in thoſe parts, and that the Count in particular did not poſſeſs one.—Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, II. 505.

Digitized by Google

Weſtward. This is a natural conſequence of the Eaſterly variation not being allowed for, and the ſame cauſe muſt have affected his reckoning ſtill more as he proceeded to the Northward. Hence I conclude (with the ſuppoſition that his latitudes were at leaſt half a degree too high, and his longitudes very conſiderably to the Weſtward of the ſhip's true place, both which follow from the variation being neglected) that he made Clerke's iſlands on the 3d of June, and ſtood over for the land to the Northward of Tſuchotſkoi Neſs, where he anchored; again returned to Clerke's iſlands; ſailed from thence to the Eaſtward;* made the American Continent, and coaſted along it between Point Shallow Water and Shoal Neſs, which was unexplored by Cook; after which he ſtood to the Southward and anchored at Oonemak, in latitude 54° ½, the error of his reckoning being about five degrees in longitude to the Weſtward, an error which remarkably coincides with that of Iſmyloff's chart,† and proves almoſt beyond a doubt that the Count really arrived at the Aleuthes by this circuitous navigation, and that Iſmyloff gained his information by ſailing with him; more eſpecially as ſuch an error in longitude could hardly have ariſen in running directly from Awatſcha Bay to the Aleuthes, which lie on the ſame parallel, and are only a ſhort fortnight's ſail aſunder.

I do not pretend that there are no other cauſes of uncertainty in the Count's Journal, neither is it my intention to enter into a minute diſquiſition upon it. The public poſſeſs faithful copies of the documents which have paſſed through my hands, and I have no wiſh nor claim to the abſurd privilege of directing their judgment. But it becomes me to ſtate the reaſons which guided me in examining theſe Memoirs,

* The note on page 330 is too general. The Count does not appear to have reached America in that latitude.

† Voyage to the Pacific Ocean before quoted, II. 502.

Digitized by Google

Memoirs, and have convinced me that the veracity of the Count may be relied on; that the diſagreements of collateral evidence are much more likely to ariſe from the imperfections of that evidence, than from his want of fidelity; and that the real difficulties may be eaſily accounted for by any one, whoſe ſkill and experience are ſufficient to enable him to eſtimate the probable errors that muſt have reſulted from the want of inſtruments, and ſlender knowledge of the Count in marine affairs.

The other parts of the Count's Journal need no comment. That he ſhould ſtand acroſs the Pacific ocean and direct his courſe for China, are obviouſly the reſult of the dictates of common ſenſe; that extreme diſtreſs ſhould follow the want of proper ſubordination among a ſet of exiles, or men of deſperate fortune and adventure, is not at all wonderful; and that ſuch men, without any ſettled deſtination, and acting throughout from the impulſe either of neceſſity or their own inclinations, ſhould range from one iſland to another, where their wants could be beſt ſupplied, is what the ſlighteſt ideas of cauſe and effect would have foretold. The diſcoveries and adventures of the Count on this paſſage and elſewhere muſt ſpeak for themſelves, and I have no doubt will be found intereſting, as well from the nature of the incidents as the novelty of the places of action.

It is ſtill leſs neceſſary to enlarge on the effect which the abilities and acquiſitions of the Count produced at the Court of France, and the undertaking which was afterwards entruſted to his management. The leading facts of this part of his Memoirs have ſufficient collateral evidence. Neither need I make any remarks on his political principles with regard to colonization, of which I think the intelligent ſubjects of our free and liberal government will be at no loſs to form a proper opinion; whether they be viewed in a civil or commercial light. I will therefore only add on the ſubject of the Memoirs, that

Digitized by Google

the Count, in his ſhort hiſtory of Kamchatka, appears to have had Kracheninnikow's voyage into Siberia before him, a work which Captain King * conſiders as worthy of entire credit. It will eaſily be ſeen, however, that our author, by ſpeaking always in his own perſon, and mentioning his authorities in ſeveral places, means to confirm all the general facts as from his own obſervation. I perceive that the drawing of plate II. nearly reſembles the tenth plate of the French tranſlation of Kraſcheninnikow; but neither theſe nor that in the original Ruſſian appear equal to that in Cook's Voyage. The plates 8, 9, 10 and 11, have ſome little uncertainty with regard to their references and bearings; both which imperfections are conſequences of the fire which conſumed the Engraver's houſe. The references on the plates will direct the reader to fill ſuch blanks as were neceſſarily left in the text. I muſt likewiſe take notice, that the word caſtor, which I have every where rendered beaver, is uſed throughout this work to denote the ſea beaver or otter; that the word corvette, which I think denotes the kind of veſſel called an hooker, has been moſtly retained, on account of my being uncertain whether the French apply it to any particular veſſel, or ſimply to denote a packet; and that I have kept the ſpelling of proper names uniform, though it is not ſo in the manuſcript, the Count's ſignature in his own hand being frequently varied. The charts of harbours on the coaſt of Madagaſcar are not particularly mentioned in the body of the work: moſt of them convey an account of their origin in their titles. The harbour and bay of Eaſt Cape, plate XXI; of the North coaſt of Madagaſcar in plate XXVI; of Vannembey in plate XXVIII; and of Louquez in plate XXIX. are found in Mr. Dalrymple's collection, where they are copied from M. D'Après, and do not eſſentially differ from the preſent engravings of the Count's manuſcript. I ſuppoſe therefore that the Count had them from the ſame quarter as M. D'Après; that is, either from the maſters of veſſels at Madagaſcar, or the French Government.

Mr.

* Voyage before cited, III. 205.

Digitized by Google

Mr. Magellan's correſpondence on the Count's ſubſequent adventures, having been ſubmitted to my inſpection, appears to require a very conſiderable ſhare of deliberation and mutual compariſon of its parts, before the more particular events can be placed in a proper light. Several of the letters from individuals concerned in this adventure contradict each other; and ſome of them are written with ſuch a ſpirit of enmity towards the Count, as renders the impartiality of the writers very doubtful. I will not here enquire how far it is probable that the failure of this laſt enterprize aroſe from a want of principles or prudence, either in the Count or in his aſſociates. The ſmalleſt knowledge of the human mind will readily ſhew, that when loſs and wretchedneſs are the only conſequences of an attempt founded on the moſt brilliant hopes; quarrels and mutual recrimination muſt infallibly be the reſult. For this reaſon I ſhall ſlightly trace the leading facts, with very few obſervations of my own.

The Count de Benyowſky and his family, with ſome of his aſſociates, ſailed for Maryland on the 14th of April, 1784, on board the Robert and Ann, commanded by Mr. Alexander Mac Dougall. He arrived at Baltimore on the 8th of July following, having taken with him from London a cargo of the value of near 4000 *l.* ſterling, conſiſting it ſeems of articles intended for the Madagaſcar trade. Two cauſes appear to have induced him and his friends to avoid a direct voyage to that iſland. In the firſt place, they found it extremely difficult, if not impracticable, to procure the flag of any European power; and in the next, there was every reaſon to hope that the American merchants, whoſe affairs were thrown into confuſion by the ſtruggle for independence, and the ſubſequent loſs of their colonial privileges in trading to the mother country, would be more ready to embrace the offer of a new channel of trade than the ſubjects of more eſtabliſhed ſocieties. This expectation was found to be juſt. A reſpectable commercial houſe at Baltimore was induced to join in the ſcheme,

Digitized by Google

and ſupplied the Count with a ſhip of 450 tons, carrying twenty guns, ſix-pounders, and twelve ſwivels. This ſhip, cargo and ſtores, was eſtimated at ſomewhat more than for thouſand pounds ſterling, excluſive of the merchandize brought from London. It was named the Intrepid, and ſailed from Baltimore on the 25th of October, 1784; every one on board being, by agreement and oath, ſubject to the abſolute command of the Count, though the merchants of Baltimore had appointed a Captain and Supercargo to aſſiſt the Count while under his command, and to conduct their affairs homeward bound. Their deſtination was the harbour of St. Auguſtin, on the Eaſt Coaſt of the iſland of Madagaſcar, where they were to form a ſettlement or emporium; in the eſtabliſhment of which it was expected that the Count's influence with the natives, and the ſupremacy they had conferred on him, would have been of ſingular advantage. The family of the Count remained in America, on account of the pregnancy of Madame de Benyowſky. At the beginning of January the Count made the coaſt of Braſil,—by miſtake, as his aſſociates ſay, and for want of keeping enough to windward; but in his own letters he aſſerts, that he repaired for wood and water to this coaſt, in preference, for reaſons which he does not ſpecify. The former, however, ſeems probable; for they were near a month turning to windward in order to clear Cape Roque, and at laſt run dangerouſly aground on the iſland Juan Gonſalvez, near the mouth of the river Amargoſa, in five degrees South latitude. It was not till the month of April that the neceſſary repairs were completed, and they ſtood acroſs the Atlantic; being at ſhort allowance of proviſions for the greateſt part of the paſſage. The laſt letter of the Count was written from the coaſt of Braſil, and conſequently the remainder of this account muſt come from the letters of his companions. It does not appear why he doubled the Cape of Good Hope without putting in. The firſt place he touched at was Sofala, on the Eaſtern coaſt of Africa, where he anchored on the 22d of May, 1785, and remained a fortnight to

Digitized by Google

refreſh his people. On the 7th of July they anchored in the Bay of Antangara, about ten leagues to the South-Weſt of Cape St. Sebaſtian, and unloaded their cargo, the Count's intention being to proceed over land to the Bay of Antongil, where the ſhip was to meet them. It appears by the letters, that Lamboin, King of the North, who is mentioned in theſe Memoirs, came to pay his reſpects to the Count, and that a body of Seclaves under a Chief or King likewiſe came and encamped near him; that the Count propoſed to enter into the oath of blood with him, but he excuſed himſelf till a future day, on account of the fatigue of his journey: and from the maſter's proteſt it appears, that on the 1ſt of Auguſt, three quarters of an hour after the long boat had returned on board, between the hours of ten and eleven at night, a ſevere firing was heard and ſeen on ſhore exactly at the place of the Count's encampment; that between five and ſix in the morning a few ſcattered ſhot were heard in a ſmall wood about a mile up the country, and at day-light no ſigns were perceived of any white men on ſhore, but that all the effects were removed; and laſtly, that their own dangerous ſituation, from the few hands and want of arms on board, and the probability that the Count and his party were cut off by the natives, together with the want of proviſions, compelled them to depart for Joanna. From this iſland or Mohilia they proceeded to Oibo, where the ſupercargo ſold the ſhip on account of the inſurers.

If the information ended here, it might naturally be concluded that the Count's attempt had met with its fatal termination before their departure; but there is a letter from one of the perſons on board, which ſtates, that the writer and another perſon were not convinced that the firing was made by the natives, but that they ſigned the proteſt becauſe overborne by numbers: and in another letter from an officer, who was brought priſoner to the Iſle of France after the final deſtruction of the Count's party, which (as far as relates to the deſtruction

Digitized by Google

ſtruction of the Count and his people by the French) is confirmed by the writer of the former letter, I find mention indeed of a firing heard in the night; but, contrary to the proteſt, the writer affirms, that the ſhip ſailed in ſight of thoſe on ſhore, to their great aſtoniſhment, and that it was in vain that they ſtood after her with the country boats. The ſame writer continues to ſtate, that fifteen days after the departure of the veſſel the Count departed for Angoutci, leaving moſt of his people behind to follow him; but the greateſt part fell ſick and died, two only remaining. From this letter, which, however, in many reſpects ſeems to want explanation, it appears that the power and influence of the Count was ſuch, that he had an armed force of the natives at his command, with which he proceeded to Angoutci, and commenced hoſtilities againſt the French by ſeizing their ſtorehouſe. Here he buſied himſelf in erecting a town after the manner of the country; and from hence he ſent a detachment of one hundred men to take poſſeſſion of the French Factory at Foul Point; but they were prevented from carrying their purpoſe into execution by the ſight of a frigate which was at anchor off the Point. In conſequence of theſe movements, the Government of the Iſle of France ſent a ſhip with ſixty regulars on board, who landed, and attacked the Count on the morning of the 23d of May, 1786. He had conſtructed a ſmall redoubt defended by two cannon, in which himſelf, with two Europeans and thirty natives, waited the approach of the enemy. The blacks fled at the firſt fire, and Benyowſky, having received a ball in his right breaſt, fell behind the parapet; whence he was dragged by the hair, and expired a few minutes afterwards.

Thus ended the life and adventures of the Count de Benyowſky; a man of invincible ſpirit, inured to hardſhips, and habituated to face danger and every extremity with a moſt uncommon degree of firmneſs. To theſe extraordinary powers, he added an intimate and almoſt intuitive knowledge of the human mind. By nature, educa-

tion

Digitized by Google

tion and habit, he was formed to perſuade, to command, and to coerce; and his deſtiny gave him ample occaſion to exerciſe theſe talents. Of this ſingular character many and various have been the opinions. Thoſe whoſe intereſts led them to oppoſe him have ſpared no accuſations againſt him; and their accuſations are of the ſtrongeſt and even the moſt horrid nature. His enemies have repreſented him as the unfeeling tyrant, and the unprincipled robber:—yet while he lived he never was without enthuſiaſtic admirers, and warm friends who readily exerted themſelves, againſt every riſque and every calumny, to ſerve him. If it were expected that I ſhould give my opinion, I would declare, that I have not yet ſeen any thing againſt him which will not bear two interpretations; or which has not been written by men who contradict each other, and had an intereſt in traducing him. For theſe reaſons it is that I would ſuſpend my opinion; and theſe are the reaſons why, in the multifarious correſpondence which now lies before me, I have paſſed over the recriminations in ſilence. I have collected only ſuch facts as appear indubitable, and have ſuppreſſed all names, becauſe the correſpondence, on account of the preſent infirm ſituation of the gentleman to whom it of right belongs, has paſſed into my hands, without any other reſtriction but ſuch as the ſentiments of every man of principle and delicacy muſt inſpire.

London, Dec. 7, 1789. W. NICHOLSON.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

POSTSCRIPT.

Since the foregoing Preface was printed, I have been favoured by Sir Joſeph Banks, Bart. P. R. S. with the communication of the following Papers, which I here inſert, with a few Remarks.

No. I.

Extrait de la Lettre de M. L'Evêque le Bon, due 24 Septembre, 1771, de Macao.

IL vient d'arriver hier a Macao un Both à Pavilion Hongrois, commandé par le Baron Hongrois, Maurice Auguſte Aladar Benyorſky, Conſeiller du Prince Albert, duc de Saxe, Colonel de ſa Majeſté Apoſtolique Royal Imperiale la Reine d'Hongrie, et Officier d'un regiment de la Confederation de la Republique, A Couronne de Pologne.

Ce Monſieur, apres avoir recu ſept bleſſûres dans un combat contre les Ruſſes pres de Kaminieck, fut fait priſonnier de Guerre, et conduit dans la meme ville ou ſe trouve détenù comme priſonnier d'Etat le Prince Szoltits, Eveque de Cracovie, Senateur de Pologne.

Digitized by Google

Le Baron a trouve le moyen de s'échaper, apres avoir recu une patente du Prince Eveque, priſonnier, qui exhorte tous les Catholiques ſurtout, a ſecourir le dit Sieur Alader Benyorſky, pour lui procurer le moyen de parvenir aupres de L'Empereur d'Allemagne, et aupres du Saint Siege Apoſtolique. Lu patente due Prelat eſt dattée de ſa priſon, le 6th Novembre, 1770.

De 54 hommes d'equipage, il ne reſte plus a ce capitaine que 8 hommes en ſanté; tout le reſte eſt ſur le grabat. Depuis deux mois ils ſouffroient le faim et la ſoif: il a eu ſon embarcation deux fois briſeé, deux fois ils l'ont raccomodée et remiſe en etat. Il ne ſcait ni le Portugais ni l'Eſpagnol, mais il parle Latin, Francois, & Allemand. Il eſt venu par le Nord, & a cotoyé le Japan, &c.

No. II.

An Account of the arrival of a ſmall Veſſel, of about eighty tons, at Macao, the 23d of September laſt, commanded by Baron Maurice Aout Alladar Benyorſky, Colonel in the Hungarian ſervice, on board of which were ſixty-two Hungarian ſoldiers, and five women, who, by their account, eſcaped from their impriſonment in Siberia. Taken from the Colonel's own words, by me, Nathaniel Barlow, who was at Macao the time when they arrived there.

UPON a viſit I made to the Baron above-mentioned, ſoon after his arrival, I requeſted of him, as a great favour, he would be

Digitized by Google

be pleaſed to give me a recital of his adventures, as I told him ſomething very extraordinary muſt have happened to him, by his coming into theſe parts, ſo remote from his own country. Agreeable to my requeſt, he very politely acquieſced, and mentioned the following particulars, in the French language.

He ſaid, that he was firſt ſecretly ſent by the Court of Hungary, with a body of five thouſand ſoldiers, to the aſſiſtance of the Catholic Confederates in Poland, who were at that time at war with the Proteſtant party of the ſame nation, aſſiſted by the Ruſſians. That ſoon after his arrival in Poland, and joining a body of the Confederates, they had an engagement with the Ruſſians, who being ſuperior in numbers, ſoon defeated his body, took him, and almoſt all his men, priſoners, and ſent them away, with all expedition, into different garriſons in Siberia. That on his arrival at the place deſtined for him and his party, they were put into cloſe confinement, and treated in a moſt cruel manner, inſomuch, that they were determined to attempt an eſcape, at the hazard of their lives: very fortunately, an opportunity offered, by the guard being reduced to a ſmall number, whom they ſoon overpowered, took their arms, and marched off, with all expedition, towards the province of Kamſchatka, where, in a ſea-port, named *Chevega*, he had a friend on whom he could depend for aſſiſtance in extricating him from the dangers that he was threatened with. Accordingly, after many days marching over mountains, and ſometimes through almoſt impenetrable woods, (during which time he experienced every miſery poſſible, by the want of proviſions and water) he fortunately arrived at the above ſea-port, where, to his great joy, he found his friend, by whoſe aſſiſtance a veſſel was procured, and in a ſhort time got ready for ſailing, when the Colonel and his party embarked. As he had formerly ſerved in the marine ſervice of the States of Malta,

Digitized by Google

he thereby learnt Navigation, by the aſſiſtance of which he intended making a coaſting voyage of it to China; but being drove off the coaſt by a gale of wind, and not expecting to make it again, he ſteered to the north-eaſt, in hopes of finding ſome iſlands he had heard was in that quarter. Accordingly, after many days ſailing, and great ſufferings, he fortunately arrived at one of them he ſuppoſed to be near the Continent of America, where he got ſeveral kinds of refreſhment; and, after ſtaying a little time, he embarked, with a deſign to go to Acapulca, but not meeting with favourable winds, ſteered towards the Phillipine iſlands, where, after encountering with freſh difficulties, he arrived at the Marians, from whence intending to go to Manilla, was prevented by unfavourable winds: he then came to the reſolution of ſteering towards China, where he fortunately arrived at the port of Macao, after a voyage of four months.

He was as far north as 63 degrees; had with him Lord Anſon's voyages, tranſlated into the Sclavonian language, which he repeatedly ſaid was of the greateſt uſe to him, being guided, in a great meaſure, by them.——In his apartment were ſeveral mathematical inſtruments, eſpecially a quadrant, and a croſs ſtaff. On requeſting for a ſight of his drafts, he, with great reluctance, produced one, but, unluckily, a gentleman in company telling him that one of us was a ſea-captain, he immediately withdrew, and carried with him the draft, by which we loſt the opportunity of knowing more particulars of this very extraordinary voyage.

The veſſel is fifty feet long, and ſixteen broad, entirely built of fir.

No.

Digitized by Google

No. III.

(C O P Y.)

Baron Benyorſky's Narrative of a Voyage from Kamſchattka to Macao.

Devenu en priſon, 1769. *Anné*
Amenez en exile avec Meſſ. Princés, *P. Koltik, Eveque de Cracovia,*
P. Kanguſzko,
P. Rzſevuizky,
P. Pacz,
Eveque de Kiave.

A Kamſchatka, ſous 63 *degree de la Latitude du Nord,* 175 *Long.* 1771 *L'Anne.*

DANS le mois May, ſortis ſur le galliotte St. Piere, paſſer juſque a 238 degree de la Longitude, a 57 Latitude, d'ou, naviger a paſſer l'Iſle Mariain par la grande tempete, et fort vents devenu a Japon, ou, ton de L'Androis, du Port Namqu, mil pieds a la Texe, de la venu a l'Iſle, Touza et Bonzo, de la, juſque a Nangeaſaki, d'ou aprez avoir peu de Noires ſortis et paſſer par les Iſles *Amuy*, juſque a Formoſa, et l'Iſle Baſchet, enfin, prit le cours droitment, a Makao, où je ſuis arrive dans le mois Septembre, 1771 L'Ann.

Signe par
Baron Maurice, Aout d'Aladar de Benyorſky, Colonelle de ſa Maj. Imp. Generale Regem. tar des les Confederes.

Sortis avec 85 *hommes,*
Arrivé avec 62 *do.*

Mem.

Digitized by Google

Mem. The original from which the foregoing is taken, being wrote with very faint ink, upon bad paper, and German characters frequently uſed, have occaſioned imperfections in this Copy.

No. IV.

Extract of a Letter from the Supra-Cargoes of Council at Canton, in China, dated 20th November, 1771; received per Britiſh King.

A ſmall veſſel arrived at Macao the 23d September, commanded by a Hungarian Baron, Maurice Auguſto Alader Benyorſky, which has occaſioned much ſpeculation. They being at Macao, and cannot obtain permiſſion to come to Canton, we are deprived of the means to procure the intelligence which we might poſſibly otherwiſe do, had we an opportunity of diſcourſing with him: it ſeems, beyond doubt, he is come from Kamſchatka, but by what track, or his motive, we have only what he pleaſes to ſay, being the only perſon who ſpeaks about their concerns, and he very reſerved. We could wiſh it were in our power to give you a particular account of this affair, but cannot do more than ſend you the accounts we have received from others, and one that he gave himſelf, and ſigned by him. He has claimed the protection of the French; had a chop procured for him and ſome of his officers to come to Canton, but by their being mentioned in the chop (which was procured by Puan Khequa) under the denomination of French merchants; and the Hoppo's officer at Macao having had them deſcribed to him differently before, he returned the chop to Canton, and did not ſuffer them to

Digitized by Google

to proceed. The Mandarines here are apprehenſive they may be Ruſſians; and Puan Khequa, afraid of being drawn into ſome ſcrape, he rather chuſes to decline interfering, and they are likely to remain at Macao till the French ſhips leave China, which ſhips they are to embark on board of for Europe.

No. V.

Extract of a Letter from Canton, in China, to Mr. Pigou, dated the 20th November, 1771.

ON the 23d of September, a ſmall veſſel, commanded by a Hungarian Baron, arrived at Macao. He ſays, that he was firſt ſecretly ſent by the Court of Hungary, with a body of five thouſand men, which he commanded, to the aſſiſtance of the Catholic Confederates in Poland, who were at war with the Proteſtant party of the ſame nation, aſſiſted by the Ruſſians. That ſoon after his arrival in Poland, and joining the Confederates, he had an engagement with the Ruſſians, who defeated his army, and ſent them into different garriſons in Siberia, where being cruelly treated, the Colonel and party with him reſolved to make their eſcape, which they eaſily effected, their guard being very weak: from thence they got to the port of Kamſchatka, where they procured a ſmall veſſel, and ſailing to the northward, made land, which they ſuppoſed to be part of the continent of North America. Finding themſelves wrong in their tract, they altered their courſe, and after five weeks ſail came to Japan, where they had

Digitized by Google

had ſeveral ſkirmiſhes with the natives. They afterwards ſaw the Marian iſlands, and thence bore away directly for Macao, being in great diſtreſs for proviſions.

TRANSLATION OF THE PAPER, No. I.

Extract of a Letter from M. the Biſhop Le Bon, dated September 24th, 1771, from Macao.

YESTERDAY arrived at Macao a veſſel under Hungarian colours, commanded by the Hungarian Baron, Maurice Auguſte Aladar Benyorſky, Councellor to Prince Albert, Duke of Saxony, Colonel (in the ſervice) of her Apoſtolic Royal Imperial Majeſty, the Queen of Hungary, and officer of a regiment of the confederation of the republic of Poland.

This gentleman, after having received ſeven wounds in a battle againſt the Ruſſians, near Kaminieck, was made priſoner of war, and conducted into the ſame town where the Prince Szolits, Biſhop of Cracovia, is detained a priſoner of ſtate.

The Baron found the means to eſcape, after having received a patent from the Prince Biſhop, the priſoner, who exhorts all Catholics eſpecially to aſſiſt the ſaid Sieur Aladar Benyorſky, to procure him the means of repairing to the preſence of the Emperor of Germany, and before the Holy Apoſtolical Court. The patent of the Prelate is dated from his priſon, on the 6th of November, 1770.

Out

Digitized by Google

Out of fifty-four men of his equipage, there remains no more to this Captain than eight men in health; all the reſt are confined to their beds. For two months paſt they ſuffered hunger and thirſt. He has been twice ſhipwrecked, and twice they have repaired their veſſel. He is not acquainted with the Portugueſe or the Spaniſh, but he ſpeaks Latin, French, and German. He came from the North, and has coaſted the iſland of Japan, &c.

Digitized by Google

REMARKS ON THE PAPER, No. I.

THIS Letter was written the day after the Count's arrival at Macao, and does not contain the leaſt hint of his baniſhment into Siberia. It ſpecifies no dates, except the Count's arrival at China, and that of the patent, ſaid to be obtained at Kaminieck. I ſcarcely need obſerve, that this account does not agree with the memoirs; and that the Count was at or near the town of Ochozk, in Siberia, at the time the patent is ſaid to have been given at Kaminieck. Upon this occaſion I have not the leaſt inclination to doubt the veracity of M. Le Bon; but whether theſe inconſiſtencies aroſe from the diſpoſition of concealing the particulars of his adventures, which evidently actuated the Count, who expected great advantages from the knowledge he had acquired; or whether they may conſiſt, for the moſt part, of thoſe inaccuracies which uſually accompany the relation of verbal communications, I ſhall not here attempt to decide.

ON THE PAPER, No. II.

IN this paper it may be obſerved, that the Count, being deſirous of keeping the particulars of his expedition as ſecret as poſſible, judged it neceſſary to communicate a pretended ſet of ad-

Digitized by Google

adventures. The letter inſerted in the Gentleman's Magazine agrees very nearly with this report of Mr. Barlow: I ſhall not therefore repeat the remarks I have already made upon that print. The mathematical inſtruments in his apartment are not deſcribed with ſufficient minuteneſs, to clear up the doubts, or confirm the aſſertions made in the note at the foot of page ix. It ſeems probable, however, that the croſs-ſtaff would not have poſſeſſed a place among his mathematical inſtruments, if the quadrant had been one of Hadley's conſtruction. Mr. Barlow ſays the veſſel was about eighty tons burthen:—Benyowſky (page 77, vol. I.) eſtimates it at two hundred and forty: both are, perhaps, mere gueſſes; but from the dimenſions given in this paper, and the draft of water mentioned at page 301 of the firſt volume, the Count's number proves very near, though under the truth.

On the PAPER, No. III.

THIS is doubtleſs the original from which the ſecond paper in the Gentleman's Magazine (page vii) was tranſlated. As the Count's intention, certainly, was not that of conveying information, but of miſleading the enquirers at Canton, I have not thought it neceſſary either to attempt an emendation of this imperfect copy, or to attempt any tranſlation.

Digitized by Google

ON THE PAPERS, No. IV. & V.

THESE Papers do not appear to require any comment.

ON THE DRAWING, OR SKETCH, OF THE ST. PETER AND ST. PAUL.

AMONG the Drawings of the Count, which compoſed part of the preſent Work, there was one of the veſſel in which he made his eſcape. As it was a three-maſted veſſel, differing in no reſpect, either in hull or rigging, from an European ſhip, the Proprietors did not intend to have it engraved, for which reaſon it was ſet apart from the reſt; and as my endeavours to find it have been ineffectual, I fear it has been irrecoverably miſlaid, among other papers of no value: I cannot, however, conſiſtently with the principles of rectitude, forbear obſerving, that it was exceedingly unlike the preſent Engraving, particularly in its wales, which were nearly ſtrait, and the guns, which were conſiderably more numerous, being eight or ten on the viſible ſide. Theſe circumſtances, nevertheleſs, are not enough, in my opinion, to impeach the Count's veracity, without farther deliberation. The Chineſe

Digitized by Google

Chineſe neatneſs is ſufficiently apparent in this Drawing, but it exhibits too many marks of incorrectneſs to be implicitly relied on; of which I ſhall only mention, that the ſhrouds do not terminate in the dead-eyes; that part of the gun-wale abuts againſt the main-maſt; and that the planking upon the poop terminates upon the after mizzen back-ſtay. I do not therefore apprehend that I ſhall ſeem an advocate improperly partial to the Count, when I make the ſuppoſition, that his Drawing was made in 1784, from memory, at the time when the publication of his Journal was reſolved on; and obſerve, that an interval of thirteen years may, without any great improbability be thought ſufficient to render ſuch a performance far from being correct, when made by a man whoſe purſuits had been very little in the marine department. I might go farther, and attempt to gueſs at the probable errors of both Drawings, with a view to diſcover whether they can be reconciled? I think they might; but the diſquiſition promiſes neither intereſt nor utility. I will, therefore, only add, that the Count (vol. I. page 77,) rightly ſays, that the veſſel carried eight guns; and though (page 301,) he ſays he cut ports at Kamſchatka, and mounted twelve additional guns, yet it ſeems they were wood; and it may eaſily be imagined, that the hard weather and misfortunes he met with in his voyage might force him to relinquiſh that uſeleſs parade, and cloſe his ports, when he repaired the veſſel at the Liqueio Iſlands.

This occurrence of the Drawing of the veſſel being overlooked in the Preface, though I thought I had omitted nothing to which the Public is entitled, leads me to mention, that the manuſcript

Digitized by Google

copy at the Britiſh Muſeum contains the following Drawings, which it was not thought proper to engrave.

1. The Shipwreck (Naufrage) of the Count de Benyowſky, among the Liqueio Iſlands. As it is evident that neither the Count, nor any of his companions, could have taken a drawing of the incident mentioned at the end of the firſt volume, I conſidered this ſketch merely as an ornament, conveying no information; on which account it appeared unneceſſary to engrave it.

2. View of the coaſt of Formoſa. There is no reference to this in the M. S. and it has no note of bearings, diſtance, &c. The Count's cypher on the back of the drawing refers it to Auguſt 26, 1771.

CONCERNING THE PORTRAIT IN THE TITLE PAGE.

THIS Engraving was made by Heath, from a miniature Portrait of half the ſize, which came into my hands in the ſame manner

Digitized by Google

manner as the correſpondence of the Count de Benyowſky, and others, relative to his laſt expedition; that is to ſay, in conſequence of the friendſhip ſubſiſting between Mr. Magellan and myſelf, which naturally led him to have recourſe to my aſſiſtance, together with that of another intimate friend, for the management of his affairs, during his preſent indiſpoſition.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE

MEMOIRS AND TRAVELS

OF THE

COUNT DE BENYOWSKY.

THE Count Mauritius Auguſtus de Benyowſky, Magnate of the kingdoms of Hungary and Poland, was born in the year 1741 at Verbowa, the hereditary lordſhip of his family, ſituated in the county of Nittria, in Hungary. He was the ſon of Samuel, Count de Benyowſky, General of Cavalry, in the ſervice of the Emperor, and Roſa, Baroneſs of Revay, Lady and hereditary Counteſs of Thurocz. The early part of his life was employed in the courſe of education, ſtudies and exerciſes which the court of Vienna affords to ſuch of its vaſſals as are of illuſtrious families; and upon his arrival at the age of fourteen years he fixed his choice on the profeſſion of arms. He was accordingly received into the regiment of Siebenſchien, in quality of

Digitized by Google

Lieutenant, and joined the Imperial army then in the field against the King of Pruſſia. The firſt battle at which he was preſent was that of Loboſitz, on the 8th of October, 1756, under the command of General Brown; the ſecond was that of Prague, on the 6th of May, 1757, under the Prince Charles of Lorrain; and the third was before Schweidnitz, on the 12th of November, 1757. In the following year, 1758, he had a ſhare in the battle of Domſtadt, under the command of General Laudon, after which period he received an invitation from his uncle, the Staroſt of * Bieniowſky, to repair to Poland, in order to ſecure the inheritance of his Staroſtie. He therefore quitted the Imperial ſervice, and haſtened into Lithuania, where he was acknowledged by his uncle as his heir, and ſucceeded him in the poſſeſſion of his lands. His tranquillity was, however, interrupted by the ſudden death of his father, and the intelligence he received that his brothers in law had taken poſſeſſion of his inheritance. This unexpected cataſtrophe demanding his immediate preſence in Hungary, he quitted Lithuania, with the ſole view of obtaining poſſeſſion of the property of his family; but on his arrival he found the whole in the hands of his brothers in law, who, by force, oppoſed his entrance into his own caſtle. In this conjuncture, attending only to the juſtice of his cauſe and the dictates of his vivacity, he repaired to Kruſſova, a lordſhip dependant on the caſtle of Verbowa, where, after having cauſed himſelf to be acknowledged by his vaſſals, and being aſſured of their fidelity, he armed them, and by their aſſiſtance gained poſſeſſion of

* Thus ſpelled in the manuſcript, after the Polish manner.

Digitized by Google

of all his effects. His brothers in law, thus defeated in their uſurpation, adopted the moſt atrocious expedient to compleat his ruin. For this purpoſe, they repreſented him at the court of Vienna as a rebel and diſturber of the public peace; in conſequence of which falſe information the Empreſs Queen iſſued a decree in Chancery againſt the Count, who was, by that means, not only deprived of his property, but compelled to withdraw, with the utmoſt expedition, into Poland. It was in vain that he tranſmitted many memorials from Poland, tending to juſtify his conduct; as his enemies ſuppreſſed them, and continued firm in the uſurpation of his property.

This diſgrace, added to the efforts of a diſpoſition naturally active, made him determine to travel; ſo that after eſtabliſhing his eſtate in Lithuania in proper hands, he repaired to Dantzick, with the intention of applying himſelf to navigation, and made ſeveral voyages to Hamburgh, and from thence to Amſterdam and to Plymouth. He was on the point of making a voyage to the Eaſt Indies in the year 1767, when he received ſeveral letters from the Magnates and Senators of Poland, which engaged him to return thither, in order to join in the confederation then forming. The perſonal regard he entertained for many of the nobility of that kingdom, added to the juſtice of their cauſe, and the conſideration of his own peculiar intereſts, induced him to comply with the earneſt ſolicitations of his friends. He accordingly arrived at Warſaw in the month of July, where he entered into an obligation upon oath with the chiefs of the confederacy, to the following effect:—

Digitized by Google

1. That he acknowledged the confederation as the only lawful tribunal of the republic, and that he would pay obedience only to the orders iſſued from its council.

2. That he would not acknowledge the King until the confederation ſhould have declared him lawfully elected.

3. That he would join the confederation, on the firſt notice, where they ſhould determine to aſſemble, to oppoſe the Ruſſians by force of arms; and that he would not forſake the colours of the confederation ſo long as the Ruſſians ſhould remain in Poland.

4. That he would faithfully obey all the orders of the council or generality of the confederation.

In the month of December he left Warſaw, with the deſign of endeavouring to make his rights known at the court of Vienna, but being at length deprived of every hope of juſtice, he was obliged to return into Poland. Being thus unjuſtly deprived of a conſiderable fortune in Hungary, without the ſmalleſt expectation of recovering it, he determined to quit for ever the dominions of the houſe of Auſtria. During his paſſage through the county of Zips, he was attacked by a violent fever, which obliged him to interrupt his journey. On this occaſion he received repeated marks of friendſhip and regard in the houſe of Mr. Henſky, a gentleman of diſtinction, and became enamoured of one of his three daughters, with whom he ſoon after had the pleaſure to be united by marriage.

In this ſtate he found himſelf in the poſſeſſion of happineſs and tranquillity; but it was not his fate to continue long in poſſeſſion of repoſe. The confederate ſtates

of

Digitized by Google

of Poland, a party of whom had declared themſelves at Cracow, taking notice that the Count de Benyowſky was one of the firſt who had ſigned their union at Warſaw, wrote to him to join them. Their preſſing ſolicitations would have been ineffectual, if he had not been acted on by a ſtronger tie. His oath compelled him to go. He therefore departed without informing his ſpouſe, and repaired to Cracow, where he arrived on the very day the Count Panin made the aſſault He was received with open arms by the Marſhal Czarnezky, and was immediately appointed Colonel-General, Commander of Cavalry, and Quarter-Maſter General.

On the 6th of July (1768) he was detached to Novitarg, to conduct a Poliſh regiment to Cracow, a commiſſion which he performed with honor, by bringing the whole regiment, compoſed of ſix hundred men, through the camp of the enemy before the town.

The Marſhal was ſo well ſatisfied with the conduct of the Count, that he prevailed on the council of the generality to appoint him Muſter-Maſter General, a place for which he had a competitor in the Prince Martin de Lubomierſky, who, upon his arrival at Cracow with two thouſand regular troops, was declared a member of the generality of the confederation, and Inſpector-General of Cavalry.

Before the arrival of this Prince, the Count de Benyowſky had propoſed to the Marſhal an expedition to ſeize the fortreſs of Landſcron with the Poliſh regiment in the ſervice of the Crown, which was quartered in that province. The Prince de Lubomierſky, on hearing of this propoſal, thought the enterprize eaſy, and undertook it himſelf. Without acquainting the Count, he therefore gave

Digitized by Google

gave orders to his cavalry to proceed, and it was not till after his departure that the Marſhal Czarneſky informed him of this attempt. The Count de Benyowſky did not heſitate to aſſure the Marſhal that the Prince would be defeated by the Ruſſians before he had proceeded half the way, and that there was no other remedy than to ſend the reſt of the cavalry, without delay, to charge the Ruſſians at the inſtant of their attack on the Prince. Unfortunately, the Marſhal was long in deciding; ſo that it was not till the ſecond day after the departure of the Prince that the Count de Benyowſky received orders to march, with fourteen hundred cavalry, to ſupport him. In conſequence of this delay the Count, notwithſtanding his utmoſt diligence, did not arrive at Kremenka till ſix hours after the defeat of the Prince. However, he had the good fortune to find the Ruſſians on the ſpot, not expecting any attack. Upon the information he had received from his ſpies of their poſition and their negligence, he attacked and defeated them, and retook two hundred men, who had been made priſoners, of the party of the Prince Lubomierſky.

After this manœuvre he himſelf formed the project of carrying the attempt upon Landſcron into execution. On his march towards that fortreſs he was ſo fortunate as to meet with ſeveral bodies of the Prince de Lubomierſky's troops, which reinforced his own. At length he arrived before the fortreſs, where he ſummoned the troops of the crown to ſurrender themſelves priſoners, and to put him in poſſeſſion of the place; which he had the ſatiſfaction of ſeeing performed in the ſpace of an hour's time. His firſt proceeding was to engage the new troops under

Digitized by Google

under their oath of fidelity, in the ſervice of the confederation; after which he diſpatched a courier to the Prince Lubomierſky, (who, ſince his defeat, had taken refuge in Hungary, without troops or friends,) to acquaint him with his ſucceſs, and invite him to reſume his command. But two days afterwards, having received undoubted information that the Ruſſian General, Count Apraxin, was on his march to inveſt Cracow, he judged it indiſpenſably neceſſary to haſten to the defence of that place; and as he foreſaw that a town of that magnitude could not be defended unleſs it were well ſupplied with proviſions, he laid the diſtricts of Bielcz, Landſcron, and Novitarg, under contribution, and obtained eighty carriages of grain, with ſix hundred oxen.

With this convoy he quitted Landſcron, and marched towards Cracow. On his arrival at Vielicka, a town famous for its ſalt-works, he met a party of Ruſſians, which he attacked and defeated, taking thirty priſoners, and the ſum of nine hundred and eighty thouſand Poliſh florins, being the King's revenue from the ſalt-works. In the night of the 29th of July he came to the paſſage of the Viſtula, from whence he diſpatched an officer to inform the Marſhal Czarnezky of his return, requeſting that the gates might be opened, to admit his party into the town without being diſcovered by the Ruſſians. The Marſhal, who was not acquainted with the particulars of the enterprize of the Count, but had heard by report that he was defeated and ſlain, was overjoyed at his return, and he entered the city with four thouſand cavalry, a large ſum of money, and a ſupply of proviſions.

Immediately

Digitized by Google

Immediately after the arrival of the Count, he propoſed to the Marſhal to eſtabliſh a camp without the town; repreſenting to him, that their numerous cavalry would exhauſt their magazines without being of any utility. In ſupport of this propoſal he obſerved, that the greateſt advantages would be derived from an entrenched camp, as it would facilitate the junction of ſeveral parties of the nobility, who durſt not declare themſelves in favor of the confederation, becauſe they ſaw no force to ſupport them againſt the Ruſſians. The repreſentations of the Count did not, however, prevail with the council of the confederation. Orders were given to ſhut and barricade the gates of the town, including all the troops, whoſe number amounted to thirteen thouſand men. General Apraxin approached every day nearer the town, and laid the ſurrounding country deſolate, ſo that it could no longer afford any ſubſiſtance to the beſieged. Proviſions, by this means, becoming very ſcarce and dear, the Count again propoſed to the Marſhal to permit him to ſally out with a party of two thouſand cavalry, in hopes that with this troop he might throw ſome proviſions into the town, and perhaps cauſe the Ruſſian General to raiſe the ſiege. The council of the generality accepted this propoſal, and permitted him to leave the city on the 23d of July, when he paſſed out at the gate of the Viſtula, and ſwam his troops acroſs the river, every other paſſage being ſhut up.

As ſoon as he had gained the open country he diſpatched ſeveral officers to engage the nobility to join him, and furniſh ſubſiſtance for the beſieged town. As early as the 8th of Auguſt he found himſelf at the head of near

Digitized by Google

near five thouſand horſe and a good number of carriages, loaded with proviſions, drawn by oxen, which were likewiſe intended to make part of the ſubſiſtance. On the 7th of Auguſt he repaired to the paſſage of the Viſtula; but finding it occupied by the Ruſſians, he retreated towards Vielicka, for the greater certainty of introducing the ſupplies into the town; and, as he concluded that the beſt method of inſuring ſucceſs would be to attack the Ruſſians on one ſide, in order to facilitate the paſſage on the other, he accordingly marched on the 10th of the ſame month, with three thouſand horſe, directly to the enemy's camp, leaving the convoy of proviſions under the command of the Baron de Kluſewſky, Colonel of Infantry, with orders to take advantage of the moment of the attack to enter the town. At three o'clock in the morning the Count, in perſon, attacked the Ruſſian camp, and compelled General Apraxin to collect all his troops to oppoſe him, by which means a paſſage was left for the Baron de Kluſewſky. At eight o'clock the Count, being convinced that his ſupplies had entered Cracow, made a preceipitate retreat, after having loſt above ſixteen hundred men. The Ruſſian cavalry, compoſed of Coſſacks and Huſſars, purſued the Count, who, in his retreat, had the misfortune to have his horſe killed under him, and, after receiving two wounds, he himſelf fell at laſt into the hands of the enemy.

The Ruſſian General, being informed of the ſucceſsful manœuvre of the Count, was impreſſed with a very high opinion of him, and propoſed to the Count to enter into the ſervice of his ſovereign; an offer which was rejected with diſdain. He was, therefore, on the point of being

Digitized by Google

ſent with the other priſoners to Kiovia, where his friends ranſomed him for two thouſand ducats, which is equivalent to twenty-two thouſand French livres. * Being thus ſet at liberty, he conſidered himſelf as diſpenſed from his parole which he had given to the Ruſſians; it being an inconteſtable truth, that a man who purchaſes the uſe of his faculties has a right to apply them to any uſe he may find neceſſary for his welfare. By virtue of this indubitable right, the Count again entered Cracow, and was received with the moſt perfect ſatisfaction by the whole confederacy.

At the firſt council of war which was held, he repreſented to the generality, that the town being no longer able to hold out, it became an object of the utmoſt conſequence to ſecure another place of retreat. He therefore propoſed to the council to appoint him to ſeize the caſtle of Lublau, ſituated on the frontier of Hungary. This project was approved of by the council, and the execution was committed to the charge of the Count, who on the 22d quitted the town of Cracow, a body of ſix hundred horſe being appointed to follow him. On his arrival on the frontier he uſed every exertion to obtain the intelligence neceſſary to inſure ſucceſs to his enterprize. He even ventured to viſit the commanding officer of the caſtle, who was not apprehenſive of the leaſt danger. After a few viſits he had the addreſs to engage more than half the garriſon, by oath, in the intereſt of the confederation, and he only waited for the appearance of the detachment from Cracow. But it unfortunately happened that the commander of that body was ſo indiſcreet

as

* Or £. 962 ſterling.

Digitized by Google

as to divulge the purpoſe to which it was deſtined; ſo that the news arrived at the caſtle of Lublau before the troops, and the Count de Benyowſky, who waited in readineſs in the town of Georgenburg, near the caſtle, was ſeized, and carried into that fortreſs. The precaution he had taken of remaining in Hungary did not ſave him from the danger, becauſe the commandant of Leutſch, an Imperial town, had permitted the foreign troops to paſs into Hungary, contrary to the rights of his ſovereign. The commanding officer of the caſtle treated the Count with the greateſt indignity, and, purſuant to his order, ſent him to General Apraxin at Cracow, who had taken poſſeſſion of that town during the abſence of the Count. It fortunately happened, however, that, in the paſſage from Novitarg, a troop of two hundred confederates, whoſe commanding officer knew the uniform of the troops who were conducting the Count, met them and reſcued him out of their hands. As ſoon as the officer recognized the Count de Benyowſky, he ſurrendered his command to him. With this ſmall force he marched towards Lublin, a town where the reſt of the confederation of Cracow had appointed to meet, in order to join thoſe of Bar. On his arrival near Lublin he ſent an intelligent officer to enquire whether the Ruſſians were ſtill at a diſtance, and whether any part of the confederation had already repaired to Lublin. The officer, on his return, acquainted him, that he had found a party of the confederates in Lublin, commanded by M. Derzanowſky, who was then buſied in engaging the nobility of that palatinate to declare themſelves in favor of the confederation; but that he had likewiſe been informed

Digitized by Google

that the Ruſſians were advancing, by forced marches, to diſlodge the confederates from that town. This news cauſed the Count de Benyowſky to abandon his deſign of entering Lublin, inſtead of which he proceeded to Spicza, where he met a body of the confederates, who joined his party. From Spicza he publiſhed ſeveral manifeſtos, in which he exhorted the nobility to join him, fixing the rendezvous at Zamoſc, to which place he directed his march.

On his arrival at Kraſnoſlaw he learned, that a party of the confederates, who had retired to Chelm, was in danger of being attacked by a body of Ruſſians, compoſed of one battalion of infantry, eight hundred Coſſacks, and four hundred Huſſars. He inſtantly determined to haſten to their aſſiſtance, and marched the whole night between the 17th and 18th of October, 1768. His arrival was almoſt immediately after that of the Ruſſians, whoſe cavalry had began to ſpread over the ſuburbs. He attacked and diſlodged them, and upon entering the town he propoſed to Colonel Suhalſky, whom he found with four hundred horſe in the great ſquare, to leave the town and attack the Ruſſians. This being reſolved on, the Count marched out with his whole troop, pretending to fly, in order to detach the enemy's cavalry from their infantry. He had the good fortune by this means to draw them two leagues from Chelm, when perceiving them at a conſiderable diſtance from their infantry, he faced about and briſkly attacked them. The Coſſacks were thrown into confuſion at the firſt charge, and the Huſſars, after ſuſtaining the ſhock, endeavoured to retreat towards their infantry; on the arrival of which the Count,

Digitized by Google

Count, whoſe force conſiſted entirely of cavalry, retired with the loſs of one hundred and ſix men, the enemy not daring to purſue him. The affair being thus terminated, the Count returned to Kraſnoſlaw, where he had the ſatisfaction to meet a party of three hundred infantry, ſent by the nobility of the palatinate of Sandomir, to the aſſiſtance of Bar, the city from whence the general confederation took its name. After the addition of this troop he found himſelf at the head of two thouſand men, in want only of field pieces and ammunition.

Before he quitted Kraſnoſlaw he aſſembled a council, in which it was determined to repair to Zamoſc, and take poſſeſſion of the town, in order to procure the neceſſary ſupplies of arms, money, and ammunition. On the 28th of October the Count encamped in the ſuburbs of the town, and ſummoned the commandant of the town to pay the contribution of three thouſand ducats, arms for two thouſand infantry, four field pieces, four thouſand pounds of gunpowder, and ſix thouſand pounds of lead. On the 27th, having received nearly the whole of his demand, he quitted Zamoſc, with the intention of repairing to Belcz, in order to encourage the nobility of that palatinate to declare in favor of the confederation.

Upon his arrival at Grodeck he judged it proper to remain ſome time, in expectation of the parties which the nobility of the palatinate of Lublin might ſend to him. Between the 6th and 10th of November he was joined by ſeven hundred and forty-three horſemen and one hundred and forty fantaſſins, whereupon, judging himſelf ſufficiently ſtrong to appear before Belcz, he quitted Grodeck on the 12th, on his march towards that place. As he was paſſing through

Digitized by Google

through the village of Lelki he met an officer with dispatches from General Vitt, commander at Kamieniecz, to the King. This officer, who was compelled to deliver his packet, informed them, that a Ruſſian party was then in the field, for the expreſs purpoſe of purſuing and deſtroying the confederated forces under his command, and that the Ruſſian General had ſet a price upon his head. After this information, and from the particulars contained in the diſpatches, he changed his deſign, and inſtead of repairing to Belcz himſelf, he ſent no more than a detachment of ſix hundred horſe to that place, commanded by Colonel Suhalſky, to lay the town under contribution. The Count paſſed, with the greateſt part of his force, to Sokal, a town not far from Belcz, where he waited the return of his ſpies. One of them arrived in the night of the 20th, from whom he received information, that a corps of Ruſſians, joined by a regiment of Polanders in the ſervice of the King, were marching haſtily to ſurprize the Count, who they ſuppoſed to be in Belcz with his whole force. At day-break he diſpatched an order to his officer in command at Belcz to march out of the town in the night of the 21ſt, and proceed towards the village of Lelki to meet the Ruſſians, and engage them to purſue him. He expreſsly ordered him to retreat towards Sokal, and not to face about till he arrived on the banks of the river in the way to Sokal. After forwarding theſe orders the Count quitted Sokal the 21ſt of December, and placed his infantry, with four pieces of cannon, in ambuſcade in a wood by the ſide of the road, while he himſelf, with his cavalry, remained concealed behind an eminence nearer to Lelki. In this diſpoſition he

paſſed

paſſed the whole day and part of the night, in expectation of the event, frequently ſending detachments towards Lelki to obſerve the enemy. His officers returned every hour with information, and at length the long expected hour arrived in which he received notice that the detachment from Belcz had met the corps of Ruſſians, was immediately attacked by them, and that the confederate party would very ſoon paſs by his poſt. In fact, the Count heard ſeveral diſcharges of fire-arms, and quickly after he ſaw Colonel Suhalſky retire towards Sokal, purſued by the Ruſſians. He ſuffered both to paſs until Suhalſky had proceeded beyond the wood where the confederate infantry was in ambuſh. Theſe began a ſmart fire on the Ruſſians, who inſtantly halted, and afterwards retreated towards the mountain, behind which the Count lay concealed, out of the reach of cannon ſhot. The Ruſſians drew up in order of battle to receive the ſhock of Colonel Suhalſky's party, who came upon them, ſupported by the infantry, out of the ambuſcade. As ſoon as the firſt fire had began, the Count ruſhed upon the enemy's right flank, which being forced to give way, fell upon the centre in the greateſt diſorder. The Ruſſians, nevertheleſs, fought with deſperate valour as long as their ammunition laſted; but at length being compelled to yield to force, they ſurrendered themſelves priſoners, to the number of four hundred men, being the remainder of a party of three thouſand.

After this happy termination, the Count, ſurprized to find no cannon with the enemy's infantry, was informed that the Ruſſian commander, General Iſmailow, having perceived that the corps of Colonel Suhalſky was only a detachment,

Digitized by Google

detachment, had concluded that the Count himſelf remained at Belcz; for which reaſon he ſent only the cavalry, with ſix companies of chaſſeurs, on the purſuit, and had himſelf, with four battalions, ſix pieces of cannon, ten ſquadrons of Huſſars, and a Poliſh regiment of cavalry, proceeded to Belcz, with the intention of deſtroying the Count's party. In order therefore to obtain the beſt information of the deſigns of this General, the Count de Benyowſky diſpatched a Poliſh Captain, M. Ribniczki, to make the neceſſary enquiries, and, if poſſible, to bring the Poliſh regiment over to the ſide of the confederation.

After the departure of this emiſſary the Count retired with his troops towards Moſty, a town ſituate among the mountains of black Ruſſia, about ſixteen leagues from the field of battle, where he remained till the 27th of the month. On the 28th about noon he was informed that a body of troops were ſeen on the heights, marching with their colours flying. He immediately ordered his forces to move, and marched towards them, with a determination to give them a warm reception; but he was ſoon agreeably undeceived by the arrival of a Poliſh officer, whom he perceived to be his emiſſary, and who informed him that the troops then on their march towards him conſiſted of four ſquadrons of Poliſh cavalry, who having quitted the Ruſſian ſervice, were deſirous of joining the confederation. The uſual oath was therefore adminiſtered to them, after which the Count reſolved to proceed to Bar, in order to give an account of his proceedings to the generality of the confederation, and to diſpoſe of his priſoners. But the following day, having received information

Digitized by Google

mation of the taking of Bar, and the retreat of the Count de Potoczky towards the frontier of Turky, he was desirous of joining him, and would have carried his purpose into effect, if he had not been solicited by the nobility of the palatinate of Lemberg, who sent several deputies to request him to approach their town, and support them in declaring for the confederation. He therefore marched towards Lemberg on the 4th of December, and levied a contribution in that city, but was joined by no more than fifty horsemen. From Lemberg he sent a party to Brody, to raise some money, and himself marched towards the Dneister. On the 14th he met at Zavalow a party of the confederates of the corps under the Count de Pulauzky, from whom he learned the whole of the misfortunes the confederation had suffered, the taking of Bar, the defeat of Count Potoczky at Podhayze, and the imprisonment of the old Marshal Pulauzky: but the event which most sensibly affected him was the design of the two sons of the Marshal Pulauzky, who, seeing their father imprisoned, were desirous of quitting the army of the confederation.

All these circumstances determined the Count to repair to Zuaniecz on the 21st. The young Counts Pulauzky, his old friends, received him with the greatest joy, as a friend capable of assisting in their enterprizes, and on the following day he was proclaimed Commandant-General of Cavalry, and installed in quality of Commander in Chief at Zuaniecz, a place which the elder son of the Count Pulauzky ceded to him on account of the confidence he reposed in his experience. Immediately after the arrival of the Count a change was made in the discipline of the troops of the confederates. They were better provided,

Digitized by Google

and ſubordination more ſtrictly attended to. And as the rigour of the ſeaſon ſeemed to forbid the approach of the Ruſſians, the Count availed himſelf of the time to ſtock the two fortreſſes of Zuaniecz and Okopp with proviſion, in the latter of which the younger Count Pulauzky commanded in perſon. He likewiſe uſed every exertion to reconcile the Count Potoczky and Kraſinzky with the Marſhal Pulauzky. But this interpoſition had nearly proved unfortunate to the Count Benyowſky himſelf; for the Count Potoeſky, ſuſpecting him of an intention of releaſing the Marſhal Pulauzky by open force, had proceeded ſo far even as to iſſue orders to arreſt the Count de Benyowſky. The latter, however, having received information of the proceeding, quitted the camp and retired to Zuaniecz, where he connected himſelf ſtill more intimately than before with the two ſons of the Marſhal de Pulauzky.

On the 29th of December the Count received advice of the departure of the Count Potoczky, with his troops, for Bender. He ſaw clearly that this diſunion between the two confederate parties would deſtroy their force; and for that reaſon he adviſed the Count de Pulauzky to write to the Counts Potoczky and Kraſinzky, to repreſent to them the numerous dangers to which they would expoſe many parts of the confederation, by ſeparating from them; that, on the contrary, it was abſolutely neceſſary to re-enter Poland with a conſiderable body of Turks to encourage and ſupport the nobility in taking up arms in favor of the confederation, which they might eaſily do by ſacrificing their private intereſts to the general good of the republic. But the Count Potoczky, liſtening only to the ſuggeſtions of his ambition, and flattered

Digitized by Google

tered by the diſtinction he met with among the Turks, perſiſted in the deſign of not quitting the Turkiſh army, in which he likewiſe prevailed on the Count de Kraſinzky to concur.

This precipitate departure of the Counts Potoczky and Kraſinzky, and the diſtance of the Turkiſh army near Bender, entirely diſconcerted the two confederate parties, compoſed of ſeven thouſand eight hundred men, one half of whom were commanded by Count Caſimir Pulauzky at Okopp, and the other by the Count de Benyowſky at Zuaniecz. Theſe two chiefs, in order to keep their troops in ſpirits, and likewiſe to anſwer the eſſential purpoſes of the confederation, took into their pay three thouſand Lipky, a kind of light Turkiſh cavalry, and after having put the fortreſſes into a ſtate of defence, they eſtabliſhed two camps between Zuaniecz and Okopp.

Such was their poſition on the 22d of January, 1769. On the 24th they received advice that a Ruſſian corps, commanded by General Iſmailow, was eſtabliſhed at Conſtantinow, in Wolnia, and that another corps, under the command of General Kretſetnikow, had fixed their quarters at Lemberg. Hence they concluded that the Ruſſians deſigned to moleſt them by their light troops till the expected arrival of General Galitzin with his army. To prevent this, their firſt care was directed to the preſervation of the fortreſſes of Zuaniecz and Okopp, after which they raiſed their camp to march towards the enemy. The Count Pulauzky undertook to act againſt General Kretſetnikow, and the Count Benyowſky againſt General Iſmailow. The latter directed his march towards Skalat, a caſtle and town belonging to the Count Scipion, one of

Digitized by Google

his beſt friends, a circumſtance which, however, did not prevent him from ſeizing the artillery and furniture. From Skalat he marched to Viogrodeck, Lampol, and Zaczſlaw, at which laſt place he received a reinforcement of one hundred and ſixty-nine horſemen and eighty-two foot ſoldiers. From Zaczſlaw he retired into the foreſt of Lackow, whence he diſpatched two of his officers to reconnoitre the enemy's poſt at Conſtantinow. On their return he learned that General Iſmailow was not yet arrived, but that he was continually expected, and that there was at Conſtantinow only a Major, commander of ſix companies of infantry, having with him two field pieces, four hundred Huſſars, and three or four hundred Coſſacks; and that the enemy was ignorant of the poſition of the confederates, whom they ſuppoſed ſtill to remain in their fortreſſes. On this information the Count de Benyowſky marched his troops the whole night between the 7th and 8th of February, and arrived before Conſtantenow at four in the morning. He immediately diſpoſed his troops in order, and at five o'clock attacked them in three different places. The Ruſſians made very little reſiſtance, ſo that great numbers of them were ſlain, becauſe the Turks gave no quarter, a circumſtance which obliged the Count to threaten the Aga who commanded them, that if he did not put a ſtop to the carnage made by his troop, he would puniſh their cruelty on the ſpot. This firmneſs of the Count preſerved the lives of many of theſe unfortunate men.

After having thus defeated the Ruſſians he took poſſeſſion of Conſtantinow, which he laid under contribution, and then proceeded to Medzibors. On the 15th he

Digitized by Google

he took the caſtle of Medzibors, the garriſon conſiſting of ſixty-eight grenadiers, with eight pieces of cannon, and a quantity of ammunition and proviſions. From Medzibors he paſſed the river Bogh, and marched towards Grodek; during which he was informed that the Ruſſians, in conjunction with General Branicky, in the King's ſervice, having been made acquainted with the operations and the march of the Count, had ſent four thouſand men, infantry and cavalry, from Bar, to purſue him. This intelligence cauſed him to haſten his march, and to paſs the river Smotrick to the north of the caſtle of Felſtin. On the 27th, being arrived at Satanow, he was informed that the Count Pulauzky, not having ſucceeded againſt Lemberg, had attempted to diſlodge ſeveral parties of Ruſſians in the vicinity of that place, three of which he had defeated; but that having received advices of the greateſt conſequence, he had retreated towards Zuaniecz, in hopes of joining the Count. On the 27th the Count Benyowſky quitted Satanow, and marched towards Grodek, and as he was paſſing through the village of Oſtokopia he met ſeveral carriages filled with wounded men, from whom he learnt that the Count Pulauzky had maintained a very ſharp action with the Ruſſians near the river Srebovicza, and had retired towards Grodek, the Ruſſians not thinking proper to purſue him.

In conſequence of this information the Count halted to refreſh his troops, and after marching all night he arrived about day-break before Grodek, where the Count Pulauzky, hearing of his arrival, met him, and conducted him into the town. The junction of theſe troops was one of thoſe happy turns of fortune which alone can change

Digitized by Google

change the iſſue of a well-conducted enterprize, ſuch as was that of General Iſmailow, who, ſince the affair at Conſtantinow, had ſought the Count Benyowſky without being able to join him. The Ruſſian commander, upon the information that the Count Pulauzky was at Grodek with three thouſand men, determined to ſurround him, and would certainly have done it, if the arrival of the Count, with his corps of four thouſand three hundred men, had not intervened and prevented it.

On the 28th in the evening the confederate detachment announced the approach of the Ruſſians, who were on their march, to the number of ten thouſand, in two columns.

On the 1ſt of March, at ſeven in the morning, they were at no greater diſtance from the city than one league, when the Count de Pulauzky preſented himſelf in oppoſition to them in the order of battle, with twenty-eight companies of infantry, ſupported by ſix pieces of cannon, with the Turkiſh and Poliſh cavalry on each wing. At nine o'clock the action began, by an attack made by the Ruſſian cavalry upon the left wing of the confederates, which was compelled to give way. The center was at the ſame time charged by the enemy's infantry along its whole front, which likewiſe engaged their left: at this moment the Count de Benyowſky marched his whole infantry to ſupport the left wing of the Count de Pulauzky, and himſelf, at the head of his cavalry, ruſhed on the enemy's right flank, who were not in the leaſt expectation of this manœuvre. The Ruſſian General then divided his center to ſupport his wings, but the enemy's Coſſacks,

Digitized by Google

Coſſacks, who were overthrown, prevented the infantry from obeying their orders. The conſequence was, that the latter were thrown into the utmoſt confuſion, and compelled to make a precipitate retreat, with the loſs of their carriages and artillery. This affair coſt the Ruſſians near twelve hundred men ſlain, and as many taken priſoners; but the killed and wounded of the confederates did not exceed nine hundred.

On the 2d of March the two Counts quitted the town of Grodek, and marched towards Zuaniecz with the intention of calling a council of war to decide ultimately on the meaſures to be purſued. On the 7th, on a ſpot between Zuaniecz and Okopp, they divided their troops in order to lead them into thoſe fortreſſes, to repoſe themſelves, after the fatigues they had undergone.

A council of war was held on the 8th, at which the Generals Laurent, Potoczky, Groeholzky, Radziminſky, Slabuſerſky, Noviczy, and other commanders of the troops of the republic attached to the confederation were preſent. The two Counts, perſuaded that the Ruſſian army waited only the return of ſpring to make their approach to the Turkiſh frontier, repreſented to the council, that it would be prudent to determine to quit the two poſts of Zuaniecz and Okopp, and return into Poland. The reaſons they offered were, 1. That while they remained on the frontier of Turky, the Ruſſians would keep them ſeparated from Poland, and conſequently that the palatinates would never dare to declare for the confederation, becauſe unſupported by any military force. 2. That they themſelves would likewiſe continue unable to draw any ſupply either of ſubſiſtence or recruits from Poland, to reinſtate their daily loſſes,

Digitized by Google

loſſes. 3. Laſtly, That the two fortreſſes of Zuaniecz and Okopp could never hold out againſt an army. Theſe remonſtrances had no effect on the Council, which obſtinately perſiſted in the reſolution of preſerving the two fortreſſes; and for that purpoſe they determined to ſend one deputy to the Counts Potoczky and Krazinzky to requeſt ſupplies of men and money, and another to Conſtantinople to ſolicit the ſame ſupplies from the Grand Signior. It was in vain that the Counts Pulauzky and Benyowſky repreſented, that before the return of their deputies the Ruſſians would attack them, and put it out of their power to abandon their preſent poſts; for the council ſtill adhered to their reſolution.

On the 10th a foraging party brought word, that they had diſcovered a numerous troop of the enemy's cavalry at Korolouka. The Council immediately ordered a detachment on the purſuit. The Count himſelf took charge of this expedition; but inſtead of the enemy he met a party of ſix hundred confederates, who had formerly ſerved under the Prince Lubomierſky. On the 12th, in the morning, advice was received by the Count, that General Vitt had cauſed ſeven hundred men to march out of Kamieniecz Podolſky, to take their poſition before Zuanieez. The Council being informed of this, gave orders to the Count to make the neceſſary diſpoſitions to prevent their making a lodgment, which he did by preſenting himſelf before them with eight ſquadrons of cavalry. Upon his approach he learned that General Vitt had ſent this detachment only for the purpoſe of receiving a Ruſſian courier from Conſtantinople, who was to be put into their hands by a Turkiſh detachment from Chotym,

Digitized by Google

Chotym. On this information the Count de Benyowſky acquainted the officer, that the Turks had confidence enough in the confederation to paſs the man in queſtion through their hands, concerning whoſe fate it was totally unneceſſary for General Vitt to give himſelf any trouble; who, having conſulted his own vanity in ſending his detachment, might probably find reaſons to repent the proceeding. This anſwer was followed by an order to the officer to withdraw inſtantly with his party, or ſtand on his defence. The royaliſt officer retired without delay, and returned to Kamieniecz; and the Count, on his part, retired to Zuaniecz, where he found the Ruſſian courier arrived, and received him in charge from the Turks to be conducted to Kamieniecz.

In the night of the 15th the Count received a courier from the Count Pulauzky, informing him, that the latter having iſſued out of Okopp with a detachment of troops, on his march towards Oucze, was attacked by the Ruſſians, and obliged to retreat towards Grodek, a village to which he had been invited to come. The Count Benyowſky immediately marched a part of his cavalry with the utmoſt expedition to his aſſiſtance; but though he traverſed ſixteen leagues in fourteen hours, he did not arrive till after the action, which, contrary to all expectation, had terminated in favor of the confederates, though the Count Pulauzky had no more than four hundred men with him to oppoſe a body of fourteen hundred. The priſoners taken in this engagement affirmed that the Ruſſian party had been ſent out to reconnoitre the ground, and take ſome priſoners, in order to obtain information reſpecting the poſitions

Digitized by Google

of the fortreſſes Zuaniecz and Okopp. They alſo informed the Count that General Iſmailow intended in a ſhort time to attack thoſe fortreſſes with twelve thouſand men appointed for the enterprize.

On the 18th, upon his return to Zuaniecz, the Count communicated this news to the council, which was alſo confirmed by a Poliſh officer who deſerted from Kamieniecz to join the confederation. On the 21ſt the Count de Benyowſky having received freſh advices of the approach of the enemy, engaged the Count Pulauzky to quit the fortreſs of Okopp, as being incapable of maintaining a ſiege; but the council refuſed to conſent to the evacuation of that place; and at laſt, on the 22d and 23d, being aſſured that General Iſmailow was at no greater diſtance than three leagues from Zuaniecz, they gave up all their hopes. The members of the council then deliberated only on the beſt means of ſecuring themſelves individually, and one after another they quitted the fortreſs to retire into Turky, taking with them all the Ruſſian priſoners. This proceeding conſequently left the whole diſpoſition of affairs in the hands of the Count de Benyowſky.

On the 24th in the morning the Count beheld from the fortreſs the enemy's columns following each other, and ſeparating at the village of Havrilouka; whence he conjectured that they intended to attack the two fortreſſes of Zuaniecz and Okopp at the ſame time, a circumſtance in which he was not deceived. On the ſame day about noon the Count fired ſeveral eight pounders at the enemy, loaded with only one third of their uſual charge. The balls of courſe not reaching the enemy, they

Digitized by Google

they concluded that they might, with impunity, approach ſtill nearer the fortreſs, which they did the ſame day, and began to work on the erection of batteries. On the 25th the Ruſſians began to fire on the caſtle, and continued their cannonade till the cloſe of the day, without receiving any effectual return; but in the night between the 25th and 26th the Count, after having given orders to the commanding officer under him to fire on the enemy at day-break with his heavieſt artillery, ſallied out of the caſtle by the gate of Ottaky, which leads towards the Dneiſter, with two thouſand horſe, and paſſing through Brahy, he made the entire circuit of the Ruſſian camp, ſo that he found himſelf by day-break at their backs. At this inſtant the artillery from the caſtle began a very heavy and deſtructive fire on the enemy's camp, which was within half cannon ſhot of the place. Their troops, who could not rally without being expoſed to the fire which ſwept their ranks, were quickly thrown into the utmoſt confuſion, which was greatly increaſed by the ſudden violence of the cavalry of the Count, who ruſhed upon them, and forced them, at laſt, to quit the camp and baggage, and fly with precipitation towards Grodek. Their terror was ſuch, that they did not ſtop till at the diſtance of ſix leagues from Zuaniecz, and on this occaſion they loſt eleven hundred ſlain, and three hundred and twenty-eight priſoners, with two pair of colours, three ſtandards, and eighteen pieces of cannon.

After the deliverance of Zuaniecz, the Count, deſirous of aſſiſting his companion, the Count de Pulauzky, at Okopp, marched immediately towards that fortreſs; but

Digitized by Google

on his arrival he found it in aſhes, and entirely abandoned, except by the dying and the dead. Some of the former acquainted the Count, that the Count de Pulauzky, ſeeing the impoſſibility of maintaining the place, had himſelf, after repelling three aſſaults, ſet fire to the town and caſtle, and immediately afterwards ſallied out, with the intention of forcing a paſſage through the enemy's camp to join the Count de Benyowſky; but that their knowledge of the ſubſequent adventures of their intrepid chief extended no farther.

The Count, after having ſeen the wounded placed in proper carriages, returned to Zuaniecz. On the 29th he received a letter from the Count de Pulauzky, who informed him, that not having been able to form a paſſage towards Zuaniecz, in his ſally out of Okopp, he had paſſed the Dneiſter, and directing his march through Moldavia, he had happily arrived at Zombor, whence he propoſed to join the party of confederates at Sandomir in expectation of the arrival of the Count, whom he adviſed to quit Zuaniecz and immediately retire into Turkey, in order to march freely through Moldavia on the frontiers of Hungary, where he would himſelf wait for him in the neighbourhood of Zombor. The Count communicated this letter to all the commanders under him, and determined with them to adopt the meaſures propoſed by the Count Pulauzky. In conſequence of this deciſion he ſent two of his officers to the Bacha of Chotym, to inform him of his intention, and to requeſt the neceſſary aſſiſtance to facilitate his paſſage. The Bacha acquieſced in all his demands, and promiſed the indiſpenſable aſſiſtance required by the Count. Orders were therefore immediately given

to

Digitized by Google

to forward the equipages to Otaky, a village ſituated near Chotym; and on the 30th he evacuated Zuaniecz and marched to Braha, a Poliſh village on the bank of the Dnieſter, oppoſite Chotym, and under the cannon of that fortreſs. Nothing now remained but to paſs the river; but juſt as the Count was about to form a bridge, the Bacha ſent him word that he durſt by no means permit the eſtabliſhment of a bridge acroſs the river without expreſs orders of the Grand Seignor; and moreover, that, upon reflection, he did not think proper to venture to receive the Count and his troops till inſtructions ſhould arrive from Stamboul *.

This meſſage threw the Count into the utmoſt embarraſſment. For as he had evacuated Zuaniecz, he found himſelf expoſed to the danger of being ſurrounded on the firſt occaſion by the Ruſſians, who, having the Bacha of Chotym in their intereſts, might eaſily, and without danger, attack the Count whenever they pleaſed. On the 6th of April the Ruſſians took poſſeſſion of Zuaniecz, and detached a party for the purpoſe of entirely deſtroying the Count and his troops. In the night between the 7th and 8th he was attacked at Braha, by four thouſand men, but the precipitation of the Ruſſian General ſaved the Count. The enemy's cavalry preceded their infantry, and firſt entered the village, where they were very ill treated by two batteries the Count had conſtructed upon a ſmall eminence. Being thus forced to give way, they ſtopped the paſſage of their infantry, which deſcended the mountain of Braha; and as every ſhot of the batteries took effect, the Count had the good fortune to repel them.

Nevertheleſs,

* *i. e.* Conſtantinople.

Digitized by Google

Nevertheleſs, as he was by no means deſirous of a ſecond viſit, he quitted Braha on the 8th, and marched to Kitaygrod, where he laid a bridge acroſs the Dnieſter, and entered Turky in ſpite of the prohibition and menaces of the Bacha. He then paſſed through Meſava, and repaired to Stadienieza near Chotym, where he pitched his tents near the camp of the Bacha of Natolia, intending to reſt his troops for a ſhort ſpace, and to ſettle upon the meaſures neceſſary to be adopted in facilitating his march through Moldavia.

On the 10th he received an order from the Bacha of Chotym to raiſe his camp, and leave the dominions of the Grand Signior without delay; and this order was attended with the threat, that on the leaſt ſign of reſiſtance he would cauſe all the confederates to be cut in pieces. The Count returned for anſwer, that as the Grand Signior had granted his protection to the confederates of the republic, of which he was a member, it was with the greateſt ſurprize that he beheld the conduct of the Bacha, who had already forfeited his word, by promiſing him every aſſiſtance, which he had baſely departed from when he forbad him to paſs the river at Braha, and by that means expoſed him to the mercy of the Ruſſians; that there was no occaſion for other proofs to convince him of the bad faith of the Bacha, who had ſold his ſervices to the Ruſſians; and that he feared not his threats, becauſe he was well aſſured that the brave men he commanded would not execute a commiſſion ſo baſe as that of cutting off the troops of the friends and allies of the Grand Signior, who had taken refuge in his dominions,

After

Digitized by Google

After diſpatching this anſwer, the Count waited upon the Bacha of Natolia, who was encamped near him, and to whom he communicated every particular of the conduct of the Bacha of Chotym, at the ſame time that he requeſted his aſſiſtance againſt the violence of that traitor. The Bacha of Natolia, who was ſecretly the enemy of the Bacha of Chotym, promiſed the Count his aſſiſtance, and adviſed him to ſend a courier to Stamboul to acquaint the Grand Signior with the behaviour of the commander at Chotym, which the Count accordingly did the ſame day. On the 11th in the evening the Bacha of Chotym ſent an Aga of the Janizaries to the Bacha of Natolia, with orders to ſecure the perſon of the Count, and ſend him to Chotym to be puniſhed for his inſolence. But the Bacha of Natolia kept his promiſe to the Count, by ſending an anſwer to the effect, that the Count, having ſent a cſauz or courier to Stamboul, was entitled by the laws to an aſylum till the return of the firman of the Grand Signior; and that as his perſon was ſafe in his hands, the Bacha of Chotym need not doubt his ſecurity, though he refuſed to put him into his without an expreſs order from the Grand Signior. After the departure of the Aga, the Bacha of Natolia adviſed the Count to raiſe his camp, and retire, leſt the Bacha of Chotym might avenge himſelf by treachery: and this generous Turk, not content with ſhewing the Count every mark of friendſhip during his ſhort ſtay, detached likewiſe with him a body of one thouſand horſe, to accompany him to the frontiers of Poland.

On the 14th, the Count raiſed his camp, and marched towards Cſerniowcze, the reſidence of the Hoſpodar, at which place he arrived on the 16th, and from thence

Digitized by Google

thence diſpatched ſeveral of his officers to convey his baggage from Chotym; but theſe, on their return, informed him, that the Bacha had ſeized the whole. Thus plundered by his allies, he marched towards Avriloveze, where he diſmiſſed the Turkiſh Spahis, and paſſed, at length, to Zadobricze, in Poland, preferring the chance of war, though in a hazardous poſition, to the baſe treatment he had received from his allies.

On the 18th, after having refreſhed his troops, which conſiſted of about three thouſand nine hundred men, he propoſed to march towards Zombar to join the Count Pulauzky, but many of the Commanders refuſed to follow him, and left him to the number fourteen hundred horſe; refuſing even to take charge of the ſick and wounded, the conveyance of whom greatly incommoded the Count. He forced his march along the river Pruth as far as Dobrilow, where he arrived on the 26th. From Dobrilow he marched towards Oriow, and thence to Dorchovicz, which is ſituated in a valley between the Carpathian mountains. On the 5th of May he ſent an officer from Dorchovicz to Zambor to procure intelligence of the Count Pulauzky; and on the 9th his meſſenger returned with the news that Count Pulauzky had retired into Hungary, and that the Ruſſians were there under the command of Colonel Brincken, who being apprized of the approach of the Count, had determined to ſeek him. The Count, being ſenſible from this advice of his extreme danger, which he could not avoid as he was ſhut in by his enemies, propoſed to his troops to enter Hungary, and there wait for a favorable opportunity to enter Poland, in junction with the Count de Pulauzky. But they refuſed

Digitized by Google

refuſed to follow him, becauſe they conſiſted, for the moſt part, of deſerters from the Imperial forces, who durſt not return into the Emperor's dominions. In this diſtreſſing ſituation he had no other alternative but to retire into the foreſt of Zyduczow, which he immediately put in execution. And Colonel Brincken would certainly have miſſed him, if he had not received advice of his retreat by a deſerter who left the Count at the paſſage of Kippa, in the foreſt of Zyduczow.

The Ruſſian Colonel, judging that the Count was marching towards Stry to join the confederate parties at Sanok, likewiſe haſtened his march, and arrived thither half a day before the Count, whoſe forces were weakened by fatigue and hunger. In this ſtate he was attacked, on the 19th of May about noon, by Colonel Brincken, at the head of four thouſand men. The Count was at firſt compelled to give way; but on the arrival of his cannon he, in his turn, forced the Colonel to retire, who at laſt quitted the field, and retreated towards Stry. The advantage of the victory ſerved only to augment the miſery, of the Count, who in this ſingle action had near three hundred wounded and two hundred and ſixty-eight ſlain, and who had no other proſpect before him than either to periſh by hunger with his troops in the foreſts, or to expoſe himſelf to be cut in pieces by the enemy. However, that he might have no cauſe to reproach himſelf, he took the advice of his officers and troops in his march towards Bialoboboky, who were unanimous to proceed to that place. The project required a ſpeedy execution, though it was impoſſible to carry it into effect without firſt refreſhing the men and horſes who had juſt been in action.

Digitized by Google

About eleven o'clock the Count refumed his march, and about ten in the morning of the 20th he arrived at the village of Szuka, where being obliged to halt for refreſhment, he was ſurprized by a party of Coſſacks, and had only time to quit the village and form his troops in order of battle on the plain, before he was attacked by the enemies cavalry, and ſoon after by their infantry, ſupported by ſeveral pieces of cannon, which cauſed the greateſt deſtruction among the forces of the Count. At length, in the heat of the combat, the Count, having before received two wounds with the ſabre, was wounded in the body by the ſhot of a cannon, loaded with old iron and other deſtructive rubbiſh. His fate decided that of his party, and the Ruſſians had at laſt the ſatisfaction of ſeeing him their priſoner.

Colonel Brinken, the commander of the party he had fought with, cauſed the Count to be conveyed to the Ruſſian General Prince Proſorouzky, who ſent him to General * * * * commander in chief of the army, then encamped at Tarnopol, a man equally cruel and baſe, who, contrary to every ſentiment of humanity, inſulting the misfortunes of the Count, not only forbad the ſurgeons to dreſs his wounds, but likewiſe, after reducing him to bread and water, loaded him with chains, and in that ſtate tranſported him to Kiow. It was fortunate, however, that the wounds of the Count reduced him to a ſituation which perſuaded his conductor that he was in danger of immediate death, and induced him, upon his arrival at Polone, to make his report to Colonel Sirkow, the commanding officer at that place, who ordered him to be carried to the hoſpital, where he was

Digitized by Google

was cured of his wounds by a French ſurgeon, named Blanchard; from whoſe report, when the Ruſſian commander was informed that the Count was able to leave the hoſpital, he cauſed him to be lodged in the town, and advanced him fifty roubles for his ſubſiſtance.

During his ſtay at Polone the Count became acquainted with a Lieutenant in the Ruſſian ſervice, named Milck, a native of Courland, who, equally generous with his Colonel, offered him a ſhare of the little he poſſeſſed. Thus it was, that in the loweſt ſtage of misfortune the Count had the conſolation to find friends, and he already had began to think his ſituation tolerable, when he at once experienced the reverſe, upon the arrival of Brigadier Bannier, who relieved Colonel Sirkow in his command, and who had a ſtrong prejudice againſt the Count. Immediately after the departure of the Colonel this commander cauſed the Count to be loaded with chains, and conducted to the dungeon with the reſt of the priſoners, to whom this inhuman tyrant allowed no other ſubſiſtance than bread and water. Upon his entrance he recognized ſeveral officers and ſoldiers who had ſerved under him, and their demonſtrations of eſteem and friendſhip was the only conſolation he received in his diſtreſſed ſituation.

Twenty-two days were thus conſumed in a ſubterraneous priſon, together with eighty of his companions, without light, and even without air, except what was admitted through an aperture which communicated with the caſemates. Theſe unhappy wretches were not permitted to go out, even on their natural occaſions, which produced ſuch an infection, that thirty-five of them died in eighteen or twenty days; and ſuch was the inhumanity

Digitized by Google

and barbarity of the commander, that he ſuffered the dead to remain and putrify among the living. The priſon was not opened till the 16th of July, which was the twenty-ſecond of their confinement, and from thence the Count was led to the place of arms, where ſeveral bands of priſoners, all in chains, were already convened. The order was ſoon given for their departure for Kiow, and they began their march under the guard of a company, commanded by an ancient Captain of Infantry. The cruelty exerciſed by the Ruſſian officer towards the unfortunate men under his ſuperintendance was ſuch as can only be imagined by a monſter like himſelf. His brutal diſpoſition cauſed him to deprive them of half their allowance of bread, the value of which he converted to his own uſe, and he laid the villages under contribution for exempting them from providing the priſoners with lodging, at the ſame time that he left them expoſed to the heat of the ſeaſon and the rain in the open air, without tents or any ſhelter whatever. Theſe unhappy men, emaciated with hunger and covered with wounds, being unable to march as faſt as the commander deſired, were continually beaten, and the Count himſelf was not excuſed, though unable to walk without crutches. This treatment, ſo infamous and ſhocking to humanity, cauſed the deſtruction of ſuch a number of the priſoners, that out of ſeven hundred and eighty-two which were put under his conduct at Polone, he brought no more than one hundred and forty-eight to Kiow, the reſt being either dead, or abandoned in the foreſts in a dying ſtate.

On

Digitized by Google

On the 4th of Auguſt, having at length reached Kiow, a town on the border of Ruſſia, fortified by ſimple works of earth, the priſoners were again ſhut up in the caſemates, where they experienced the ſame hardſhips as at Polone. The ſtrength of the Count's conſtitution, which had hitherto enabled him to reſiſt ſuch an accumulation of hardſhips and fatigue, gave way at length, and on the 12th he was attacked with a malignant fever that quickly produced a delirium, which continued till the 8th of September. On the 10th of the ſame month the governor of Kiow, Count Voieikou, cauſed the priſoners to paſs in review before himſelf and a commiſſary who was charged to take an account of the name and quality of each. The Count, whom they were obliged to carry, had not ſtrength to anſwer to his name when called in his turn; whereupon the governor made enquiry reſpecting his ſtate, and gave immediate orders that he ſhould be ſeparately lodged in a houſe, and that two roubles a day ſhould be paid him for ſubſiſtance. This treatment, by enabling the Count to procure proper diet, ſoon put him in a fair way of recovery. But at this criſis, unfortunately for him, an order arrived from Peterſburgh to ſend all the priſoners to Cazan, and the Count being forced to make this journey, though he was not compelled to walk, experienced a relapſe, which obliged the Ruſſian officer to leave him at Nizym, a town dependent on the government of Kiow. M. Levner, a German merchant of that place, intereſted himſelf in favor of the Count, and obtained permiſſion of the Voywode to receive him into his houſe. The care and attention of this humane and generous friend reſtored him to health, and enabled him to appear in decent clothes. He ſhould

have

Digitized by Google

have thought his misfortunes greatly alleviated if he had been permitted to have remained at Nizym; but on the arrival of the ſecond convoy of priſoners the Voywode placed him in charge of the commanding officer. His benefactor, from whom he was then forced to part, had the generoſity to preſent him with the ſum of two hundred roubles, which, for fear of being robbed by ſome of the Ruſſian ſoldiers, he depoſited in the hands of the commander, whoſe name was Wolkow, with a requeſt that he would keep it for him till his arrival at Cazan. On their arrival at Tula, the Count having occaſion to purchaſe ſome proviſions and other neceſſaries, requeſted a few roubles of the commandant in the preſence of ſome of the other priſoners; but the unprincipled wretch not only had the effrontery to deny his having received any money, but likewiſe treated the Count with the moſt injurious and abuſive language, and from that time uſed every means in his power to render the reſt of the journey uncomfortable to him. He even carried his malice ſo far, that on their arrival at Cazan he accuſed the Count before the governor, Count Kraſnin Samaren, of attempting to raiſe a revolt among the priſoners; and on this accuſation he was loaded with chains and committed to priſon, from which he was not delivered but at the preſſing inſtances of the Counts Marſhal Czarneczky, Potockzy, and the young Pulauzky.

After his deliverance from priſon he was lodged with a goldſmith, named Vendiſchov, a native of Sweden, who treated him with great kindneſs and humanity. The reputation of the Count, and his open diſpoſition, procured him a numerous acquaintance among the Ruſſian nobilty; and one day, being invited to dine with a man of

Digitized by Google

of quality, he learned, by ſeveral particulars of the converſation, that a deſign was projecting againſt the government. Some days afterwards, being invited again in the ſame company, one of the gueſts addreſſed him, and propoſed many queſtions reſpecting the diſpoſition of the priſoners towards Government; at the ſame time obſerving that the governor of Cazan, having no more than four hundred men in garriſon, was very uneaſy leſt the priſoners, whoſe number amounted to ſeven thouſand, ſhould revolt, and that to prevent ſo dangerous an event, he had ſent to Peterſburgh, requeſting orders to ſend them into Siberia. The Count immediately perceived the intention of the perſon who queſtioned him, but not thinking it prudent to enter into any converſation by which he might ſeem to enter into an engagement, he only replied, that the Governor, having a body of brave men under his command, who were armed and in poſſeſſion of the fortreſs, had nothing to fear from men worn out with diſeaſe, and for the moſt part actually diſabled; but that he doubtleſs acted prudently in taking every precaution ſuitable to the office he held. The continuation of this diſcourſe led the Ruſſian at laſt to declare to the Count, that the nobility of many of the governments were greatly diſcontented with the deſpotick authority of the Empreſs, and that, in order to deliver themſelves, they were diſpoſed to enter into a confederacy to ſhake off the yoke of ſlavery, and become as free as other nations; that the preſent moment was highly favourable to their deſigns, becauſe the troops were employed elſewhere, and the clergy, equally diſcontented, were ready to join the nobility, who beſides might

Digitized by Google

might eaſily gain over the Tartars of Cazan, a people naturally diſpoſed to declare in favor of the Turks. He ended his diſcourſe by obſerving that the Ruſſian nobility likewiſe depended much on the aſſiſtance of the priſoners who were ſo unworthily treated in their misfortunes.

The Count, without any embarraſſment, replied ſimply, that the priſoners being without arms, and always kept in ſight of their guards, could not dare to make any attempt againſt government; but that on recovering their liberty they were diſpoſed to ſhew their gratitude in the moſt zealous and effectual manner, and that conſequently, if they were delivered from their wretched ſituation, no matter by whom, their deliverers might be aſſured of their attachment. After this converſation the Count rejoined the company, and was received with ſuch demonſtrations of friendſhip as convinced him that the whole party conſiſted of malecontents. Immediately after the company broke up, the Count waited on his old friend the Marſhal Czarneczky, to whom he communicated his diſcovery. On the following day the Marſhal invited ſeveral of the ſuperior officers among the priſoners, and revealed the ſecret to them, in order that by their deliberations it might be decided what mode of proceeding they ſhould adopt, in caſe they ſhould receive any propoſals on the part of the diſcontented nobility. It was accordingly determined in ſecret committee, that the confederates ſhould not enter into any conſpiracy againſt the government in conjunction with the malecontents, to whom, nevertheleſs, a promiſe might be made, that in caſe they ſhould become maſters of the city, the priſoners, being ſet at liberty, would form a body

Digitized by Google

a body which ſhould act in concert with their deliverers until the final orders of the generality of the confederation might arrive.

The Count de Benyowſky was entruſted with the management of this affair, which he purſued with the greateſt zeal, prudence and ſagacity, in ſuch a manner as not to endanger any of the priſoners, even on the ſuppoſition that government ſhould diſcover the conſpiracy. The malecontents, on the other hand, entered into their purſuit with ſo much ſpirit, that they ſucceeded in bringing over to their party the nobility of the governments of Voronicz, Bielogorod, Kiow, and the greater part of Moſcow, the capital of Ruſſia. They only waited for the appearance of the Tartars of Cazan, who had engaged to preſent themſelves before the town of Cazan with nine or ten thouſand horſe.

Such was the ſtate of affairs on the 6th of November, (1769) when a ſudden change was produced by a quarrel between two Ruſſian lords, one of whom informed the governor, that the priſoners, in concert with the Tartars, meditated a deſign againſt his perſon and the garriſon. This apoſtate accuſed the Count, in order to ſave his friends and countrymen. On the 7th, at eleven at night, the Count, not ſuſpecting any ſuch event, heard a knocking at his door. He came down, entirely undreſſed, with a candle in his hand, to enquire the cauſe; and upon opening his door was ſurprized to ſee an officer, with twenty ſoldiers, who demanded if the priſoner were at home. On his replying in the affirmative, the officer ſnatched the candle out of his hand, and ordering his men to follow him, went haſtily up to the Count's apartment.

Digitized by Google

The Count immediately took advantage of the miſtake, quitted his houſe, and repaired to the quarters of his intimate friend, Major Wynbladth, who was likewiſe a priſoner. After relating the adventure to him, and engaging him to make his eſcape together with him, they quitted Cazan, and repaired to the neareſt village, where they took horſes of the countrymen, with the intention of haſtening to Sebukſar. On their arrival at this place they apprized ſeveral Ruſſian gentlemen of the diſcovery of their plot, who having the ſtrongeſt reaſons to fear the conſequences of the Count's being arreſted, gave him a podruſchna, or order for poſt horſes, with money and cloathing. From Sebukſar they paſſed to Kuſmoden Janſkoy, where they took poſt, and continued their route as far as Nizney Novogrod, where they gave out that they were officers returning from Kizlar to Peterſburg, charged with diſpatches from the governor. The Voivod had the politeneſs to invite them to dinner, and treated them elegantly, after which he furniſhed them with a letter for the Voivod of Volodomir, which was of the greateſt ſervice to them, as they certainly would have been arreſted if they had not been provided with it. They ſtill continued to urge their courſe, and paſſed through Moſcow, as well as Twer, Velki-novogrod, and other places, in the night.

At length they arrived at Peterſburg on the 19th of November, where the Count took lodgings in a hotel, cauſing his Major to paſs in the character of his valet-de chambre. Upon his firſt going out he met a German tradeſman, by profeſſion an apothecary, who being given to underſtand that the Count was deſirous of paſſing by

ſea

Digitized by Google

ſea into another country, directed him to the lodgings of a Dutch Captain.

The Count accordingly waited on the Captain, and begged him to take him and his domeſtic paſſengers, promiſing to pay him five hundred ducats on his arrival in Holland. The Captain agreed to receive him on board, and as he was ready to ſet ſail the following day, he appointed the Count to meet on the bridge of Neva about midnight, who accordingly attended there exactly at the time, with his companion. While they were waiting the arrival of the Captain with the utmoſt impatience, he at length appeared, and ſaluted the Count, begging that he would remain on the ſpot a moment, as he would quickly return, after he had finiſhed ſome preſſing buſineſs with his correſpondent. He did not fail to return ſoon after, and beckoned the Count, who haſtened to meet him. But at the very inſtant he was about to expreſs his gratitude to the Captain, twenty ſoldiers ſeized on him, and knocked him down; after which they conducted him, together with the Major, to the Count Cſecſerin, Lieutenant-General of the Police, who, in a very mild and polite manner, propoſed the following queſtions to the Count.

1. He demanded the birth, country, age, and religion of the Count?

2. Under what power he had ſerved before he became engaged in the confederation?

3. Who had perſuaded him to ſign the act of confederacy?

4. Whether he did not know that the court of France furniſhed money for the payment of the troops of the confederates?

Digitized by Google

5. Who had engaged him, being a priſoner, to excite the other priſoners to revolt, and what was his deſign in caſe he had ſucceeded in getting poſſeſſion of Cazan?

6. Whether the other confederate chiefs were concerned in the conſpiracy or not, and whether there were not certain Ruſſians engaged with him to carry this abominable plot into execution? their names, and the manner in which the engagement was brought about?

7. After deſerting from Cazan, why did the priſoner repair to Peterſburg, if he had not ſome premeditated deſign? Whence had he money for making a journey of that length by poſt; and why did he pretend that his companion was his ſervant?

8. On the ſuppoſition that his deſign was that of quitting Ruſſia, why did he prefer going to Holland?

The anſwers of the Count were,

1. That he was born Magnate of the kingdoms of Hugary and Poland, is aged twenty-eight years, and profeſſes the Chriſtian religion.

2. That he ſerved in the Imperial army in quality of officer in the war again the King of Pruſſia.

3. That in his quality of Staroſte, he thought it his duty to aſſiſt the republic in ſhaking off a foreign yoke.

4. That he was ignorant whether or no the court of France furniſhed the confederation with money.

5. That he had never excited the priſoners to revolt, his deſign being no other than that of recovering his own liberty; and that the tyranny and cruelty he had experienced in the priſons had forced him to this attempt; that he never had any intention of ſeizing the town of Cazan;

Digitized by Google

Cazan; and therefore he could have no further intentions consequent to the imaginary capture of that town.

6. That in quality of priſoner, it was neither neceſſary nor expedient that he ſhould become an informer, and conſequently that he declined anſwering the ſixth queſtion.

7. That after quitting Cazan he had repaired to Peterſburg, for the purpoſe of more eaſily quitting the empire by means of ſome foreign ſhips; that as he had no other deſign, he had cauſed Major Wynbladth to paſs as his domeſtic, that their difficulties and expences might by that means be diminiſhed.

8. That as to his intention of repairing to Holland, he had no other motive than his having met with a Dutch Captain, who promiſed him his paſſage, and that it was, beſides, of little conſequence to him what country he might go to, provided it were out of the dominions of Ruſſia.

After this examination the Count was conveyed to the fort St. Peter and St. Paul, and there confined in a ſubterraneous dungeon, ſeparate from Major Wynbladth. On the 23d in the morning, being the third day of his detention, his priſon was opened for the firſt time, and after three days faſt he received a morſel of bread and a pitcher of water. On the ſame day in the evening he was conducted by an officer and ſix men from his priſon to the miniſter, Count Panin, who was in his cabinet, and who propoſed an hundred queſtions, one after the other, without giving him time to anſwer, and at laſt ſhewing him ſeveral papers, from which he affirmed that he

Digitized by Google

he was acquainted with all the machinations of the Count, he loaded him with the harſheſt invectives, adviſing him to affirm all queſtions that might be aſked in the council, which if he failed to do, he would find himſelf in a wretched ſituation. After this mild and friendly advice Count Panin ordered him to be re-conducted to his priſon, giving directions that he ſhould be loaded with irons.

On the 23d he was again brought forth, and conducted before the privy council. On his entrance into the place of meeting he beheld twenty Ruſſians ſeated, each having a ſheet of paper before him, and a pen in his hand. Count Panin preſided at this council. The perſon who performed the function of procureur read all the queſtions which had been made by the Count Cſecſerin to the Count Benyowſky, and alſo his anſwers. Count Panin afterwards ordered the Count Benyowſky to ſwear that all theſe anſwers were conformable to truth, with which he immediately complied. After this preliminary, Count Panin required him to retract his oath, and confeſs the truth, otherwiſe he ſhould be put to the torture. This threat, ſufficiently horrid to ſhake the fortitude of the moſt innocent perſon, irritated the Count, who replied to the miniſter, that, as a judge, it ill became him to perform the office of executioner; that juſtice ought never to have recourſe to puniſhment, before conviction of the accuſed; and that the council having propoſed to the Count to purge himſelf by oath, it was neceſſary that his conviction ſhould be founded on proofs that his oath was falſe, or that otherwiſe every violent proceeding againſt him would be an act of barbarity, to which he never

Digitized by Google

never could believe that her Majeſty the Empreſs would give her ſanction. This anſwer of the Count, which was written down word for word by the ſecretary, cauſed ſeveral members of the council to vindicate him againſt the opinion of Count Panin. Theſe gentlemen obſerved, that the priſoner, having been convicted of nothing but an attempt to deſert, could not be condemned as a ſtate criminal. This obſervation produced a diſpute between the aſſeſſors, and the Count was conducted back to his priſon; from which he was again brought forth on the morning of the 25th, and conducted before the council, where he was confronted with a Ruſſian gentleman, whom the governor of Caſan had ſent to Peterſburg to be examined by the council. This wretch was the ſame who had accuſed the Count to the governor of Caſan. He maintained before the council, that the Count knew of the plot which the Ruſſians had formed againſt government, that he had encouraged them, and that he himſelf was the perſon who had promiſed the diſcontented party to aſſiſt them with all the priſoners. The preſident ordered the Count to anſwer this accuſation, which he did, by freely affirming that he had, in ſeveral companies of the nobility, heard propoſals treated of againſt the governor of Caſan. That theſe noblemen had actually made formal propoſitions to him, to become connected with the party of malecontents, and to engage all the priſoners in their intereſt: but that as his ſituation as a priſoner did not require him to abandon his principles and betray them, he had kept the ſecret; and as far as related to the propoſitions made to him by the malecontents, he had anſwered without heſitation, that

the

Digitized by Google

the priſoners would not engage in any attempt againſt the government of Cazan, and ſtill leſs againſt the intereſts of the Empreſs: That it did not become them to intermeddle in the pretenſions of the Ruſſian nobility, who alone were to decide their own quarrel, and that the priſoners would patiently ſuffer their fate, though the diſcontented nobility might depend upon their ſervices, in the ſingle caſe only that they ſhould firſt ſet them at liberty.

The Ruſſian himſelf acknowledged that this account was true; after which the Count was returned to priſon till the 29th, when he was brought before the council to receive his final judgment. At the commencement of this ſitting the preſident threatened the Count to put him to the torture; but being unable to urge any crime but that of deſertion againſt him, he propoſed to the Count to ſign a reſignation, by which he obliged himſelf never to ſerve againſt the Ruſſians; to quit the empire without delay; and never to return, on pain of death. Under theſe conditions Count Panin promiſed him his liberty. Count Benyowſky did not heſitate to ſign his reſignation, of which the following is the purport.

I, the underſigned, do acknowledge, that having been ſeized in my flight from Caſan, and her Imperial Majeſty of all the Ruſſias having pardoned me by her natural clemency, I have entered into the preſent renunciation, never to ſerve any power againſt the arms of her Imperial Majeſty; and that, upon becoming in poſſeſſion of my liberty, I promiſe for ever to quit her dominions, obliging myſelf, under pain of death, not to enter them again under

under any pretext whatever. Done at Peterſburgh, the 22d of November, 1769.

The Count, after having ſigned this engagement, inſtead of being ſet at liberty was reconducted to his priſon, and there confined till the 4th of December, when, about two hours after midnight, an officer with ſeven ſoldiers came to him, giving orders that they ſhould take off his chains and clothe him in a ſheep-ſkin garment; after which his fetters were again faſtened on, and he was conducted into the court of the priſon and thrown upon a ſledge, to which two horſes were harneſſed, which immediately ſet out with the greateſt ſwiftneſs. The darkneſs did not permit the Count to diſcern the objects around him, but the noiſe of many bells led him to think that he was followed by ſeveral ſledges, a circumſtance which excited a long train of reflections on the fatality and ſingular circumſtances of his deſtiny.

At the beginning of his journey he conceived ſome hopes that he was to be conducted into Poland; but at day-break the ſight of ſeveral villages through which he had paſſed after his departure from Cazan deſtroyed that hope, and convinced him that he was on his way to Siberia as an exile.

When they reſted at noon the Count received a morſel of dry bread, and on deſcending from his ſledge to mount into another, he perceived Major Wynbladth, who was the companion of his misfortunes. The exceſſive cold cauſed the Count to ſuffer much pain from his wounds, and he was almoſt frozen when the commander of the convoy made him diſmount to paſs

Digitized by Google

the night in a cottage. When he recovered the uſe of his faculties he perceived that he was in company with Major Wynbladth, who not being wounded was better able to ſupport the rigour of the ſeaſon. In this common ſtate of misfortune it was ſome conſolation that they could ſee each other and communicate their reflections.

The Ruſſian commander, Prince Maneow, Lieutenant of the troops of the Senate, being affected with their deplorable ſituation, informed them, in confidence, that his orders were to conduct them to Moſcow, from whence they were afterwards to be carried to Tobolzk, and thence to Kamchatka, the place of their exile. He had likewiſe the politeneſs to cauſe them to eat with him.

When they arrived near Moſcow their conductor quitted them, and returned with ſledges, and a detachment of ſixteen ſoldiers, headed by a Lieutenant, who relieved the Prince Maneow, conducted them forward on their journey. On the 13th of December they arrived at Volodomir, where they were joined by four ſledges with four exiles, likewiſe deſtined to paſs the remainder of their lives at Kamchatka, and from that ſtation they had the conſolation of their company. The Count, who was well acquainted with the Ruſſian language, made enquiries concerning theſe four priſoners. The one was Vaſſili Vaſſilics Panow, Lieutenant of the Guards; the ſecond Hippolite Stepanow, Captain of Infantry; the third Aſaph Baturin, Colonel of Artillery; and the fourth Ivan Juanies Solmanow, Secretary of the Senate of Moſcow. Their eſcort conſiſted of forty-ſix ſoldiers of Volodomir, under whom they were conducted to Nizney Novogrod,

Digitized by Google

Novogrod, where they arrived on the 18th, and from thence they were drawn to Kuzemodemjazkoy, a town where their guard was reinforced with one hundred and fifty horſemen, to paſs more ſecurely through the government of Cazan, at that time diſturbed by the incurſions of the Tartars, who, ſince the departure of the Count, had already committed ſeveral acts of hoſtility, and with whom a party of the priſoners deſerted from Cazan had taken refuge. Theſe circumſtances occaſioned the commander of their party not to ſtop in any of the villages, but to make the beſt of his way to the town of Malmitz, ſituated on the banks of the river Viattka, where the reinforcement left them. From Malmitz they were drawn to Saragut, and thence to Kunzir, from Kunzir to Tuninkz, and from thence to Tobolzk, the capital of Siberia, diſtant ſeven hundred aad eighty leagues from Peterſburg.

On their arrival they were lodged in the town, each ſeparately with his guard. The Governor, Count Denis Juanovicz Cſecſerin, brother of the Lieutenant-General of the Police of Peterſburg, a man as remarkable for his humanity, as for the politeneſs of his behaviour, not only cauſed the irons of the exiles to be taken off, but likewiſe afforded them every kind of aſſiſtance, even to the furniſhing them with linen; and as he was affected with the miſery of theſe unfortunate men, he granted them his permiſſion to paſs fourteen days in the town, to recover their health, which was much impaired by hunger and the inclemency of the ſeaſon. During the whole time that the priſoners remained at Tobolczk they

Digitized by Google

were furnished with provisions from his own kitchen, and on their departure he presented each of them with the sum of fifty roubles, with a quantity of brandy, and likewise five hundred pounds of tobacco, an article of great value at Kamchatka.

We shall here terminate the narrative which we have collected of the adventures of the Count, and shall relate the sequel as it is written with his own hand.

JOURNAL

Digitized by Google

JOURNAL

OF THE

TRAVELS of the COUNT BENYOWSKY into SIBERIA, in consequence of an order of the Senate of PETERSBURG, by which he was banished to KAMCHATKA.

CHAP. I.

INTRODUCTION. THE COUNT ARRIVES AT TOBOLZK, THE CAPITAL OF SIBERIA. HUMANITY OF THE GOVERNOR. DEPARTURE FROM THAT PLACE. VILLAGES ON THE ROAD. CITY OF TARA. RIVER AND TOWN OF TOMSKY. THE TARTARS INTEREST THEMSELVES IN FAVOUR OF THE EXILES. A PROPOSAL IS MADE TO THE COUNT TO ESCAPE TO CHINA, TO WHICH HIS WOUNDS PREVENT HIS ACCEDING. PRESENT TO THE EXILES FROM THE TARTARS. DISINTERESTED BEHAVIOUR OF THEIR CONDUCTOR.

I WAS born of an illuſtrious family in Hungary, and ſerved the ſtates of the republick of Poland with ſome diſtinction, under whoſe colours I had the misfortune to be made priſoner by the Ruſſians in open war, after receiving ſeventeen wounds. This unfortunate event ſubjected me to every calamity which tyranny can inflict. I was conveyed from one priſon to another, and at laſt condemned to the unhappy ſtate of ſlavery. In conſequence of the order of the Ruſſian Senate for my baniſhment, I was loaded

Digitized by Google

loaded with fetters, and conducted to Tobolzk, the capital of Siberia, conſiſting of about five hundred houſes, inhabited by Ruſſians and Tartars. It ſtands at the foot of a mountain, on the top of which is a caſtle, commanding the town, and ſerving as a place of reſidence for the governor.

The garriſon of this town uſually conſiſts of two regiments of infantry, three ſquadrons of cavalry, and two or three hundred Coſſacks. The governor of Tobolczk, Count Denis Juanoviecz Cſeçſerin, a man equally eſtimable for the humanity and generoſity of his diſpoſition, cauſed my fetters to be taken off the firſt day of my arrival, and, after providing me with a lodging, heaped many favours upon me and Mr. Wynbladth, the companion of my misfortunes. This gentleman was a Major under the confederation, who having ſhared in my former adventures, was likewiſe the partner of my baniſhment. The greateſt favor which I obtained from the governor was, doubtleſs, the uſe of pen and paper, to diſſipate my cares. Precious inſtrument, which can give the ſhadow of liberty where the ſubſtance exiſts not! Ineſtimable gift of art, whoſe value can be truly eſtimated by thoſe only who have felt thy loſs! With thee I ſhall ſtill poſſeſs the enjoyments of the mind; and by thy aſſiſtance my misfortunes and complaints may be tranſmitted to future times!

I arrived at Tobolczk on the 20th of January, 1770, and as I did not quit this town till the 4th of February, the benevolence and care of the governor enabled me to recover my health and ſtrength to ſupport the voyage with

Digitized by Google

with greater courage. The governor, after having loaded me with marks of his favour, which was likewiſe extended to my five companions, diſpatched us for our place of deſtination, under the eſcort of a Sottnik of Coſſacks, with twenty-four men under his command; at the ſame time he informed us that our conductor had orders to treat us with kindneſs. We departed from Tobolczk with ſixteen ſledges, ſo that we had a ſledge for every two excepting the commander, who had one for himſelf. The firſt pauſe we made was at Sobulak, a village inhabited entirely by Tartars. Our commander lodged us all with him in a houſe, and promiſed that this ſhould be the caſe throughout the journey. We eat with him, and the Coſſacks might have been taken for our ſervants, from the particular attention which our conductor ordered them to pay us. His example cauſed the whole troop to omit no means of rendering our journey as agreeable and as comfortable as could be expected in a ſtate of ſlavery.

On the 5th we departed from Jubalak to continue our journey, and at noon we reſted near a river named Supkra to refreſh our horſes. Our conductor informed us, while his troop was employed in procuring ſome proviſions from the neighbouring villages, that he was the ſon of a Swediſh colonel, who had had the misfortune to be baniſhed, and that he himſelf, being a native of Siberia, had been inrolled among the Coſſacks, over whom he at preſent was Sottnik, or commander of one hundred men; that ſince his promotion he had always endeavoured to obtain the charge of the exiles which were to be conducted into Siberia, as it gave him the greateſt ſatisfaction to

Digitized by Google

to have an opportunity of alleviating their misfortunes. The free and open manner with which this officer expreſſed himſelf, ſufficiently ſhowed that he ſpoke his real ſentiments, and it was a great conſolation to us to find ourſelves under the direction of a virtuous and compaſſionate man. From Supkra we continued our journey along the banks of the river Jrtieſh, and arrived at the ſmall town of Berenowzky, where we paſſed the night. At this place we found twenty exiles, who treated us with fiſh. Theſe unfortunate men aſſured us, that in the ſingle province of Tobolczky there were upwards of twenty-two thouſand exiles, reduced to ſeek their maintenance by the chace. From Berenowzky we departed on the 6th, and arrived very late in the night at Iſirga, a village compoſed of about fifteen houſes, inhabited by exiles; among whom I recognized an Hungarian, who informed me, that he had been Major of one of the regiments of Huſſars in the Ruſſian ſervice, commanded by General Horvath; and that he had the misfortune to be baniſhed for requeſting his diſmiſſion, in order to return into his own country. He aſſured me, that he was a gentleman of the family of Oroſz. As I ran no riſk in converſing with this unfortunate perſon in the Hungarian language, which was underſtood by no one preſent but him and myſelf, I aſked him many queſtions, and among others, how it happened that ſo great a number of exiles, reduced to the moſt extreme miſery, had not yet made ſome attempts to eſcape; to which he anſwered, that a conſiderable number of their companions had already attempted to eſcape towards Perſia, but having been met by the Nogais Tartars they were all ſlain, and that this

event

Digitized by Google

event had intimidated the others, and prevented them from following their example. Beſides which he informed me of ſo many obſtacles, that at laſt I was convinced of the great difficulty of eſcaping from exile at Tobolczk, and reflected with great ſatisfaction that my deſtination was to Kamchatka, on the ſea coaſt, though I am perſuaded that there is no country whatever in which liberty may not be gained by an aſſociation of reſolute men, inſpired with the love of independence.

On the 7th, after having paſſed the river Iſirga, we arrived at Juſka, a village inhabited by Tartars, who regaled us with mare's milk and horſe fleſh. The exceſſive cold and the wind, which threw up the ſnow in whirlwinds and drifts, forced our commander to remain at this village four days. We quitted it on the 11th early in the morning, and about noon we reſted on the banks of a river, over which we forded, and from whence we proceeded to Ahuſca, a village ſituated on the banks of a river of the ſame name, which falls into the river Irtiſck. Here we paſſed the night, and the next day proceeded to Tara, the capital of the province of the ſame name. The commander of our troop propoſed to paſs ſome days in this town, on account of the ſeverity of the weather, as well as that we might reſt ourſelves, and be better enabled to ſupport the fatigues of the reſt of our journey, which was to be made without ſledges. During our ſtay at Tara the commandant allowed us the liberty of walking in the town, and even in the environs: his friendly diſpoſition towards us extended ſo far, that he prevailed on the Voivode to invite us to dinner, and afterwards perſuaded ſeveral of the inhabitants to make us

Digitized by Google

preſents. Theſe conſiſted of habits for the ſeaſon, and a conſiderable quantity of brandy.

On the 22d we at length quitted Tara, and after having repaſſed the river Irtiſka we arrived at Luky, a village inhabited by Tartars; from whence we continued through immenſe woods and over lofty mountains, where we all ſuffered greatly from fatigue, and more eſpecially myſelf, who was covered with wounds. Our days journeys were very ſhort, our nights paſſed in the midſt of ſnow, and our horſes had no other food than moſs. On the 3d of April, being encamped on the river Om, we were ſurprized by a band of Tartars of the hord of Barabuts. On their firſt appearance we requeſted the commandant to ſupply us with arms to defend ourſelves, and immediately mounted our horſes. The Tartars approached, obſerved us for a moment, and paſſed by, full gallop, without moleſting us. After their departure we croſſed the river Om, and continued our march to the river Juakra, on the borders of which we pitched our tents. At day-break, juſt at the moment we mounted our horſes, we diſcovered a troop of armed men on foot, who called out to us, in the Ruſſian language, to wait for them, which our conductor cauſed us to do. On their arrival they ſaluted us, and afterwards addreſſing our chief, they propoſed many queſtions reſpecting our ſituation, which, when they learned, they condoled with us, and informed us that they were our partners in misfortune, having been exiled into Siberia, and that for ten years paſt they had ſubſiſted merely by the chace and fiſhing. Their number amounted to ſixty-three men, who apparently had ſome enterprize in contemplation.

Our

Digitized by Google

Our commander, who was apprehenſive of bad conſequences from their company, propoſed to part, but they compelled him to remain three days on the ſpot.

Theſe huntſmen, finding our proviſion of brandy excellent, did not ſuffer us to depart but with regret: at length, however, being delivered from theſe importunate people, we quitted the river Juakra, and marched towards Bogorodekoy, where we arrived on the 11th. From Bogorodekoy we croſſed the river Oby, and on the 17th we arrived at Tomſzky, a town regularly enough built, but peopled, for the moſt part, with Tartars. It is ſituated on the banks of the river Tomſzky, and, for its defence, is provided with a kind of fort, in which the Voivode of the province reſides, with four hundred ſoldiers and eight hundred Coſſacks. The governor's name was Villeneuf, of French origin, Lieutenant-Colonel in the ſervice of Ruſſia, and formerly an exile. He received us with humanity, and by the perſuaſion of our conductor, permitted us to remain in the town till the 10th of May, in order to avoid the inclemency of the ſeaſon, which was ſo much the more dangerous, as the weather is always extremely wet at the latter end of April and the beginning of May.

We paſſed our time not diſagreeably at Tomſzky, becauſe the Tartars, being informed by our conductor that we had had the misfortune to be made priſoners of war when fighting in conjunction with the Turkiſh army, made it a point of religion to aſſiſt us. Among others a dealer in ſables intereſted himſelf more particularly in my welfare. He propoſed to me to make my eſcape towards China, and expreſſed his readineſs to

Digitized by Google

run the risk of accompanying me. He informed me that he was born in the hord of Kantay, in the country of Kalkaz, on the borders of China, and was perfectly acquainted with the road thither. I should have accepted his proposal with joy, if the difficulty, or rather the impossibility, of travelling at least three hundred leagues on foot had not detained me. The deplorable situation to which my wounds had reduced me was sufficient to convince him of the impossibility of my accepting his proposition. He therefore loaded me with presents, which, whether they came from him alone, or from the whole body of Tartars of Tomszky, amounted to more than nine hundred roubles, a sum which we divided amongst us, and out of which we were desirous of making a present to our conductor. But this generous man refused to accept of the smallest trifle, and assured us, that on our arrival at Kamchatka we should find sufficient occasion for our money.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP II.

DEPARTURE FROM TOMSZKY. JUSKA KRASNOIARSZK. ILLIMSK. PRICE CURRENT OF EUROPEAN GOODS AND FURS AT THAT PLACE. JAKUTZK. PRIVILEGED COMPANY OF TRADERS IN FURS. THE COUNT PROJECTS HIS FUTURE ESCAPE IN CONCERT WITH M. HOFFMAN. A SOCIETY OF EXILES FORMED. THEY DEPART FOR JAKUTZK, LEAVING M. HOFFMAN BEHIND. THEIR GUARDS QUARREL. ALARMING CONSEQUENCE OF MR. HOFFMAN'S DEATH. ITS EFFECTS HAPPILY PREVENTED.

ON the 11th of May we at length quitted the town of Tomſzky, and paſſed through a deſert country covered with woods and mountains, always encamped in the ſnow, and after fourteen days moſt painful march we were neceſſitated to reduce our allowance to half a pound of biſcuit per day. Being thus exhauſted by hunger and fatigue, after loſing eight Coſſacks and twelve horſes on the road, we at length arrived on the 18th at Juſka Kraſnoiarſzk, a town ſituated on the banks of the great river Jeniſea: it conſiſts of about thirty houſes, inhabited by Ruſſian exiles; the fort, more properly called the miſerable intrenchment, in which the houſe of the Voivode is built, is a raiſed ſquare ſurrounded with paliſades, and the garriſon which defends it is compoſed only of twenty ſoldiers, who are likewiſe exiles.

The Voivode of this province, famous for its miſery, lodged us in his fortreſs, and did not condeſcend to ſee us till our conductor had informed him that we intended making him a preſent. This news, which our conductor likewiſe communicated to us, occaſioned the Governor to invite

invite us to ſupper; and he did not diſdain the acceptance of ſixty roubles as a preſent, and for a like ſum he ſold us a ſmall barrel of brandy, containing about eighteen bottles.

On the 19th in the morning the Voivode preſſed our conductor to depart, and we quitted this place about noon. The continuation of our journey was not more agreeable than that from Tomſzk. No object preſented itſelf to our eyes but an immenſe plain of ſnow, here and there interrupted by mountains. Every ſucceeding day became more fatiguing. We loſt almoſt all our horſes, and we paſſed the two chains of mountains which ſeparate the government of Illimſk from that of Jeniſeiſk, almoſt dying with hunger, having no other ſubſiſtence than the bark of the birch tree ſteeped in water. At length however we arrived on the 25th of July, and the 26th day of our march, on the banks of the river Angara, where we had the good fortune to meet a horde of Tungus Tartars, who gave us four elks, with a proviſion of dry fiſh, in exchange for tobacco and brandy.

On the 26th we arrived at Illimſk, the capital of the province of the ſame name, ſituated on the banks of the river Illima. This town poſſeſſes a conſiderable trade, ariſing from the quantity of furs depoſited here, which the exiles keep till the arrival of the Ruſſian merchants, who purchaſe them in exchange for European proviſions and export them to China. They uſually gain 200 per cent. on the merchandizes of Europe, and on their arrival at China they again redouble their profit on the furs. The following is nearly the rate at which the merchandize of Europe is ſold to the hunters and exiles of this place: one pound of gunpowder, three roubles; one pound of tobacco,

Digitized by Google

tobacco, one rouble and a half; forty pounds of flour, five roubles; ten pounds of butter, six roubles; a barrel of brandy of eighteen pints, fifty roubles; and in proportion to these values they barter or purchase one sable's skin for one rouble; one black fox's skin, three roubles; one bear's skin, half a rouble; fifty skins of the northern squirrel, (petit gris) one rouble; one hundred skins of the white rabit, one rouble; twenty-four skins of ermins, one rouble, &c. &c.

The Voivode of this province, after having supplied us with six elks and twenty pounds of flour for our provision, dispatched us to Ustkotskoy, a village situated on the banks of the Lena, where we embarked in canoes, made of the bark of the birch, in order to hasten our journey. We passed down the river Lena, which runs by Jakutszk, and after running through all the northern part of Siberia empties itself into the frozen sea. Our voyage by water was very commodious and agreeable on account of the beauty of the season, and we happily arrived at Jakutszk on the 20th of August, where we were all lodged in one house, having for our guard only four soldiers, commanded by a serjeant who relieved our conductor.

The town of Jakutszk, which is situated in the sixty-second degree of north latitude, is the capital of a province of the same name. It is composed of 130 houses and a fortress, the whole built of wood, and inhabited either by exiles or cossacks, a kind of military which the government has formed by enrolling all the male children of the Swedes and Germans formerly exiled into Siberia. This troop is usually employed by government to levy tribute on the Tartars who are subject to Russia. Their number,

Digitized by Google

number, in the year 1764, amounted to twelve thouſand armed men.

During our ſtay at this place I became acquainted with ſeveral Greek merchants to whom the Empreſs had granted the excluſive privilege of the fur trade in this province, in conſideration of the ſum of thirty thouſand roubles. They aſſured me they had already gained above eighty thouſand roubles beſides the purchaſe money; but that being obliged to ſhare that ſum with governors and miniſters, for the ſupport of their rights, this trade had not been extremely advantageous, eſpecially ſince the war with Turkey had, during the laſt three years, interrupted the freedom of commerce. I likewiſe became acquainted with ſeveral exiles, from whom I learned that there were thirty-five officers exiled in that town, and that their number in that ſingle province amounted to four hundred and twenty-five men. All theſe unfortunate perſons lamented the departure of Monſ. de Brin, a Frenchman, Colonel in the ſervice of Ruſſia, who had, during five years, been Voivode of the province; and who, unfortunately for them, had been relieved by a Ruſſian as remarkable for his cruelty and barbarity as his predeceſſor was for his generoſity and goodneſs.

On the third day after my arrival in this city I received a viſit from the Sieur Hoffman, a Surgeon, who was ſent from Peterſburgh to Kamchatka, to exerciſe his profeſſion as Surgeon Major of the Government, with a ſalary of one thouſand five hundred roubles. At our firſt meeting I perceived, from his converſation, that he poſſeſſed a penetrating mind and a worthy and amiable diſpoſition. The account I gave of my misfortunes, and the

Digitized by Google

the exceſs of barbarity under which I had long ſuffered, affected him greatly; and as he conſidered his miſſion to Kamchatka as an exile, he did not heſitate to propoſe, without any previous overture from me, his opinion that on our arrival at Kamchatka, we ſhould direct our attention to an eſcape by the way of ſea, either to Japan or China; and that he ſaw no other difficulty than the procuring ſailors to conduct the veſſel, which he propoſed to purchaſe under the pretence of employing it in fiſhing. This propoſition convinced me that he was determined to ſhare my fate. I therefore aſſured him that he needed not be uneaſy with regard to navigating the veſſel, becauſe I was ſufficiently capable of undertaking that taſk by virtue of the experience I had acquired during ſeveral voyages. I likewiſe informed him that it was with the greateſt ſatisfaction that I learned his reſolution, which I had myſelf conceived and formed from the firſt inſtant that I heard that Kamchatka was the place of my exile; and that provided he continued in the ſame opinion, and kept the moſt profound ſecrecy, I would anſwer for its ſucceſs.

From that day our diſcourſe was continually directed to the means of ſecuring our eſcape. I ran no hazard in making this propoſal to my companions, who, during the whole journey, had ſhewn me the moſt particular reſpect, which was increaſed by the junction of Mr. Hoffman, who united himſelf to us by oath.

On the 29th of Auguſt the company elected me their chief; it was compoſed of Mr. Hoffman, Major Winbladth, Captain Panow, Captain Hoppolite Stephano, Colonel Baturin, and Secretary Sopronow. The ardent

Digitized by Google

desire which we all had to carry our design into execution, induced us to use our endeavours with the Voivode to dispatch us to Ochoczk, a sea port in Siberia, from whence we were to embark for Kamchatka. He readily acceded to our wishes, and dispatched us on the 29th of the same month under the guard of two Szottnik, or captains, with twelve Cossacks under their command. Mr. Hoffman unfortunately could not depart with us, on account of the necessity of carrying his effects with him. On our departure from Jakutzk we were attended by most of the exiles, who regaled us with a good dinner on the banks of the river Lena. Among these unhappy men were two Russian Lords, of the family of Gurgiew, both young, who, after having served in the guards of the Empress, were exiled by her orders on the death of the late Emperor. The new manner of travelling on sledges drawn by elks was very agreeable to us. The swiftness and agility with which these animals run can hardly be conceived, and their manner of subsisting is still more surprising: an handful of moss mixed with urine, enables them to support the fatigue of three or four days.

The sixth day after our departure we arrived on the banks of the river Tola, where we were obliged to remain two days, because our conductor thought proper to employ that time in visiting the Tartar chiefs of the hord Jakutti, to extort presents from them, of which they brought a tolerable large quantity in skins of martins, foxes, and roszomak, an animal peculiar to this province. Its figure nearly resembles that of the European wolf, and its skin has the same appearance, excepting that

Digitized by Google

that its colour is a gloſſy black. The women in Siberia make bonnets of this ſkin.

On the third of September we paſſed the river Tola, and continued our journey without interruption thus far, excepting a difference which happened among our conductors, during the time our camp was pitched on the banks of this river, where they made a ſtop for the purpoſe of gambling, an occupation which they had ſtrenuouſly followed ever ſince our departure from Jakutzk. One of the Coſſacks having loſt all his proviſions in play againſt the chief, thought proper to indulge himſelf in ſome diſreſpectful expreſſions, upon which the Commander ordered the Coſſacks to tie him up and give him one hundred laſhes with the whip. Inſtead, however, of executing the orders of their commander, the Coſſacks took the part of the culprit, and after having ſtripped their officer naked, entertained him with more than three hundred ſtripes; an operation, which, though we bore no part in it, nevertheleſs afforded us ſome diverſion.

This adventure was quickly followed by an event which greatly alarmed us. We were informed by a Coſſack, ſent expreſs from Jakutzk, that Mr. Hoffman was dead, and that, after his deceaſe, the governor had found certain intereſting papers among his effects, which he had forwarded to the governor of Ochoczk, in a packet, to be put into the hands of our conductor, addreſſed to Mr. Pleniſner, Commandant of that town, recommending to him not to ſend us to Kamchatka. This relation convinced us that the Sieur Hoffman had either written ſome letters to his friends at Peterſburg,

Digitized by Google

in which he informed them of his project, or that he had made some notes relative to our affair. After many suppositions, we concluded that the Governor at least suspected our project, if he was not entirely convinced of it; and that he had sent dispatches to the Governor of Ochoczk, in consequence of which, it was probable we might be sent to prison a second time. In this situation, I proposed to my companions to seize the packet and change the contents by the assistance of Mr. Sophronow, who having been Secretary, might draw up a letter to our advantage, to be included among the other papers. My proposition was accepted by my companions, and we immediately determined to avail ourselves of every means of executing it. An opportunity soon after presented itself. On the 11th of September, as we were passing the river Aldan in boats, our elks at the same time swimming over, the boat in which our conductor was placed with his dispatches was overset by the malice of the Cossacks; who, after having well flogged him, were desirous of playing another trick, to disembarrass themselves entirely of his company. It was a happy circumstance for him that he was a good swimmer, and quickly reached the shore. The readiness with which I ran to his assistance, and the suspicions he had of his Cossacks, led him to attach himself to me, and that more especially, because he observed that my companions treated me with respect, and of course that I might be very useful in defending him, in case the Cossacks should hereafter make any attempts against his safety.

This rough passage over the river Aldan obliged our conductors to halt, in order to dry their cloaths, and I

seized

Digitized by Google

ſeized the occaſion to treat them with brandy, at the ſame time that I engaged them in a gaming party. My ſtratagem ſucceeded ſo well, that after having conſumed nine pints of brandy, they every one fell aſleep. During this period of inſenſibility we ſeized the diſpatches, which we found drawn up in ſuch terms as were calculated to render our captivity extremely wretched, and ſhewed that we had every reaſon to congratulate ourſelves on the lucky chance which offered itſelf. The letter of the commandant of Jakutzk to the commanding officer of Ochoczk was to the following effect:—

"The two Szottnik, Koloſow and Roſtarguew, conduct ſix priſoners of ſtate, ſent by order of the Senate as exiles to Kamchatka, whom you are deſired to confine in priſon without delay, and keep them ſafe until you ſhall receive from me more ample information reſpecting their conduct and deſigns, in order that you may then examine them with the utmoſt ſtrictneſs. My preſent knowledge reſpecting them is as follows: On their arrival at Jakutzk I took pity on them, and allowed them the liberty of walking about the town; but they abuſed my favour, by exciting ſeveral of the exiles to revolt, and one in particular among them, named Maurice Auguſtovicz, has been artful enough to gain over to his intereſts the ſurgeon Hoffman, who promiſed to join with him at Kamchatka, to procure a ſhip, that they might deliver all the exiles of Kamchatka. I was informed of this abominable project by one of the exiles, to whom the Sieur Hoffman had ſpoken in confidence before his deceaſe. I have found ſeveral papers among his effects after his

"death,

Digitized by Google

" death, which I do not understand, because written in " the German language, but which I send you, in hopes " that you may be able to discover their contents. " Supposing, however, that these wretches have no " other design than that of making their escape, which, " however, I do not conceive to be the case, it becomes " necessary to look strictly after them, and I advise you " not to send them to Kamchatka this year. I shall " transmit an account of this event in my first dispatches " to the Senate, and request their orders, which you " cannot receive in less than a year."

We examined the other papers of the Sieur Hoffman, but found nothing which tended to betray us. There was no other paper among the dispatches but the governor's letter, which could have injured us, for which reason we contented ourselves with changing it for another, to the following tenor.

" Sir,

" The two Szottnik, Kolosow and Rostarguew, con- " duct six prisoners of state, sent into exile to Kam- " chatka, by order of the Senate. After I became ac- " quainted with them, I found their behaviour such as " led me to interest myself in their favour, and con- " vinced me that they are all men of honour, especially " the two foreigners, who are merely prisoners of war. " My disposition to assist the unfortunate induces me to " write to you in their favour. Is it not practicable to " allow them a certain degree of liberty in your town, " to preserve them from the scurvy, a disorder which is " so dangerous in your port? You will run no risk in " allowing these unfortunate men a certain degree of

" liberty,

Digitized by Google

" liberty, for it is impoſſible that they ſhould make an " ill uſe of your confidence. The ſurgeon Hoffman, " who was about to repair to Kamchatka, is dead, and " I have no perſon to appoint in his place. One of theſe " priſoners is of the ſame profeſſion. I ſee no incon- " venience in recommending him to the governor of " Kamchatka, who being unprovided will, doubtleſs, be " glad to avail himſelf of his ſervices. The papers " which accompany this belong to the late Mr. Hoffman. " I ſend them that you may procure a tranſlation, and " afford ſome explanation relative to his property, as I " have reaſon to think he poſſeſſed ſome ſhare in the " company of hunters. With every wiſh for your proſ- " perity, I am, &c."

After having thus carried our project into execution, we diſmiſſed our fears, and our ſatisfaction was complete when we were aſſured, after the waking of our conductors, that they had not obſerved any alteration in the packets. We continued our journey peaceably enough to the river Inna, on the banks of which we arrived on the 20th of September. The prodigious quantity of fiſh which we obſerved in this river cauſed us to remain on the ſpot two days, when we departed with a conſiderable proviſion of fiſh, and continued our journey conſtantly due eaſt. We paſſed over very lofty mountains and dreadful precipices. The cold was ſo extreme near the ſummits of the mountains, that two of our conductors were frozen to death.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. III.

VILLAGE OF JUDOMA. SLEDGES DRAWN BY DOGS. ARRIVAL AT OCHOCZK. DESCRIPTION OF THAT TOWN AND HARBOR. STATE OF ITS COMMERCE. THE EXILES EMBARK FOR KAMCHATKA. THEIR DANGEROUS PASSAGE.

ON the 29th we arrived at a village compoſed of ſix houſes, inhabited by exiles, and ſituated on the banks of the river Judoma. At this place we were provided with ſledges drawn by dogs, for the reſt of our journey to Ochoczk. Though Judoma is compoſed only of ſix wretched houſes, the place is well known, becauſe it is the rendezvous of ſeveral Tunguſe nations, and ſome hords of Mongols, who repair thither to trade with the hunters [promiſleny]. It is by this contraband intercourſe that the moſt beautiful ſkins paſs into China without paying any duties; and it would be difficult for government to put a ſtop to it, becauſe all the Coſſacks, and their chiefs, are intereſted. In the month of November they meet at Judoma, to the number of four or five hundred armed men; beſides which it is a part of the policy of government to wink at this contravention, as it would be dangerous to excite the Siberians to revolt; the ſlighteſt diſturbance would arm the inhabitants, and, if this ſhould once happen, Siberia would be for ever loſt to Ruſſia.

After our departure from Judoma we paſſed over a dreadful chain of mountains, where we were exceſſively fatigued, becauſe we were entirely ignorant of the manner of driving the dogs. More than once I fell down deſcents

of

Digitized by Google

of above ſixty feet in depth, together with the dogs and ſledges; but it is one fortunate circumſtance, that in this country there is no falling but among ſnow, ſo that I ſuffered little more on theſe occaſions than a few bruiſes. When we had croſſed the mountains our journey was more agreeable, for we paſſed without danger along the banks of the river Urak, where, if my ſituation had been leſs wretched, I might have received ſome pleaſure from the proſpect around me. It conſiſted of immenſe mountains, ſtanding ſeparate on the vaſt extent of a ſea of ſnow; a view which affected the mind with a ſenſe of magnificence and terror united.

On the 16th of October we at laſt arrived at Ochoczk, where we were immediately conducted to the Chancery, and thence to our reſpective quarters, with four Coſſacks and an Attamen or Corporal, as guards for each. The commanding officer of this town, and of the whole province, was Mr. Pleniſner, a native of Courland, exiled in the time of the Empreſs Elizabeth. I cannot determine whether we were indebted to our ſtratagem of counterfeiting a letter from the Voivode of Jakutzk, or to his natural diſpoſition, for the goodneſs he ſhewed to us. On the firſt day of our arrival we were very commodiouſly lodged in the houſes of towns-people, who were in very good circumſtances, and it was at the ſame time intimated to us, that we might enjoy full liberty, and go out whenever we pleaſed, provided we took a guard with us.

The town of Ochoczk is ſituated in fifty-nine degrees ſeventeen minutes north latitude, and three hundred and forty-eight degrees ten minutes longitude, from the meridian of Kamchatka. It is very indifferently built of

Digitized by Google

wood, and ſtands on the banks of the river Ochota, the mouth of which is defended by what they call a fortreſs, though it is nothing more than a ſimple ſquare ſurrounded with palliſades, and provided with a four-pounder at each angle. The garriſon of this fortreſs is nevertheleſs compoſed of four hundred and eighty ſoldiers, all exiles from the European troops. The town contains three hundred and twenty-two houſes, inhabited by exiles, who, ſince the year 1741, the time of the expedition of Captain Beering, have applied themſelves to ſea affairs. Their number may amount to about nine hundred men. Ochoczk is the ſtorehouſe of the commerce of Kamchatka. The Governor is nominated chief of all the colleges, of which there are four, eſtabliſhed at this place, viz. the College of Admiralty, the College of War, the College of Commerce, and the College of Police and Adminiſtration. Theſe denominations at firſt appeared ſtriking and important to me, but the charm ſoon diſappeared, when I found that the members who compoſed them were brutes, whoſe only merit was placed in continual licentiouſneſs and debauchery. I have often ſeen many of theſe members five or ſix days together in a continued ſtate of intoxication. The rich furs which the Koraks, Lamuths and Tunguſes, who are in ſubjection to the Ruſſian government, and whoſe number amounts to forty-two thouſand ſouls, pay as a tribute to government, and of which the impoſition is arbitrarily varied, according to intereſt of theſe members, who in turn perform the function of Collector, ſupply them with the means of obtaining ſtrong liquors, whatever may be their prices, and they do not fail to drown their cares in brandy.

Two

Digitized by Google

Two years before my arrival a battery had been erected on the point of land which closes the entrance of the river, in order to defend the town from the incursions of the independent Koraks and Tsuktsy, two savage nations who inhabit the northern part of the province, and are irreconcileable enemies of the Russians. They maintain a correspondence with the subjected Koraks and the Tunguses, which circumstance finds government sufficient business to prevent their confederation. The disposition of these people caused an alarm in the government during my stay; for thirty Cossacks having deserted from Ochoczk gave them reason to fear that their design was to collect these nations together; but this apprehension was dissipated by the information which was received, that the deserters had directed their course towards the river Amur.

The port of Ochoczk, which at the deepest contains no more than nineteen feet of water, is formed by the river Ochota, which in its course has worn a bay. The entrance is N. $\frac{1}{4}$ W. I found in the port two vessels of two hundred and fifty tons each, and eleven others, the largest of which was three hundred and fifty tons burthen, and the smallest eighty. These vessels were designed either to make discoveries on the coast of California, or to carry provisions to the different ports of Kamchatka, or were freighted by individuals, who make expeditions in the islands Kurilles, Aleuthes, and Alaksa, to chase beavers, foxes, and bears. The harbour-master, Lieutenant Sind, informed me, that during the last year the Captains Kreniczin and Levascheff, who were sent by order of the Empress on a voyage of discovery, had armed two vessels, one the St. Peter and St. Paul, and the

Digitized by Google

other named the Elizabeth, with which they departed to examine the coaſt of California; but that they returned without doing any thing, under the pretence that their crews had mutinied, though the true reaſon for their want of ſucceſs conſiſted in their ignorance and want of experience.

Being deſirous of profiting by my ſtay in this place, I inquired of different perſons concerning the intereſts of Ruſſia, the population of Siberia, the hiſtory of the country, the cuſtoms, manners, and uſages of its inhabitants, their prejudices, and treaties between one nation and another; but as this ſubject is in ſome reſpect foreign to the purpoſe intended in the preſent narrative, I ſhall content myſelf with annexing my ideas in the form of a ſupplement to the preſent memoir, and ſhall only obſerve in this place, that Ochoczk and Kamchatka are become places of great importance to Ruſſia, from the yearly increaſe of revenue their commerce affords to that empire. The following is a ſhort ſtatement of what I learned from the Secretary of the Chancery: The importation of beaver ſkins, one year with another, amounts to ſixteen thouſand; of ſables twenty-three thouſand; of ermines one hundred and eighty-four thouſand; of black foxes two thouſand five hundred; of roſſomaks ſeven thouſand; of the common fox fourteen thouſand; of the northern ſquirrel thirty-ſix thouſand; of peſci and rabbits twenty-five thouſand; of ſea wolves ſix thouſand; and of bears four or five thouſand. Theſe articles are conveyed to Jeniſeiſk, in exchange for brandy, tobacco, flour, coarſe cloth, ſilk, &c. the intrinſic value of which does not exceed two hundred thouſand roubles, though the amount

Digitized by Google

amount of the ſale of the furs in China is near two millions of roubles. From this ſtatement it is evident that Ruſſia cannot but gain immenſe capitals by this commerce.

The time of my ſtay at Ochoczk was very agreeable; but as I had reaſon to fear that the governor of Jakutzk would diſcover our plot in his next diſpatches, I perſuaded my companions unanimouſly to requeſt orders for our departure, and to engage the governor to diſmiſs us for Kamchatka as ſoon as poſſible. This officer was likewiſe urged by its being the ſeaſon to diſpatch veſſels to Kamchatka, and accordingly embarked us on board the packet St. Peter and St. Paul, of two hundred and forty tons burthen, with eight pieces of cannon and forty-three men, commanded by the Sieurs Eſuryn and Koroſtilow; their lading was one hundred and forty-two ſacks of flour, each containing one hundred pounds; two hundred barrels of brandy, each containing twenty-five pints; and the reſt of the cargo belonged to ſeveral merchants, by whom it was freighted. On our arrival on board we were received very roughly by the ſecond in command, who, after having indulging himſelf in a ſet of invectives, cauſed us to be chained and confined before the maſt, with orders to employ us in the meaneſt labour. As we had already been accuſtomed to a ſmall portion of liberty, our ſituation afflicted us not a little; but it laſted only one day, for on the arrival of the captain we were delivered from our fetters, and had the ſatisfaction to ſee our enemy puniſhed with fifty ſtrokes of the knout for having acted without orders.

The journal of our navigation is not ſufficiently intereſting to be given in detail; I ſhall, therefore, ſpeak only of

of the leading circumſtances. On the 22d of November we dropped down the river to its mouth, where we moored in two fathoms and three quarters water, the wind being north. On the 23d we ſet ſail, the wind having changed to the north-weſt, with a very hollow ſea and conſiderable cold. On the 24th a violent tempeſt aroſe, which obliged us to lay-to, the wind being then ſouth-weſt; the gale increaſed in the night, and the Captain, with all his men, having got drunk on the occaſion, a favourable opportunity preſented itſelf to ſeize this veſſel, thus abandoned to the fury of the elements. Unfortunately for us, however, the ſwell of the ſea, and repeated ſqualls of wind, prevented our executing an attempt of this nature. On the 25th in the night the wind, after veering all round the compaſs, fixed at north-eaſt, and continued to blow with extraordinary violence. About three in the morning our main-maſt ſprung, and we carried away the mizen-topmaſt; ſo that nothing remained ſtanding but the mizen-maſt. The noiſe of theſe diſaſters rouſed the captain, who crawled out of his cabin to give us orders, but part of the wreck falling upon him, broke his arm, and rendered him incapable of attending his duty, in which, indeed, he would have had no opportunity of diſplaying much management, as the whole of our maſts, yards, and rigging, was nearly unſerviceable. In this ſituation of extreme neceſſity we redoubled our efforts to repel the danger, and the ſailors, drunk as they were, ſeemed well aware of the utility of our ſervices. Some of them joined us, and with hearty curſes on their officers for ignorant and drunken wretches, ſwore that they would obey our orders.

Digitized by Google

orders. The captain, who was likewiſe perſuaded that he was indebted to our efforts for his preſervation, and being afraid to put the command into the hands of his mate, whom he had hitherto kept in irons, declared loudly that he entruſted the conduct of the veſſel to my care till he ſhould be himſelf able to attend to it.

On the 26th about noon the wind ſlackened, and after much labour I ſet the fore-ſail by paſſing a ſtay from the bowſprit to the ſtump of the main-maſt. At five in the afternoon the wind changed to north-weſt, and ſlackened, ſo that we ſet the mizen and mizen-ſtay-ſail; but we could not keep her to her courſe long, for the wind changed again to eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, which obliged me to cloſe hawl, in which ſituation we made our courſe good between ſouth and ſouth one quarter weſt. On the 27th we ſaw land, and by a meridian obſervation the latitude was fifty-four degrees ſeventeen minutes. The ſailors affirmed that the land was the iſland of Sachalin. Our ſituation tempted me to ſeize this occaſion of eſcaping from ſlavery: I therefore propoſed to the crew to anchor on the coaſt of Korea, to repair our maſts and trim our cargo, which had ſhifted in ſuch a manner as to endanger our overſetting, in caſe we ſhould be viſited by a gale of wind like the former. Notwithſtanding this, however, all the rhetoric I could uſe was incapable of prevailing over the crew, who, being encouraged by the appearance of ſettled weather, obliged me to bear away from the coaſt of Korea. It was in vain that I made uſe of iron and garlick to falſify the compaſs. This ſtratagem, perhaps, might have ſucceeded if the wind had not changed; but it ſuddenly ſet in between the ſouth-weſt and

and ſouth ſouth-weſt, and thus forced me, in ſpite of of my inclination, to direct my courſe for Kamchatka. On the 1ſt of December we diſcovered land, which the ſailors perceived to be the mountain of Alakſa, and from their information reſpecting the land marks I brought the veſſel into the mouth of the Bolſa.

CHAP. IV.

ARRIVAL AT KAMCHATKA. CONFERENCE WITH SOME EXILES THERE. THEY WAIT UPON THE GOVERNOR, AND RECEIVE INSTRUCTIONS. VILLAGE OF THE EXILES. ORDINANCES OF THE CZAR PETER FOR THEIR REGULATION.

ON the 2d, at high water, we entered the port; and in this place my command terminated. On the 3d we were ſet on ſhore, and lodged in a yourth, which is a kind of houſe built of earth, the roof alone being viſible above ground. We were guarded by four ſoldiers, eight Coſſacks, and a ſerjeant. About noon we ſaw ſeveral veſſels, which dropped down the river; they were of the kind called Bajdara in the language of the country, formed of very thin planks, faſtened together with whalebone, or covered with ſea wolves ſkins, well ſewed together. One of theſe veſſels conveyed a Ruſſian officer with ten Coſſacks, deputed from the Governor of Kamchatka to receive the packets from court, and take the exiles under his guard. The officer

Digitized by Google

officer went first on board the vessel, and afterwards on shore, where he relieved our guard by his Cossacks. A certain something, which, according to his own expression, struck him at first sight of me, excited his curiosity to know who I was, which I satisfied laconically by answering, "a soldier, once a general, but now a slave." This answer surprized him, and, as he has since protested, conciliated his esteem. When he learned that my companions were likewise officers, he presented us with a dinner according to the custom of the country, which consisted of boiled fish, roasted fish, and fish powdered and made into bread. This cookery would have disgusted famine itself, but the thing which the most effectually overset my stomach was the drink; it was composed of fish putrified in water, the corruption of which gives the water a certain sourness. During the dinner, at which it might be of some service to the epicures of our great towns to have been present, the conversation turned on the manners and customs of the country, and the conclusion in every case was, that there is not a more miserable country on the face of the earth. After dinner the officer caused us to embark in his boats, two in each, and conducted us to the town called Bolsoretzkoy Ostrogg.

After rowing four verstes we met four vessels, with men on board very well cloathed. They stopped to question us concerning Europe, but when they were informed by our guards that we were exiles, we were surprized to behold their change of countenance, and the joy and satisfaction, which they could not conceal. We supposed their offers of service and demonstrations of

Digitized by Google

gladneſs were mockery, and as we thought ourſelves juſtly offended, we threatened vengeance if they continued to inſult our misfortunes, and moſt aſſuredly we ſhould have returned the ſuppoſed inſult, if the commander of our convoy had not informed us that our quarrel was founded in miſunderſtanding, and aſſured us that our ſuppoſed antagoniſts were companions in misfortune, being exiles as well as ourſelves. The ſimilarity of our fate and misfortunes produced an inſtantaneous friendſhip, and their firſt tranſports of joy, which were founded only on the hope of finding ſome conſolation in our ſociety, were ſucceeded by tears. They gave us an affecting account of their ſituation, and the cruelty with which they were treated; and their recital confirmed us in the opinion, that there is no ſlavery more dreadful than that of an exile at Kamchatka. I aſſured them that we ſet the higheſt value on their good wiſhes, and in the name of all my companions teſtified our ardent deſire to continue in friendſhip, and maintain an indiſſoluble connection with them. This firſt moment of converſation afforded me a favourable opportunity of eſtabliſhing a ſyſtem of union among the exiles; for they did not fail to inform me that many among themſelves were continually caballing about the governor, in hopes of gaining his favour at the expence of their companions. My obſervations on this ſubject appeared to act ſtrongly upon them, and they proteſted that they would embrace the earlieſt opportunity of aſſembling all our friends, to determine upon the eſtabliſhment of a certain order among them, and that they believed they could not do better than to acknowledge me

as

Digitized by Google

as their chief, &c. This declaration was very flattering to me, and I have ſince been perfectly convinced of the advantages of the ſteps they propoſed to take.

The officer fearing to be benighted, preſſed us to continue our journey. Our new companions changed their courſe to accompany us, and during this ſhort voyage the aſſurances and proteſtations of the moſt ſincere friendſhip were a hundred times repeated. They promiſed that we ſhould find conveniencies in their habitations ſufficient to permit us to reſt a few days after our fatigue; but that it would ſoon after be neceſſary to labour, in order to ſecure ourſelves from famine. Their accounts of the place entirely diſheartened my companions; but as to myſelf, who have always laid it down as a principle to do every thing in my power to prevent the greateſt evils, to overcome the preſent, and to give myſelf little concern for the future, I was only attentive to ſuch parts of their narration as tended to render me acquainted with our ſituation, and the poſſibility of delivering ourſelves from it. My concluſions were nearly as follow: 1. That liberty was granted to us merely for the purpoſe of earning a ſubſiſtence, of which we could not aſſure ourſelves without the moſt unremitted labour. 2. That is was of the greateſt conſequence that I ſhould gain the favour of the governor, in order to obtain permiſſion, on ſome future occaſion, to arm a veſſel to hunt the beaver, in order that we might make our eſcape on that firſt occaſion. 3. That it was neceſſary to eſtabliſh an union among all the exiles, and to cauſe them to adopt a certain deference for me. 4. That it was abſolutely neceſſary

Digitized by Google

to invent ſome method of keeping the ſecret, on the confidence of which I might be enabled to confer with many individuals reſpecting our departure.

My mind was ſo occupied in the adjuſtment of theſe concerns that I paid very little attention to the circumſtances of our voyage: we arrived, therefore, inſenſibly, at the cloſe of the day, to the town; where, on our landing, we were ſhut up in a houſe oppoſite the fortreſs. On the 4th, at ten in the morning, we were conducted by our guards before the governor, Mr. Nilow, who having been informed of the ſervices I had performed in the courſe of our navigation, received me very civilly, and thanked me for the care and pains I had taken in preſerving the ſhip. After which he ſeparately examined us reſpecting our quality, cauſes of our exile, &c. and laſtly ordered us to go before the ſecretary of the chancery, Mr. Sudeikyn, who, he informed us, would give us more ample inſtructions reſpecting our future ſituation, which, as far as depended upon himſelf, he would not fail to mitigate, provided we behaved ourſelves with obedience, and performed our duty in a peaceable manner, by remitting the hyaſſak or tribute to the chancery which ſhould be preſcribed. After this fine ſpeech he cauſed us to be led to the ſecretary, whom we found in the chancery office; the governor's ſervant put a paper into his hands, which he read, and then aſſured us that we might eſteem it a great happineſs that we were ſent to Kamchatka, as there was not a better diſpoſed gentleman in the whole world than the governor; and that, with regard to himſelf, he was a gentleman of diſtinction honoured with the peculiar confidence

of

Digitized by Google

of her Majeſty the Empreſs; and moreover, that he was diſpoſed to protect us in the moſt effectual manner. I returned him our thanks for his goodneſs in intereſting himſelf in favour of the unfortunate, and intreated him to inform us of our duty, and the mode of conduct to which it was expected we ſhould conform; in anſwer to this he acquainted us,

1. That we ſhould be ſet at liberty on the following day, and provided with ſubſiſtence for three days, after which we muſt depend upon ourſelves for our maintenance.

2. That each perſon would receive from the chancery, a muſquet and a lance, with one pound of powder, four pounds of lead, a hatchet, ſeveral knives, and other inſtruments and carpenters tools, with which we might build cabins, and that we were at liberty to chooſe our ſituations at the diſtance of one league from the town; but that we ſhould be bound to pay in furs, during the firſt year, each one hundred roubles, in return for theſe advantages.

3. That every one muſt work at the corvee one day in the week for the ſervice of government, and that we might not abſent ourſelves from our houſes for twenty-four hours without the permiſſion of the governor.

4. That each exile ſhould bring to the chancery ſix ſables ſkins, fifty rabbits ſkins, two foxes ſkins, and twenty-four ermines per annum.

After this information the ſecretary diſmiſſed our guards, and cauſed proviſions for three days to be immediately diſtributed, the whole conſiſting of nine pounds of dried fiſh. We then quitted the chancery and went directly to the magazine to receive our arms and utenſils,

Digitized by Google

utenſils, which were carefully delivered to us according to our choice, for the ſtore-keeper permitted us to chooſe, in conſequence of our having promiſed him ſome furs. It was with the greateſt pleaſure that I again beheld myſelf armed; and my companions received equal ſatisfaction from the ſame circumſtance. When we came out of the magazine we perceived twenty exiles, who had brought ſome ſledges drawn by dogs to aſſiſt in carrying our charge, and who offered us the uſe of their cabins until we ſhould have built our own. We accepted their invitation, and departed towards their home. The repeated marks of civility were exceedingly fatiguing to us who were in a ſtate of extreme hunger, but at length, about three in the afternoon, we arrived at their habitations, which formed a ſmall village compoſed of eight cabins, and the ſame number of balagans, or magazines. In the centre of the village we perceived a long ſquare building, which our new companions informed us was their public hall of meeting.

The number of theſe unfortunate men was twenty-three, and there were about thirty women living with them; among theſe I remarked that a perſon of the name of Cruſtiew poſſeſſed a conſiderable degree of authority, and I ſoon perceived that it was his houſe into which we were received. He cauſed us to ſit in his yourt round the fire, while the women preſented us with brandy and dried fiſh, and afterwards tea and butter; this breakfaſt was followed by a dinner, which conſiſted entirely of fiſh, and we were not without a deſert, compoſed of caviar and cedar nuts. Our dinner paſſed in great ſilence, becauſe we were buſied in filling our empty ſtomachs,

Digitized by Google

ſtomachs; but, when we had performed this taſk, the converſation began by enquiries on our part reſpecting our preſent ſituation: the accounts we received ſerved only to render us more intimately acquainted with the extent of our misfortunes. The following are the chief particulars concerning which we were informed:

1. That the ordinances of the Czar Peter enacted, that no exile could poſſeſs property; and that in conſequence of this edict the ſoldiers of the garriſon frequently entered the houſes of the exiles and carried away whatever they pleaſed, againſt which depredation the exiles had no remedy.

2. That in caſe an exile ſhould have been ſo raſh as to ſtrike a citizen or ſoldier, though upon provocation, he was condemned to die of hunger.

3. That on account of their being declared exiles from civil ſociety, every faithful ſubject was prohibited from receiving them into their houſes.

4. That their lives being granted them for no other purpoſe than to implore the mercy of God and the remiſſion of their ſins, they could be employed only in the meaneſt works to gain their daily ſubſiſtence.

The knowledge of theſe articles made me tremble with horror and indignation; this, exclaimed I to myſelf, is the legiſlation of a man revered by all Europe! But as I had no deſign of patiently enduring the unhappy ſtate of ſuch a ſlavery, the account only encreaſed my ardour and my efforts to deliver myſelf from it. As the firſt ſtep, I determined to ſpeak privately to Mr. Cruſtiew, who had an aſcendancy over the others; and who, on account of his having reſided eight years at

Kam-

Kamchatka, could eaſily afford me every neceſſary information.

After our converſation had turned for a conſiderable time upon the diſagreeable events of the life into which we were about to enter, and our hoſts having aſſured us that there were ſome among them who had groaned under this ſlavery for twenty-ſix years, Mr. Panow, one of my companions, who during the whole diſcourſe had appeared abſorbed in contemplation, ſuddenly exclaimed, "How is it poſſible, my friends, that brave men like you "can have endured this unhappy fate without having "made ſome attempt to deliver yourſelves from tyranny? "You are afraid of death then, and in this caſe I fear we "ſhall find no true aſſociates in you."—He would have continued his diſcourſe, but Mr. Cruſtiew made a ſign to me to interrupt him, which I did by directing the converſation to another ſubject; but at the ſame time I reſolved to aſk the reaſon from Mr. Cruſtiew, why he objected to our converſing in an open manner.

Our entertainer cauſed brandy and tea to be ſerved, and propoſed to his companions to receive us in their cabins and ſhare their proviſions with us, obſerving to them that we ſhould not be able to build new cabins during the winter. The congreſs applauded this propoſition, and, to conciliate our union, we ſwore a mutual friendſhip; after which every one received a companion. My lot, in which I confeſs there was a ſlight management, gave me to Mr. Cruſtiew.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. V.

THE COUNT FORMS AN INTIMACY WITH MR. CRSUTIEW, AN EXILE. SOCIETY ESTABLISHED FOR PROJECTING THE MEANS OF ESCAPE. THE COUNT'S SPEECH AND PLAN OF A CONSTITUTION. THE EXILES WAIT UPON THE GOVERNOR AND THE CHANCELLOR. THE GOVERNOR APPOINTS THE COUNT TO TEACH THE LANGUAGES TO HIS CHILDREN. AN UNFORESEEN EVENT TENDS GREATLY TO MITIGATE THE DISTRESSES AND ADVANCE THE PROJECTS OF THE EXILES.

OUR places of habitation being thus ſettled, every one retired, and I ſeized the firſt opportunity of being alone with Mr. Cruſtiew, to enquire the reaſon why he had interrupted the diſcourſe of Mr. Panow, at the ſame time that I aſſured him I could not perſuade myſelf that any one amongſt them could be ſo baſe as to betray his companions: it is very true, replied he, my dear friend, that you can have no reaſon to think ſo meanly of any of them, though it is very certain, that there are ſome among us who would rather paſs the reſt of their lives in this curſed country than expoſe themſelves to the mercy of the waves. But the moſt humiliating circumſtance is, that there are among us ſome wretches, who, in hopes of obtaining their liberty by betraying our ſecrets, would certainly loſe no time in communicating our projects to the governor; for, continued he, there exiſts a law, which is the only one in favour of exiles, to the effect, that every exile who ſhall have revealed to the governor any plot concerning his authority, or relating the public peace, which may be

Digitized by Google

carried on by other exiles, ſhall be immediately ſet at liberty. He ended his diſcourſe by aſſuring me that his life and his utmoſt exertions were entirely at my ſervice; that he would avail himſelf of the firſt occaſion to declare me chief of the ſociety, and that, in a word, my principles and views ſhould in future be the rule by which he would direct his own. We, therefore, referred the more ample conſideration of our intereſts till another occaſion, when we propoſed to determine the manner of executing an attempt, either to ſet ourſelves at liberty, or ſacrifice our lives in the purſuit.

Such was the iſſue of the firſt day of my arrival, after which we retired to reſt. I made many reflections on all that had happened during the courſe of the day, and determined on the means of preſerving the ſecret of whatever we might in future deliberate or conclude upon amongſt ourſelves.

I perceive that I cannot in future relate the continuation of my memoirs in the form of an hiſtory, and ſhall therefore proceed in the form of a journal.

On the 5th, I aroſe and examined the whole cabin, which appeared to be very well furniſhed; but what ſurprized me the moſt agreeably was, an alcove of the ſame kind as that in which I ſlept, which was filled with French, Ruſſian, Engliſh, German, and Latin books, placed in order. I found Anſon's Voyage laying on a table, and began to read it with pleaſure, but had ſcarcely finiſhed the firſt page before Mr. Cruſtiew entered and embraced me. Our firſt converſation turned on this famous voyager, and my friend informed me that for ſix years paſt he had deliberated in his own mind on the means

Digitized by Google

means of quitting Kamchatka, and making his way to the Marian iſlands. The account of the iſland of Tinian, as deſcribed in that publication, had ſtruck the imagination of Mr Cruſtiew ſo forcibly, that the iſland, in his opinion, was nothing leſs than paradiſe. From this turn of mind, I determined to acquaint him with the reſolution of myſelf and my companions, at the ſame time propoſing that he ſhould join us. He joyfully accepted my propoſition, and kneeling before me, immediately took an oath of fidelity and obedience. He aſſured me likewiſe, that by his incorporation into our ſociety, he ſhould reinforce it with twenty other companions; but he requeſted my permiſſion to ſpeak to them concerning it. I was delighted with an acquiſition of ſuch conſiderable value, but confined myſelf to take his oath of conſtant friendſhip, at the ſame time that I begged him not to act precipitately, but to wait for the approbation of our ſociety; the rules of which I was endeavouring to eſtabliſh for the purpoſe of ſecuring our mutual preſervation and regulating our conduct.

After theſe preliminaries I informed my companions, and we eſtabliſhed a committee of the following members:

Myſelf, chief,
Panow,
Baturin,
Stephanow,
Solmanow,
Wynbladth,
Cruſtiew,
Waſili, my old ſervant.

Digitized by Google

At the opening of our aſſembly I addreſſed the meeting as follows:

" A variety of events has forced us to this place, where " we find ourſelves oppreſſed under one common misfor- " tune. We are all aware of its cruelty and barbarity, " and its duration threatens us with the moſt dreadful " conſequences. The exceſs of our misfortune ought, " therefore, to lead us to ſeek our own ſafety, by throw- " ing off this abominable yoke of ſlavery, to which in- " juſtice and deſpotiſm hath condemned us. The " equality of our unfortunate ſituation renders our con- " ditions equal: there can be no queſtion therefore of " preference among us in conſequence of the titles " we may have formerly poſſeſſed, whether by birth " or acquiſition. At this moment we are equal " by the very nature of our ſituation; and from this " point it is that I will proceed to propoſe to you a " conſtitution relative to ourſelves, in order that we " may, with perfect ſafety, eſtabliſh a plan of operation, " the execution of which will lead us to liberty."

" From our own experience in the world we cannot " but be convinced, that no ſociety can exiſt without " the choice of a perſon, to whom the ſupremacy ſhall " be intruſted. The choice of ſuch a perſon ought " therefore to engage our firſt attention. He ſhall be " our creature, but at the ſame time that we give him " our confidence, it will be neceſſary that we pay him " the moſt perfect ſubmiſſion. In order to proceed " without delay to this nomination, I propoſe the moſt " ſimple method; namely, that every one ſhall write the " name of the perſon on whom his choice ſhall be fixed,

" and

Digitized by Google

" and the plurality of names ſhall determine. When a " chief ſhall be thus elected, let him ſwear to keep the " following four articles :

" 1. That he ſhall employ his utmoſt abilities and " every poſſible means to form a plan, which he ſhall " carry into effect at the peril and riſk of his life. This " plan ſhall tend to ſet us at liberty as early as poſ- " ſible."

" 2. That he ſhall not give any diſtinguiſhed preference " to any perſon amongſt us; but ſhall inform the " committee of every thing which he may think of ad- " vantage relative to his operations."

" 3. That in caſe the chief ſhall be deſirous of re- " nouncing his plan, or ſhall remonſtrate to that pur- " poſe to the committee, or even ſhall converſe to that " effect with any individual ſeparately, he ſhall be " puniſhed, *ipſo facto*, with death, and the committee " ſhall have the right to execute this ſentence in what- " ever manner may to them appear the moſt expedient."

" 4. That after the chief ſhall have made his oath he " ſhall receive a ſeparate oath from each of the indivi- " duals who form the ſociety, and that the oath ſhall in " ſubſtance be as follows :

" 1. That each member of the ſociety ſhall employ " his utmoſt exertions and abilities, at the peril of his " life, to co-operate in the execution of the plan which " ſhall be adopted for the obtaining of liberty."

" 2. That having acknowledged the authority of his " chief, he ſhall obey him with the moſt perfect ſub- " miſſion; and that as he finds himſelf, by injuſtice and " deſpotiſm, diſcarded from all civil and political ſociety, he

" he will, without any reſtriction, obey the orders of " the chief elect, acknowledging him as his ſovereign " and maſter."

" 3. That having rendered himſelf, by virtue of his oath, " worthy of the confidence of the ſociety without any " reſtriction, each individual ſhall engage to keep the " moſt profound ſecrecy concerning every thing which " ſhall have been treated or determined from that day " forwards; and in caſe he ſhall have betrayed this " engagement, he ſhall acknowledge himſelf, *ipſo facto*, " culpable, and worthy to be puniſhed with death, to " which he ſhall ſubmit from the moment of his apoſ- " tacy from the preſent oath; ſubmitting himſelf like- " wiſe by the preſent act to be the inſtrument of exe- " cution of every ſentence of death which ſhall be de- " creed in the committee againſt any other of the ſociety, " whomſoever he may be."

" After taking this oath, let the chief, with all the " members of the ſociety, eſtabliſh a fourth article, as " follows:

" 4. That if, in caſe of treachery, either the chief, " or any other perſon of the ſociety, ſhall fall into " the hands of government, he ſhall keep the moſt " profound ſecrecy reſpecting their union; and the " aſſociation ſhall uſe the means, at the riſk and pe- " ril of their lives, to take that perſon out of the " hands of government, either by reſcuing him by open " force, or by providing him with poiſon or arms to " deliver himſelf from oppreſſion."

This ſpeech was received with veneration, and I was convinced, from the countenance of my auditors, that they

Digitized by Google

they approved my propoſitions. In conſequence thereof every one took paper, and wrote a name according to his choice. Upon opening the papers, ſeven bore my name, and my paper that of Cruſtiew, which determined them to nominate Mr. Cruſtiew my ſecond. We then proceeded to take our oaths, and I received thoſe of the other members of the ſociety.

Such was the concluſion of my ſecond day at Kamchatka. After having fixed the meeting of the committee for the 10th of the month, Mr. Cruſtiew declared that he had ſeveral friends to propoſe as members of our ſociety, to which I acceded, and fixed the time of their reception on the 10th.

On the 6th we met, in order to proceed in a body to pay our compliments to the governor. He received us, and after having been informed that I ſpoke ſeveral languages, he appointed me maſter of languages to his ſon and his three daughters, in conſideration of which he diſpenſed me from all public work, and ordered the ſame ſubſiſtence to be allowed me as to the ſoldiers of the garriſon. After having acquainted me with this determination, he called his children, and exhorted them to be diligent, and learn whatever I might teach them.

After this ceremony we waited upon the chancellor, who admitted us in the ſame manner. We found him playing at cheſs with Koloſſow, hettman of the Coſſacks. He ordered us to wait till the game was finiſhed. I approached the table and examined the ſtate of the game. My particular attention ſurprized the chancellor, who enquired if I underſtood cheſs; I anſwered in the affirmative. Soon after, finding his own game deſperate, and,

Digitized by Google

and, in his opinion, loſt, he told me he would give me fifty roubles if I could win it. The hettman proteſted that he would not play with an exile, as it was contrary to the laws, but the chancellor maintained that he might legally do it, as the laws prohibited only the communication with exiles; and at laſt the hettman, rather piqued at the chancellor's intimation that he was fearful of loſing the party, conſented that I ſhould play the game out. He had the advantage of a caſtle, a knight, and two pawns. At the third move I uncovered my caſtle, which ſtood behind a biſhop and oppoſite to the queen, at the ſame time that I checked the king with my biſhop. The loſs of the queen ſecured the game in my favour, ſo that I ſoon gave the check-mate.

At the end of the game I found that it had been played for five hundred roubles on a ſide, and I immediately received the fifty roubles. The hettman being vexed, was deſirous of having his revenge, and the chancellor conſented to find money for my ſtake. He diſmiſſed my companions, after preſenting them with two bottles of brandy, and detained me to play at cheſs. I won three ſucceſſive games, which put two thouſand roubles into the chancellor's pocket, of which, my part amounted to one hundred and fifty roubles. At dinner time I retired, and ſoon after, with great ſurprize, perceived the hettman cloſe behind me. He called after me very civilly, and informed me that he had a project in his head, in which, if I would join, I ſhould find it much to my advantage; but for my part I was apprehenſive that his loſs might make him my enemy, and therefore propoſed to reſtore the hundred and fifty roubles which had been pre-

Digitized by Google

preſented to me; at the ſame time making the beſt excuſes I could for what had happened. But my fears were ſoon diſſipated when he diſcovered his project; which was, that I ſhould play againſt ſome rich merchants, who had won large ſums of money of him, and that if I had the good fortune to win he was certain of gaining an immenſe ſum, of which the fifth part ſhould be paid me on the ſpot.

The ſituation in which I found myſelf, and the want of money to carry my enterprize into execution, made me determine to accept his propoſition, and to aſſure him of the fortune of his rivals in this play. As ſoon as I had given my conſent, he forgot my ſituation as an exile, and preſſed me to go to dinner with him. I was received by his family with great reſpect; for he preſented me in the character of an illuſtrious, though unfortunate gentleman, to whom his family owed great obligations. At dinner we were ſurprized by ſeveral of the chief people of the town, but my entertainer, who, by his charge, was the third perſon in the government, knew ſo well how to manage the converſation, that he perfectly eſtabliſhed that degree of conſideration, which he was deſirous I ſhould poſſeſs. At my departure he cauſed me to be ſupplied with proviſions, namely, butter, ſalt meat, rice, and brandy ſufficient, at leaſt, to entertain my company five days.

When I arrived at home I aſſembled my companions, and related to them every thing that had happened. At the ſight of my proviſions and the hundred and fifty roubles, they thought they beheld providence in perſon; their hopes were ſtill more highly elevated, when I informed

Digitized by Google

them of the plot in which I had engaged with the hettman, againſt the merchants. Our evening thus paſſed with great chearfulneſs, and many were the caſtles we built in the air. As ſoon as the company was gone, I employed myſelf in writing out copies in the Latin, French, and German languages, for my ſcholars; and afterwards, enlivened by hope, I retired to reſt, and enjoyed the moſt refreſhing ſleep.

CHAP. VI.

THE COUNT ENTERS UPON HIS OFFICE AS LANGUAGE-MASTER. THE GOVERNOR PRESENTS HIM WITH A FEMALE SLAVE, AND A SLEDGE DRAWN BY DOGS. A PROPOSAL MADE TO HIM BY SOME OF THE CHIEF GENTLEMEN OF THE TOWN TO ESTABLISH A SCHOOL. A PARTY AT CHESS. AN EVENING'S ENTERTAINMENT. PARTIALITY OF MISS APHANASIA NILOW, THE GOVERNOR'S YOUNGEST DAUGHTER, FOR THE COUNT. MADAME NILOW APPROVES HER ATTACHMENT.

ON the 7th, my late riſing obliged me to haſten to the governor's, where I found the younger part of the family aſſembled in the hall. I gave them the copies, and cauſed them to ſpell the words. The youngeſt of the three daughters, whoſe name was Aphanaſia, who was ſixteen years of age, propoſed many queſtions concerning my thoughts in my preſent ſituation. Her queſtions convinced me that her father had given them ſome information concerning my birth and misfortunes.

Digitized by Google

misfortunes. I therefore gave them an account of my adventures, at which my ſcholars appeared to be highly affected, but the youngeſt wept very much. She was a beautiful girl, and her ſenſibility created much emotion in my mind;—but, alas, I was an exile.

The governor afterwards came in and attended to my inſtructions. He appeared exceedingly well ſatisfied with my method, and informed me that he intended to preſent me with a Kamchatka female ſlave, a ſledge, and two dogs. I thanked him for this favour, but obſerved, that as an exile I could not poſſeſs any property, and that I was reſolved to endure my fate with patience. He perſiſted, however, in his reſolution, and obſerved that the ſenate would not be diſpleaſed at his kindneſs for me, after having received an account of the eſſential ſervice I had done the ſtate, by preſerving the veſſel, with the lives and fortunes of the ſubjects of the Empreſs. The goodneſs of his diſpoſition affected me greatly, and I thanked him with the utmoſt ſincerity; after which I took my leave. But he detained me a ſhort time, and ordered a ſledge to be harneſſed, which he put into my hands, with a conductor, whom he ordered to obey me.

When I arrived with this new equipage, my companions cried out that miracles were revived; and more eſpecially, when I informed them of all that the governor had ſaid, they verily believed themſelves delivered from the yoke of ſlavery under my protection. But Mr. Panow ſurprized the aſſembly by obſerving, that they had no ſuch reaſon to rejoice, for the governor's benevolence would ſlacken my zeal, and that afterwards, at the firſt change of a governor, we ſhould remain ex-

Digitized by Google

poſed to the mercy of the barbarians. He was going on with his diſcourſe, when I judged it proper to interrupt him by renewing my oath, with every aſſurance of my being devoted to the good of the ſociety.

After dinner I received a viſit from the hettman, who was accompanied by Meſſrs. Caſarinow and Roſcurakow, two principal merchants. After the firſt civilities they propoſed to me to eſtabliſh a ſchool for the languages, arithmetic, and geography; and, to enable me to undertake this, they made an offer of putting together an entire houſe, newly built, at any place where I might chooſe to eſtabliſh a public ſchool. I accepted their offers, on condition that they ſhould perſuade the governor to ſend his children to this ſchool: becauſe, as I was obliged to repair every day to the governor's, I ſhould not otherwiſe have it in my power to ſuperintend the public ſchool. We concluded our arrangement with the condition, that I ſhould receive five roubles per month for each child; that they ſhould pay me beſides half a rouble for wood and lights; and laſtly that they ſhould contribute together to furniſh my houſe with moveables and a ſtock of proviſions, together with a ſervant to dreſs my victuals.

The more I reflected on the favourable change of my ſituation, the more my hope increaſed that I ſhould be able in ſafety to execute the plan I had formed for my deliverance. For the diſtreſſing image of a wife whom I loved, and who in my abſence, in all probability, had given birth to an infant, preſented itſelf conſtantly to my mind, and permitted me to receive no perfect ſatisfaction. Abſorbed in theſe reflections, I paid little attention to the converſation between my companions and our gueſts; but the

hettman

Digitized by Google

hettman roused me out of my reverie, by requesting me to come and dine with him and play a few games at chess. He informed me, that he had proposed this party to Mr. Casarinow, then present, who would take no denial, and that each game should be for three hundred roubles, of which he would stake on my side one hundred and twenty, and the chancellor the same sum, and that, if I won, the sixty roubles of each game would belong to me; but that, in case I lost, they would bear my loss. Mr. Casarinow consented to the engagement, on condition that fifty games should to be played; and that he might be permitted to make an association, any one of whom should be at liberty to play against me, as in like manner it should be permitted either for the chancellor or the hettman to play in my stead. The hettman replied, that he could not stipulate but for himself: it was therefore determined to wait on the chancellor, to whom we accordingly went. This gentleman performed his part very dexterously, by making some difficulties at first, though at last he consented, and the articles were written down and signed, with the additional stipulation, that ready money should be paid down at the end of each game.

The agreement was ratified by an evening's entertainment, at which fifty persons were present; and the governor himself, with his family, came in. On his arrival the music was sent for, and dances began. As for myself, I was a friendly spectator of the whole; and, being now upon terms of great familiarity with every one, I requested the chancellor to send a few bottles to my companions. He invited them all, appointing a chamber for their use, where they could see every thing that passed without

Digitized by Google

without communicating with the assembly contrary to the laws. During the whole entertainment, my scholar Aphanasia never quitted me but to join in the dance, which she did very gracefully; her mother came up to us once, and whispered to me, I think your scholar will become your friend; have an eye over her: I am a kind mother. — She spoke to me in very good German; and as it was the first time I had conversed with her I felt some embarrassment, but soon recollecting myself, I assured her of my respect and inviolable attachment. The governor, observing me in conversation with the mother and the daughter, likewise came up to us, and asked the subject of our conversation; but Madame de Nilow prevented my answering, by saying, that she was enquiring whether I could not teach her daughter music. This mezzotermino delivered me from all apprehension, and a short time afterwards the governor and his lady retired. Miss Nilow returned to me, and informed me that her father had consented to the establishment of a public school, and that consequently she, with her sisters and brothers, should often have the pleasure of visiting her master. It is impossible to describe the amiable and graceful manner of this charming girl. Two hours after midnight I attended my scholar, with her sisters, to the governor's house, and afterwards returned home.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

A BUILDING ERECTED FOR A SCHOOL. CONVERSATION WITH MADAME NILOW. PROFITS ARISING FROM THE COUNT'S SKILL AT CHESS. MISS APHANASIA CONVERSES WITH THE COUNT. THE SOCIETY OF EXILES REINFORCED. HUNTING OF THE BEAR.

ON the 8th my friend Cruſtiew came to me at day-break, to enquire what ſituation I had choſen for the new edifice, and on going out of my hut I found almoſt all the pieces of wood for the building ready. As ſoon as I had marked out the ſituation the workmen began to put them together. After breakfaſt I repaired to the governor's houſe to give the uſual leſſons to my ſcholars, whom I found ready, with the alphabet in their hands. When they had ſaid their ſpelling leſſons, they requeſted me to write ſome German and French words in the Ruſſian characters. It fortunately happened that I was provided with a grammar of the Ruſſian, German, and French languages, which I had found among the books of my friend. I put this into their hands, with ſome inſtructions for the uſe of it. As ſoon as the leſſons were ended, I was aſked a thouſand queſtions concerning my country, its manners, cuſtoms, &c.

When I was preparing to depart, the governor's lady arrived, and after diſmiſſing her children, made me ſit down beſide her. She informed me, that ſhe was the daughter of a Swediſh colonel, exiled into Siberia; that her mother had changed her religion, and that ſhe had married Mr. Nilow, at that time lieutenant-colonel, a worthy

worthy man, but greatly addicted to drinking, the exceſs of which rendered him brutal and inſupportable; that ſhe enjoyed no pleaſure excepting that of ſeeing her family grow up around her, though at the preſent inſtant, after having ſuffered the mortification of ſeeing her two eldeſt daughters married to two officers who were addicted to gluttony and drinking in the moſt diſguſting exceſs, ſhe could not but lament the fate of the youngeſt, who was intended by her father to be married to a certain kuzma, one of the moſt diſagreeable perſons in the univerſe. She therefore intreated me to endeavour to gain the confidence of the governor, and to uſe my utmoſt exertions to change this reſolution. My reply to this good mother was, that I would do my beſt, and that at all times ſhe ſhould find me obedient to her commands. Soon after I took my leave, and returned home, where I found an invitation from Mr. Hettman to form a party at cheſs.

In the mean time we dined, and after dinner Mr. Cruſtiew preſented to me the candidates for reception into our ſociety. About four o'clock a woman came to take my meaſure for ſhirts and clothes, according to the cuſtom of this country, where the women perform the taylor's buſineſs. At ſeven o'clock I waited on the chancellor, where I found five merchants. We played five games at cheſs, four of which I won, and after receiving one hundred and eighty roubles, I took my leave.

On the 9th a merchant, named Cſuloſnikow, hearing that I poſſeſſed ſome money, propoſed to me to play a couple of games with him, but declared that he would not play for leſs than two hundred roubles a game. I accepted his propoſal, only deferring it till afternoon; becauſe

becauſe I was obliged to attend my ſcholars at the governor's houſe. When I entered the hall I was ſurprized to find Miſs Aphanaſia abſent, and ſtill more to hear that ſhe was ill in bed, but being deſirous of taking her leſſon, ſhe had aſked leave for me to come to her, which her mother had granted. I was accordingly introduced into her chamber, where this amiable girl diſcloſed the ſentiments of her heart with ſuch openneſs and ſimplicity, that the Ruſſian language at that moment appeared to me the moſt muſical in the univerſe. Our converſation was interrupted by the appearance of Madame Nilow. I therefore took my leave, and on my arrival at home I found Mr. Cſuloſnikow, who loſt three games at cheſs. The reſt of the day was employed in ſettling the order for the reception of the candidates to be preſented by Mr. Cruſtiew. We agreed that the council of eight ſhould alone be entruſted with the ſecrets, and that ſuch other perſons as might in future be admitted ſhould be informed only of ſuch particulars as the council might judge neceſſary to communicate to them to ſecure their confidence. At this meeting, therefore, the form of the oath was drawn up, and we employed the reſt of the evening in preparing an entertainment.

On the 10th, at day-break, Mr. Cruſtiew went in ſearch of his candidates, and at nine in the morning returned with them. Their names were as follow:

Demetrius Kuzneczow, a free Ruſſian merchant.
Aphanaſi Kumin, Captain of the Coſſacks, free.
Andrew Gurcinin, Chamberlain of the Empreſs Elizabeth, an exile.
John Sibaew, Captain of the Hunters, free.

Digitized by Google

Alexis Protopop, Archdeacon of the Church, free.
Levonti Popow, Captain of the Hunters, free.
John Cſurin, brother to the captain of a merchant ſhip, free.
Magnus Meder, of the Admiralty, exiled twenty years.
John Wolkow, a free hunter.
Caſſimir Bielſki, a Poliſh ſtaroſt, exiled fifteen years before.
Gregory Lobczow, Colonel of Infantry, an exile.
Heraclius Prince Zadſkoy, exiled eighteen years before.
Julian Brandorp, a Swede, exiled ſix years before.
Nicholas Srebernikow, Captain of a regiment of Guards, an exile.
Andrew Biatzinin, an exile.

At eleven in the morning the candidates were introduced to the committee, and the oaths and engagements were read to them. They immediately took the oath, and ſigned their engagements; but in order to confirm their ſanction we determined that all thoſe who were of the Ruſſian religion ſhould go to confeſſion, and take the ſacrament to corroborate their oaths. In conſequence of this order Mr. Cruſtiew attended them to the church, where their confeſſions were received, and the ſacrament was adminiſtered to them by the Protopop. After their return we celebrated our little feaſt, and the governor with his family, the chancellor, and the hettman, with ſeveral other principal perſons of the town, came to us in the evening, and honoured our aſſembly with a viſit, which fixed the epoch of the independence of the exiles: For the governor, being extremely drunk, ſwore, that he acknowledged

Digitized by Google

acknowledged me as chief of the exiles, and commanded the chancellor to regiſter an act in the chancery, to authenticate this nomination; at the ſame time promiſing to write a repreſentation in my favour to government, in order that I might be employed in the ſervice of the ſtate: The chancellor and the hettman ſupported the intentions of the governor, and had the ſatisfaction to win near ſeven thouſand roubles from the merchants, at cheſs, who by this means paid the charges of our entertainment.

On the 11th we determined to go in chace of the bear, and obtained permiſſion from the governor of four days abſence. On this day I received a conſiderable preſent in linen and ſome peices of plate from Mr. Nilow. On the 12th we departed, to the number of ſixteen, well armed, with eight ſledges, and went down the river which was frozen. At the diſtance of twenty-eight verſtes we ſtopped at the dwelling of the tajou or chief of Cſekawka: he gave us an account of the ſeveral viſits he had received from the bears in his neigbourhood, and entertained us and our dogs with a dinner; after which he conducted us to a brook which fell into the river of Kamchatka. But the inſtant that he perceived three bears at play on the banks of this rivulet, he earneſtly entreated us to retire, aſſuring us that theſe creatures would be the death of us. After delivering this advice, he decamped, and we approached our enemies 'till within the diſtance of muſquet ſhot, when we diſcharged our fire-arms, and wounded them. Enraged with their wounds, they came forward to attack us with the utmoſt fury. It was a fortunate circumſtance that my companions were

Digitized by Google

accuſtomed to this chace. They met the bears, and, after a long combat, ſlew the whole three; for none of them choſe to quit the field of battle.

The following circumſtances are proper to be taken notice of reſpecting this manner of hunting. At ſight of a bear one of the hunters advances to begin the attack, which he does by preſenting his left arm to the animal, having previouſly ſecured himſelf by thick pieces of wood, faſtened lengthways upon the arm, in order that the bear may not break it at the firſt gripe. The moment the animal ſeizes the arm the hunter ſtrikes him with a lance within the left ſhoulder. After this ſtroke the other hunters continually run their lances into the body of the animal, who often breaks the weapons, and, if the firſt ſtroke be not effectual, throws down his opponent and ſtrangles, or at leaſt maims him.

After having ſlain theſe three bears we laid them on our ſledges and returned towards Cſekawka. At the half diſtance we met the tajou with twenty natives of Kamchatka, armed with lances and bows. They acquainted us that they came to aſſiſt us; but when they ſaw the dead bears they ſung our praiſe, and conducted us back in triumph. The firſt care of the Kamchatka men was to ſkin the bears, for which they gave us twenty-ſix martins ſkins, and eight foxes ſkins for the fleſh. This bargain was very agreeable to us, and we reſolved to ſally forth by moon-light to make another prize. We ſucceeded very well in this attempt likewiſe, for we ſlew five others, but Sibaew was wounded.

Among theſe bears there was one of prodigious ſize, and as white as ſnow. We ſet apart his ſkin as a preſent for the governor;

Digitized by Google

governor; and propoſed to apply the four others to our own uſe as mattraſſes. We therefore laid them on our ſledges, and returned towards our habitations, where we ſkinned them, and ſalted the fleſh; after which we carried our preſent to the governor, who was highly pleaſed with it.

CHAP. VIII.

PUBLIC SCHOOL OPENED. THE SOCIETY OF EXILES MEET ON BUSINESS RELATIVE TO THEIR ESCAPE BY SEA. CHESS. THE COUNT COMPOSES CHARTS OF THE COASTS AND ISLANDS ADJOINING TO KAMCHATKA. DANGEROUS CONSEQUENCE OF THE AFFAIR LAST DEBATED IN THE SOCIETY OF EXILES. AVERTED BY THE COUNT, WHO NARROWLY ESCAPES ASSASSINATION. HIS ENEMY PUNISHED.

ON the 14th, the ſchool-room being ready, I received my ſcholars, and made choice of Meſſ. Cruſtiew and Panow as my aſſiſtants. At four in the afternoon the governor's children appeared. The number of my ſcholars amounted to twenty-three, among which were three merchants, who came to learn arithmetic.

On the 16th Sibaew requeſted me to call a meeting, in order to communicate a diſcovery relative to our enterprize. I appointed that very night at eleven o'clock. When the committee was aſſembled, I demanded of him the communication he had to make, which was as follows.

In

Digitized by Google

In the courſe of the preceding month of Auguſt, Cſuloſnikow ſailed from Ochoczk with a veſſel of one hundred and fifty tons, armed, and bound to the Aleuthes iſlands, to catch beavers. His crew conſiſted of twenty-eight hunters, who had never been at ſea before, and theſe being overtaken by a violent tempeſt, had run the veſſel aſhore. Cſuloſnikow in this juncture had forced the people to work without intermiſſion to get the veſſel off the ground; and upon their refuſal to perſevere, had obtained military aſſiſtance from the governor to compel them. In conſequence of which treatment they had unanimouſly determined, firſt to get the veſſel off, and afterwards to make their eſcape with her out of ſlavery. Mr. Sibaew having been conſulted by them on this affair, took advantage of their diſpoſition to inſinuate that they had no chance of ſucceeding in their attempt unleſs they could engage me to take the command, which they immediately reſolved to do, and entreated him to inform me of their determination. He therefore thought it incumbent on him to acquaint the committee, that they might determine what was propereſt to be done in theſe circumſtances, which in his own opinion he thought very advantageous to our intereſts; as by increaſing our number we might put ourſelves in a ſituation to employ open force in ſeizing a veſſel, and making our eſcape with our arms in our hands, in caſe we could not ſucceed by ſtratagem.

This propoſition appeared very intereſting to us. The opinion of every perſon preſent was therefore taken, and the ſociety was at laſt induced to adopt mine, which was as follows:

That

Digitized by Google

That Sibaew ſhould return for anſwer to them, that I was greatly affected with the ſufferings they endured, but that having already been betrayed, once before, in my endeavours to aſſiſt the unfortunate, I could not truſt to their propoſals. For it would be ſufficient if out of twenty-eight there ſhould be one apoſtate who might betray me; and as the enterprize was of the nature of a revolt, they would be puniſhed by being condemned for life to the mines. I recommended that no other anſwer ſhould be made them on my part but this; but I engaged Sibaew to encourage them in their diſpoſition to quit Kamchatka, and perſuade them to uſe every means of gaining my confidence, while I reſerved to myſelf the conduct and management of their plot when it ſhould be brought nearer to an iſſue.

On the 17th in the morning Sibaew arrived with two of the principal perſons of the crew of Mr. Cſuloſnikow, the one named Lapin, who was maſter, and the other Parencſin, who was carpenter. They both threw themſelves at my feet as ſoon as they entered, and conjured me not to abandon them in their enterprize. They obſerved, that their reſolution ought to be agreeable to me, as I ſhould thereby ſecure my liberty; and they offered to engage themſelves by oath to be faithful and obedient to me in all my commands, and to follow me to the end of the world. I continued to urge difficulties until they had aſſured me that they would engage themſelves by the moſt ſacred oath, and take the holy communion to corroborate every engagement into which I might think proper to require them to enter. This reſolution determined me to give them

ſome

Digitized by Google

ſome hopes that I would accept the charge, provided they engaged their companions to follow my fortunes under the ſame oath. For which purpoſe I told them, that as ſoon as they were all agreed, they might come to me, in order to execute their oath of union.

After their departure, I aſſembled my companions, and communicated to them the agreement I had made with the chiefs of Cſuloſnikow's people. The ſteps I had taken were approved, and the company finding themſelves reinforced by twenty-eight ſtrong, robuſt and determined men, no longer doubted of ſucceſs. We agreed from that day forward to buſy ourſelves in making cartridges, and preparing our arms. Each of us was directed to provide a muſquet, a pair of piſtols, a ſabre, a lance, and ſixty cartridges.

On the 18th I paſſed the day with the chancellor in playing at cheſs, and I won ſeven games. On my return I found Mr. Norin, lieutenant of the garriſon, who aſked me to lend him five hundred roubles, which he wanted to fit himſelf out, as he was nominated commander at Niſnioſtrogg. I promiſed to comply with his requeſt, on condition that he gave me his word of honour to behave with humanity towards the unfortunate exiles dwelling within the limits of his juriſdiction. He accompanied me home, where I put the five hundred roubles into his hand, and received in return his proteſtations of friendſhip and gratitude. My companions were much concerned at my liberality; but when I aſſured them that I had near five thouſand roubles in my box, they found themſelves more at eaſe in that reſpect.

On

Digitized by Google

On the 19th the chancellor desired me to compose a reduced chart of the Kurilles and Aleuthes islands, together with the coasts of Kamchatka, and Ochoczk; and, in order that I might obtain the necessary information, he gave me permission to take out of the archives whatever pieces I might find relative to the subject. As this business tended to divert my wearisome situation, and, at the same time, to supply me with the knowledge which was requisite to the execution of my project, I undertook it very willingly; and on that very day I received out of the Chancery several journals and relations of sea voyages, made either by the officers in the Imperial Russian service, or by individuals. At the first perusal, however, I was convinced that I could advance nothing with certainty, except such articles as I found in the journals of Spanberg, Bering and Tsirikow.

On the 20th Madame de Nilow pressed me much to teach her daughter music. Unfortunately, however, my whole knowledge of this art consisted in playing the harp, an instrument which it would have been a miracle to have found in Kamchatka. Nevertheless, to please this lady, I promised to make one; though I had never handled any cabinet-makers tools. On my return home I consulted with my friends, concerning the accomplishment of my promise; and, after I had made a model, Mr. Panow undertook to assist me in the construction of the instrument; Mr. Crustiew engaged to make the strings with the entrails of dogs and rein deer, and Mr. Stephanow promised to make all the iron screws.

Digitized by Google

On the 21ſt, Mr. Cſuloſnikow, the merchant, came to me, and reproached me with having excited his crew to mutiny, and threatened that, if I did not point out the ringleaders to him, he would directly go and complain to the governor, and demand an order for my impriſonment. The direct and aſſured manner in which this man made his attack, led me to fear ſome treachery on the part of his people; but, as it was neceſſary to avoid every appearance of confuſion, I replied, that he muſt be out of his ſenſes to accuſe me with ſo ſtupid an undertaking. I admitted that his people had applied to me for an engagement to build my houſe, and that I had made a bargain with them, which, however, I would willingly cancel, if the governor judged it inconvenient. I aſſured him that I entered into this explanation, not with a view to juſtify myſelf to him, whom I deſpiſed too much to think of making any reply to his accuſations; but that I did it to make him bluſh at his want of humanity. I moreover aſſured him, that I ſhould loſe no time in waiting on the governor, and making him acquainted with the execrable treatment with which he purſued his people, who, though unable to ſubſiſt without working, were deprived even of that reſource, as far as his power could go; and that, as to myſelf, I ſhould ſoon find an opportunity to puniſh him for his inſolence, in having dared to attribute ſuch proceedings to me.

During our converſation, ſeveral of my companions came up; and when informed of the ſubject of our diſcourſe, they attributed his proceeding to a deſire of avenging himſelf for the loſs of a ſum of money againſt me

Digitized by Google

me at chefs. The conteft foon became warm, and terminated in a fhower of blows, which fell to his fhare.

To prevent the bad conſequences of this adventure, I immediately waited upon the governor, and informed him of the accuſation of Cſuloſnikow, not forgetting to mention the inſolence of his behaviour. The governor, irritated by the repreſentations of his lady and the reſt of his family, ſent a ſerjeant in ſearch of Cſuloſnikow, and the moment he appeared, without ſuffering him to ſpeak, he declared to him, that if he ever inſulted me in future, he would ſend him to priſon, and proſecute him for having loſt the veſſel entruſted to his care; and that ſince he had information that the veſſel could not be got off, he would diſcharge his crew from their contract, and give them full liberty to enter on board of any other veſſel. The governor accordingly ſent his officer to the chancellor, in order that his commands might be carried into execution; and poor Cſuloſnikow found himſelf obliged to ſubmit without ſpeaking a word.

I thanked the governor, and returned homewards, but had ſcarcely proceeded one third of the way before I was attacked by Cſuloſnikow and his couſin, with two ſtout bludgeons and drawn knives. I had no other arms than a ſtick, and was at a diſtance from every place of aſſiſtance. However I ſet myſelf in a ſtate of defence with my back againſt a ſtore houſe, and in this ſituation I received many ſtrokes on the arm. One of my blows was ſo lucky as to fall on the head of Cſuloſnikow's companion, and extended him upon the earth; upon which, having only one to deal with, I attacked my man with fury, broke my ſtaff, and then flew upon

Digitized by Google

him with my fists. At the first onset I had the good fortune to strike him such a violent blow that he vomited blood, and begged his life, which I granted, at the same time that I reproached him with his treachery. I promised, however, not to speak of this adventure to the governor.

After I had left him and was proceeding on my way, I met Sibaew, who seeing me all bloody, with several contusions on my head, enquired what had happened, and upon being informed, he ran to the governor's house to carry the news. The governor immediately sent a detachment to seize Csulosnikow and his cousin, the latter of whom died that afternoon, by the fracture of his skull. Csulosnikow was condemned to six months public labour, and his whole property confiscated to the use of the state and the church. For my part it was with great difficulty that I reached home, and notwithstanding every care, I was obliged to keep my bed ten days, during which time I received continual visits from the chiefs of the country, and especially the family of the governor, which appeared to be highly interested in my welfare.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IX.

THE EXILES NARROWLY ESCAPE POISONING, ON NEW YEAR'S DAY. DISCOVERY OF THE AUTHOR, WHO DISCLOSES THEIR PROJECT, AS COMMUNICATED TO HIM BY ONE OF THEIR NUMBER. THE EXILES MEET, AND PUT THE TRAITOR TO DEATH IN THE NIGHT. FARTHER ENQUIRIES MADE BY GOVERNMENT, WHICH ARE RENDERED ABORTIVE BY AN ACCIDENTAL CIRCUMSTANCE.

ON the 1st of January, 1771, we paid our reſpects to the governor and other principal perſons, and afterwards aſſembled, in order to make a kind of entertainment. We had received from ſeveral merchants, preſents of tea and ſugar, with which we regaled ourſelves. But this pleaſure coſt us dear; for in a quarter of an hour after we were ſeized with violent cholics and vomiting. Mr. Panow was the firſt who aſſured us that we were poiſoned, for he affirmed that he had obſerved many of the pieces of ſugar taſted ſalt. In conſequence of this ſuppoſition, each of us drank a large quantity of whale oil. It is impoſſible to deſcribe our ſufferings; ſome were affected more than others, and as to myſelf, who had only taken one cup of tea, I found, after I had taken the oil, that my pains diſappeared with only a trembling in all my limbs. But my utmoſt exertions were required to attend my other companions, conſiſting of fourteen perſons, many of whom vomited blood.

During this criſis, ſeveral of our companions came to ſee us, who, when they found what had happened, made haſte to bring a quantity of the rein deer's milk, which

Digitized by Google

which at laſt mitigated our pains, and cauſed them to go off with a trembling of the limbs, excepting Mr. Cſurin, who died in the night, and Mr. Panow, who continued ſcarcely alive. As ſoon as we had recovered our forces and began to reflect upon this event, we examined the ſugar. I gave a piece to a cat, and another piece to a dog, wrapped up in part of a fiſh. Both theſe animals were ſtrongly convulſed, and burſt in the ſpace of half an hour. This experiment convinced us that Mr. Caſarinow, a merchant, had poiſoned the ſugar; but as it was of importance to ſearch this affair to the bottom, we determined to keep the ſecret, for which reaſon we cauſed the Protopop to attend the burial of Mr. Cſurin, and Mr. Panow, finding himſelf better, was conveyed to his hut.

On the 2d, about noon, I waited on the governor, with the intention of giving him an account of our accident; and, as a proof, I carried with me the ſugar loaf. The governor was not inclined to give credit to my declaration, for which reaſon I offered to convince him by ſending for Mr. Caſarinow, and propoſing to him to drink tea, at the ſame time that notice might be incidentally taken, that I had preſented the governor with a loaf of ſugar. For I obſerved that the behaviour of Caſarinow on this occaſion, could not fail, either to clear up his innocence, or indicate his guilt. Madame Nilow approved my propoſal, and the governor conſented to follow my advice, on condition that I ſhould be a witneſs to what might happen, from a neighbouring chamber.

The governor accordingly ſent for the chancellor, the hettman, and Caſarinow, with two other merchants. The moment I ſaw them arrive, I retired into the next room,

Digitized by Google

room, where I could hear every thing that paſſed. The chancellor and the hettman arrived firſt, and were informed of the buſineſs for which they had been requeſted to come. They concluded that Caſarinow had executed this act of revenge againſt me on account of his having loſt a large ſum of money at cheſs, and declared that they did not doubt the truth of my relation. They at the ſame time obſerved, that if the fact ſhould be eſtabliſhed againſt Caſarinow, it would be abſolutely neceſſary to puniſh him with the utmoſt rigour of the law, by condemning him to labour in the mines, after confiſcation of his whole fortune.

Caſarinow at laſt arrived with the two other merchants: the governor received them politely, and entered into diſcourſe concerning the fitting out of ſome ſhipping for the iſlands Aleuthes, to catch beavers. In the midſt of their dialogue, the governor propoſed tea, which was accepted by the whole company, and he continued his diſcourſe with Caſarinow, by aſking if he was not in the habit of taking tea ſeveral times in the courſe of the day, to which he anſwered in the affirmative. In the mean time the table was ſet out, and the governor, looking at the ſugar-loaf upon the table, expreſſed his ſurprize at the generoſity of the exiles who arrived laſt, and obſerved that he had received as a new-year's gift from me, two ſugar loaves, part of which he had now the pleaſure of offering to the company. At theſe words Caſarinow turned pale, and upon the governor's enquiry whether he was ill, he replied he was, and begged leave to retire. The chancellor replied, that his illneſs would go off after a couple of diſhes of tea. He continued, however, to make

Digitized by Google

make his excuſes, but at laſt the cup of tea being poured out was preſented to him, and the governor inſiſted on his drinking it. At this criſis the unhappy wretch no longer doubted but that he was diſcovered, and, throwing himſelf at the feet of the governor, declared, that he had poiſoned the ſugar, with the intention of delivering ſociety from ſuch a monſter as myſelf. He aſſured the governor that he would himſelf be convinced of this after hearing the depoſition of a perſon of the name of Piatſinin, who had diſcovered to him a plot, which I had formed, to arm all the exiles, and to ſeize veſſels in order to eſcape from Kamchatka. The governor was too much enraged at the attempt of Caſarinow to pay any attention to his words; but committed him to priſon, giving orders to the chancellor to proceed to the confiſcation of his property, and to regiſter the ſentence againſt him from his own confeſſion, of an attempt to poiſon.

After having ſeen this wretched man dragged to jail, and the governor's dinner time being near, I retired. Immediately on my arrival I aſſembled the council, and afterwards all thoſe who had entered into the oath of confederacy. I declared to them the treaſon of Piatſinin, who was then preſent, and the meeting ſentenced him to die, but granted him three hours to prepare himſelf for death: the Protopop attended him, and in the evening he was led out and put to death during the night, by ſhooting him through the head.

In conſequence of the depoſition of Caſarinow, the chancellor cauſed a coſſack, of the name of Piatſinin, to come before him, and queſtioned him concerning the fact. This poor wretch was at a loſs what to anſwer, but abſolutely

Digitized by Google

lutely denied ever having ſpoken to Caſarinow, and the chancellor did not give himſelf the trouble to confront them, but contented himſelf with inſerting in the ſentence a declaration of falſhood againſt the depoſition of Caſarinow.

CHAP. X.

THE COUNT CONSTRUCTS A MUSICAL INSTRUMENT FOR HIS SCHOLAR MISS APHANASIA. MEMBERS PROPOSED TO THE SOCIETY OF EXILES. PLAN OF OPERATION SETTLED. THE GOVERNOR PROPOSES A JOURNEY. LARGE SUMS OF MONEY WON AT CHESS, AND PART PRESENTED TO THE GOVERNOR'S FAMILY. MISS APHANASIA DECLARES HER AFFECTION FOR THE COUNT IN THE PRESENCE OF HER FATHER, WHO IS EXCEEDINGLY IRRITATED, BUT IS PACIFIED BY HIS COLLEAGUES IN OFFICE. THE GOVERNOR MAKES THE NECESSARY DISPOSITIONS TO REVERSE THE SENTENCE OF EXILE UNDER WHICH THE COUNT WAS BANISHED.

ON the 3d we were informed of all that had happened at the governor's as well as at the chancery, and it was with the greateſt ſatisfaction that we reflected on our narrow eſcape from the conſequences of treachery and poiſon. Several of us, however, were afflicted with ſevere fits of illneſs afterwards. On this day my muſical inſtrument being finiſhed, and the ſtrings mounted, I carried it to Madame Nilow, and played a few airs upon it before her, and though the ſound of the inſtrument was far from being lively, the melody was thought inchant-

Digitized by Google

ting by the governor and all his family. From that day forward their youngeſt daughter Aphanaſia was inſeparable from her inſtrument.

On the 4th Mr. Stephanow informed us, that he had diſcovered that Bocſarow, Iſmailow, and Lapin, three young perſons apprenticed to the ſea, had reſolved, together with five or ſix hunters, to ſeize a veſſel, and eſcape to the Aleuthes iſlands, to eſtabliſh themſelves there. He obſerved, that ſince the propoſal firſt came from them he could depend on their fidelity; but as the treachery of Piatſinin had made a ſtrong impreſſion on the minds of my companions, I contented myſelf with propoſing that Mr. Stephanow ſhould form a connection with them, and encourage them in their reſolution till we ſhould have decided reſpecting their admiſſion; but that we ſhould poſtpone our deciſion to the time of the execution of our project. My opinion was agreed to, and Mr. Stephanow was intruſted with the management of this affair.

On the 5th a committee was held, to conſult on the means of carrying our project into execution. It was here determined, that, in order to prevent all ſuſpicion in future, the greater part of our companions ſhould quit the town of Bolſha, and ſettle at Niſney-oſtrog during the winter, under pretence of following the chace: But that in the courſe of the month of March, or at fartheſt by the 15th of April, they ſhould rejoin me, in order that as the harbour began at that time to be cleared of ice, and the ſhipping would be fitting out, we ſhould embrace the earlieſt opportunity of ſeizing the firſt veſſel we ſhould be ready, in which we would embark, and leave Kamchatka. In conſequence of this reſolution it was determined

Digitized by Google

mined that Meſſrs. Cruſtiew and Stephanow ſhould undertake to make ſure of part of the crew of the firſt veſſel which might be fitting out, with a view to facilitate the execution of our project; while I ſhould attach myſelf to the governor, the chancellor, and the hettman, for the purpoſe of fruſtrating the effect of the inſinuations of the merchants, who, from the treachery of Piatſinin, and ſeveral other circumſtances, had been confirmed in their ſuſpicions. On the ſame day I requeſted the governor's permiſſion of abſence for my companions, that they might hunt near Niſney Novogrod, which I obtained. On the 6th they departed, after I had given them two hundred roubles to facilitate their eſtabliſhment, together with a letter of recommendation for Mr. Norin, commanding officer at Niſney-oſtrog.

On the 7th the governor propoſed to me to accompany him on a journey he intended to make in the courſe of the month, together with his family. I complied with his orders, and promiſed to be ready, but the chancellor and the hettman, who came in ſoon after, reproached me for abandoning their parties. The governor, however, aſſured them that he ſhould not be abſent longer than ſeven or eight days; in conſequence of which they determined to make the ſame journey, on condition that we took a cheſs board with us. The governor was curious to know the ſum they had won at that game ſince I had borne a part; and, upon making a calculation, it appeared that it amounted to forty-two thouſand roubles, in money and furs. The chancellor, to ſhew his attachment to the governor, aſſerted, that he had agreed with me to ſet aſide one-tenth part of the

Digitized by Google

profits as a preſent to the governor's family, which he called me, as well as the hettman, to witneſs. The governor was highly pleaſed with this declaration, and immediately cauſed his daughters to be called, and communicated to them the news of their good fortune; obſerving, that they were indebted to me, in the firſt place, for this advantage, and next, to the friendſhip of the chancellor and the hettman. I perceived that Mr. Hettman was offended at the ſtep the chancellor had taken, for which reaſon I called him aſide, and repreſented to him that this act of generoſity, as well as all the good conſequences which might ariſe from it, would be ſhared by him, as well as us; and that there ſtill remained a vaſt field for us to extend our advantages. This aſſurance ſet his covetous heart ſomewhat more at eaſe.

The governor's family expreſſed their acknowledgements to us; but Miſs Aphanaſia added, that ſhe hoped, from the goodneſs of Mr. Chancellor and Mr. Hettman, that they would intereſt themſelves in my favour, and obtain the abolition of the ſentence of my exile, and the neceſſary grace, in order that I might be employed in ſome charge under government, that her ſincere deſire of ſeeing me happy, and of partaking in my happineſs, might be accompliſhed. At theſe words the governor flew into a rage, and loaded me with invectives, but the chancellor and hettman remonſtrated ſtrongly againſt the injuſtice of blaming me for the ſentiments of his daughter. They obſerved it was not impoſſible but that I might in future poſſeſs a charge under government, and in that caſe the governor could not do better to inſure the happineſs of his family.

Digitized by Google

family. Their arguments at length had ſome effect on the governor, who became calm, and addreſſed them in theſe words: Gentlemen, you are witneſs to the declaration juſt now made by my daughter, of which I ſhould be much aſhamed; but, ſince you find it excuſable, I pardon her, and undertake to employ my credit in mitigating the ſentence of exile againſt Benyowſky. I therefore requeſt that you will ſign an act which I ſhall propoſe to you, which, according to the laws of the Czar Peter, diſcharges every exile from his ſentence. This law enacts, that every exile who ſhall have diſcovered a plot formed againſt government, or the chiefs, ſhall be diſcharged from the rigour of his ſentence. The exile before you has a right to this abſolution; for he has revealed to us the attempt of Caſarinow to poiſon us. Without his declaration neither you nor myſelf would now have been alive. You cannot therefore diſpenſe with ſigning this act of abſolution, which we will ſubmit to the ſenate, with our letters of recommendation, for the ſake of the form only: For the ordinances of the Emperor do not preſcribe this to be done, but are poſitive in enacting, that every governor or voivode, preſident of a college, or chancellor, with the conſent of his counſellors, ſhall be authorized to pronounce this abſolution.

This ſpeech of the governor was received like an oracle, and the chancellor invited the governor immediately to call a meeting the following day, to carry his reſolution into effect. The hettman made haſte to engage Madame Nilow to join them, in order to confirm the governor

Digitized by Google

governor in this ſtep, who beholding his family at his feet, and the chancellor and the hettman urging every entreaty, conſented at laſt, and complimented me with my liberty.

CHAP. XI.

THE COUNT IS IN DANGER OF BEING PUT TO DEATH BY HIS ASSOCIATES. THEIR SUSPICIONS REMOVED. AN EMBARRASSING DILEMMA. PRESENTS MADE TO THE COUNT. THE MANNER OF HIS ABSOLUTION FROM THE SENTENCE OF EXILE. HE MAKES A PROPOSAL TO THE COUNCIL. GENEROUS DISPOSITION OF THE CHIEF INHABITANTS OF THE TOWN. CONSEQUENCES OF THE COUNT'S ADVANCEMENT.

THIS buſineſs was not conducted with ſecrecy. The governor's family divulged the adventure confuſedly, and the whole town was informed of my approaching abſolution before I left the governor's houſe; which I did, after having received orders to appear the following day at the chancery at eleven in the morning. In my way I met many perſons who loaded me with compliments, and when I arrived at home, I found Meſſrs. Panow, Stephanow, Baturin, and Cruſtiew, who accoſted me with ſome confuſion, and informed me that I muſt appear before the general meeting. I enquired what preſſing affair demanded my preſence, and obſerved that I had very agreeable news to communicate to them; but great was my aſtoniſhment at the anſwer of Panow, who informed

Digitized by Google

informed me that this news would coſt me my life, to which he added, that I was a traitor, and that nothing more could be ſaid on an affair which was of ſufficient importance to be decided according to the conſtitution I had myſelf eſtabliſhed.

Surprized at this diſcourſe, I had no time to conſider what motives could lead them to act in this manner. It was in vain that I ſolicited my beſt friend, Cruſtiew, to give me ſome intimation of the buſineſs; for he refuſed, by obſerving that he was forbidden to ſpeak to me, and that it was neceſſary I ſhould appear before the aſſembly. I then entered, and the firſt objects which preſented themſelves to my ſight were two of my aſſociates, armed with ſabres, at the door, and a goblet on the table filled with poiſon. Theſe preparations led me to ſuppoſe that I was charged with treachery, and that the proceedings of the governor in my favour had induced my companions to believe that I had accuſed and betrayed them. On this ſuppoſition I demanded leave to ſpeak, and immediately related to them every thing which had paſſed at the governor's houſe, together with the deciſion of the governor. After having ended my diſcourſe, I demanded judgement. Conſternation and joy was on every countenance. Mr. Panow advanced towards me the firſt, and, throwing himſelf at my feet, entreated my pardon, affirming that he was the author of all that I ſaw. He informed me, that as he could not believe my connection with the chiefs of the government was ſimply the effect of accident, he had long ſuſpected me of treachery, and had not ceaſed to follow my ſteps; and that he had, on that very morning, followed me, and was convinced of my duplicity, when he

Digitized by Google

he heard that, by virtue of the ordinance of the Czar Peter, I was declared to be at liberty: a conviction which inſpired him with the reſolution of aſſaſſinating me; though he had deferred the execution of his purpoſe, merely with the intention of informing his companions of their danger. That in conſequence of his declaration, they had determined to put me to death; but that the preſervation of my life was owing to the reſolution of Mr. Cruſtiew, who perſuaded the meeting to hear me before they proceeded to the commiſſion of a crime, as he would anſwer for me at the expence of his life: And as the aſſurance of Mr. Cruſtiew was now found to be true, he intreated my pardon for his precipitate haſte. I embraced this worthy aſſociate, and thanked him for his care, at the ſame time begging that he would, in future, entertain a better opinion of me.

The fears of the aſſociation being thus diſſipated, they indulged themſelves in the pleaſing reflections, how much my liberation would tend to inſure the execution of our project. After the riſing of the aſſembly, I conſulted with Meſſrs. Cruſtiew and Protopop about my apprehenſions reſpecting the governor's daughter and her mother, who ſeeing me in a ſtate of liberty, preſſed me to marry her, which was out of my power, becauſe I was already married, and reſolved to proſecute our voyage. The firſt repreſented to me, that my marriage being by compulſion, would be unlawful, and that I might clear myſelf of it on my return into Europe. The ſecond propoſed to me to repeat the form of marriage, without entering into any engagement; to which effect he promiſed to give me a certificate. They both endeavoured

Digitized by Google

deavoured to convince me that I needed not hesitate to comply with the solicitations of the governor's family, for the purpose of supporting the common interest. But I resolved to do nothing which might injure my reputation. I therefore declared that I would put off this affair as long as I could, in order to gain time, and that I did not despair of obtaining their consent to defer the marriage till the month of May; at which period, it would be in our power to settle the business in another manner. I confess that in my own mind I felt the utmost regret and uneasiness, to be the instrument of distress to an amiable girl whom I tenderly loved; but the hope that she might, at some future period, be happier in a marriage more suitable to her situation, tended in some measure to render my reflections less afflicting.

I employed the rest of the day in preparations to make a decent appearance at the chancery, and in the evening I waited upon the chancellor and the hettman to thank them for their favours. Both these gentlemen loaded me with compliments; the chancellor obliged me to accept a traineau, very elegantly constructed of whalebone and gilt, which was drawn by four white dogs, and accompanied by a slave to direct them; and the hettman presented me with a parca, or pelisse of beaver's skin, edged with the skin of the black fox, together with a bonnet of blue velvet bordered with sables.

On the 8th, all the exiles assembled at my house. At ten o'clock the secretary of the chancery, Mr. Szudeikin, came to invite me to the chancery. I accordingly ordered my sledge to be harnessed, and waited upon the chancellor, attended by my companions, who remained at

Digitized by Google

the gate. The ſecretary introduced me into the council chamber, where I found the governor ſitting as preſident, with eighteen other principal gentlemen, including the chancellor and the hettman. The governor made a very long ſpeech, in order to render me truly ſenſible of my good fortune, in having fallen into the hands of juſt and enlightened men. He enlarged much on the mildneſs of the Ruſſian government, and the excellence of its laws, and concluded his diſcourſe by praiſing the Empreſs, whoſe virtues he extolled to the ſkies. After his ſermon, he ordered the chancellor to read the act of my abſolution, which was word for word as follows:

"Actuated by the inviolable duty of juſtice, after "having materially examined the behaviour of Auguſtus "Samueloviez, an exile to this place, by order of the go- "verning ſenate, and (purſuant to) the will of her Impe- "rial Highneſs, Catharine, Empreſs and Autocratrix of "all the Ruſſias, I do declare him abſolved from the pro- "ſcription pronounced in the ſentence againſt him, and I "do command his remiſſion, conformably to the in- "tention of the legiſlature, explained in the fifth ſection "of the inſtructions concerning the laws againſt pro- "ſcribed and exiled perſons; and in order that the "cauſes which have determined me to this proceeding "may be perpetuated in juſtice, I command that the "*ſpecies facti* be printed beneath the preſent act, as it "has been preſented unto me by the chancellor.

"May it pleaſe his excellency the governor to con- "ſider the declaration of Auguſtus Samueloviez, who "diſcovered the attempt to poiſon, made by Caſa- "rinow, and intended to cauſe the death of the "governor,

Digitized by Google

" governor, with the principals of the regency, doubtleſs " to carry into execution a deſign of ſeizing the govern- " ment of this province, and depriving the empire of the " dominion thereof. That the ſaid Auguſtus Sa- " mueloviez, in order to prove the criminal intention, " hazarded his own life, with the lives of ſeveral of his " companions, by making a trial of the force of the poi- " ſon on his own perſon; and that in this manner, at the " peril of his life and the lives of his friends, he clearly " proved the guilt of the above-named: which evidence " was laſtly confirmed by Caſarinow himſelf, who con- " feſſed his crime. May it therefore pleaſe his excel- " lency the governor, conformably to the ordinances of " the late Czar Peter, to pronounce the ſentence of ab- " ſolution from exile, in favour of the ſaid Auguſtus " Samueloviez.

Signed, NOVOZILOW, Chancellor,
SZUDEIKIN, Secretary.

The preſent order, containing the act of abſolution, after being read in council, was exhibited and publiſhed conformably to the laws. When the reading was finiſhed, the governor cauſed me to approach the table, preſented me a looking glaſs, and commanded me to kiſs it. This ceremony being finiſhed, he embraced me himſelf, as did likewiſe all the other members preſent at the council; immediately after which, ſix of the guards entered with a drum, and went out with the ſecretary in order to publiſh my abſolution through the town. During the time they were executing their commiſſion, I requeſted the governor's leave to make a propoſal, and being permitted to ſpeak, I addreſſed the council. I aſſured

Digitized by Google

them that after having rendered a ſervice of this nature to the ſtate, I was determined to employ my whole life in endeavouring to promote the intereſts of that part of the nation which had intereſted itſelf ſo highly in my welfare; and that in conſequence of this diſpoſition, I propoſed to eſtabliſh the cultivation of grain on the ſouthern point of land, and to clear a quantity of paſture ground for the ſupport of cattle, ſufficient to maintain the inhabitants of Kamchatka. In order to carry this project into execution, I only requeſted permiſſion to eſtabliſh myſelf with the other exiles in that country, with forty natives as labourers.

The chancellor ſpoke in favour of my propoſal, and the governor conſented to report it for diſcuſſion at the following meeting. At the breaking up of the council, I was invited to dinner; but before I departed I joined my companions, and explained to them the reaſons of my propoſal, which they found advantageous to the purpoſe of our union.

Numberleſs were the compliments I received at dinner. The family of the governor in particular expreſſed their ſatisfaction, more eſpecially Miſs Aphanaſia, who was uncommonly attentive to her dreſs that day. Twenty-two principal gentlemen of the town were preſent at this dinner; and one of them, named Caſimir, took the lead at the deſert, by obſerving that the praiſe of good actions ought not to be confined to words, but that as the governor had ſatisfied the claim of juſtice, it was the duty of ſociety to beſtow the reward of merit; he therefore propoſed that the citizens ſhould unite to contribute a fund for my eſtabliſhment.

The

Digitized by Google

The governor replied to this propoſition, that he ſeriouſly intended to make my fortune; and that as he deſigned to give me his daughter in marriage, it was his buſineſs to take care of my eſtabliſhment. But the chancellor contradicted this reſolution, by declaring that as the governor had a numerous family, prudence required that he ſhould not impair his own private fortune, and conſequently, that he might permit thoſe to act who were deſirous of teſtifying their gratitude to me. The hettman ſeconded the chancellor, and the governor at laſt conſented that Caſimir ſhould purſue his plan, and the governor declared that he would not poſtpone the marriage between myſelf and his daughter, longer than till he received orders from the governor general of Irkuczk, from whom he had requeſted the creation of the office of lieutenant-general of the police in my favour.

The company applauded this reſolution, and the evening paſſed very agreeably to every one but myſelf. No words can deſcribe the confuſion of my mind, when I reflected that I was forced to deceive a charming and innocent girl. I could not conceal my conſternation from the penetrating eye of Madame Nilow; and it was with the utmoſt embarraſſment that I contrived to elude her inquiries, by pretending that my apparent affliction was occaſioned by the mortification of finding myſelf ſeparated from the company of the other exiles, for whoſe friendſhip I had a very great value. The avowal of ſo natural a ſentiment ſatisfied her, and ſhe endeavoured to remove theſe reflections, by promiſing that ſhe would contrive means to mitigate their hardſhips; but at the ſame time ſhe deſired me to fix my future reſidence in

the

the governor's houſe, where apartments were provided for me in order that I might be at hand to aſſiſt in the public buſineſs.

This propoſal greatly embarraſſed me: but as I had a thouſand reaſons for refuſing this mark of goodneſs, I urged every argument I could think of to perſuade her to ſuffer me to reſide as uſual without the town and fortreſs, to which ſhe at laſt conſented.

CHAP. XII.

PROOF OF THE CONFIDENCE AND ATTACHMENT OF THE EXILES TO THE COUNT. THE GOVERNOR AND COUNCIL LIBERATE THE EXILES. THE COUNT PROMISES TO PROCURE THE ENLARGEMENT OF THE PERSON WHO ATTEMPTED TO POISON HIM. FARTHER PROGRESS OF THE EXILES IN THEIR PROJECTS TO ESCAPE. AN ENTERTAINMENT PROPOSED. THE GENTLEMEN OF THE TOWN MAKE PRESENTS TO THE COUNT. GOOD EFFECTS OF THE COUNT'S EXERTIONS IN FAVOUR OF HIS ENEMY.

UPON my return home I found my friends aſſembled. Many of them ſhed tears of joy, and declared that, ſince my good fortune was eſtabliſhed, and they could depend on my reſolution, they were reſolved to recede from the oath of union, in order to avoid expoſing my life in future. They proteſted, that their reſolution was unanimous, and that they made this declaration in conſequence of their perſonal attachment to me. I thanked them for this

ſingular

ſingular mark of friendſhip, but I declared my fixed and unalterable determination to break the bonds of our ſlavery, and propoſed to them to renew the oath of union. Mr. Panow adviſed us to ſend an expreſs to Niſneynovogrod to inform our companions of what had happened, in order that no falſe account might cauſe them to give up the hope of recovering their liberty. Purſuant to this advice, Sibeaw was diſpatched, and as the courſe of buſineſs at my ſchool was interrupted by theſe intervening events, I entruſted the care of it to Mr. Winbladth, Major of the confederation, who was taken a priſoner, and exiled with me, and I nominated Mr. Meden as his aſſiſtant, who had been long exiled, and was of the ſame country as the Major, namely, Sweden.

On the 9th Mr. Baturin finiſhed the charts which I had compoſed of the northern navigation. I preſented them to the chancellor, who, after expreſſing his approbation, laid them before the council, and obtained the governor's conſent to ſend them to the College of Admiralty at Peterſburgh. On the ſame day the chancellor preſented the report for intruſting me with an eſtabliſhment to cultivate the land in Lopattka, and, after a ſhort diſcuſſion, the governor paſſed an act in council, by which the aſſiſtance of Government was promiſed me in forming my eſtabliſhment. By this act I found myſelf authorized to form a colony of exiles. For the partiality of the governor and principal men of the town was of ſuch admirable ſervice in explaining the ordonnances of the Czar Peter, that the governor thought himſelf authorized to declare in this act, that all exiles who ſhould repair to the country of Lopattka to form a colony, and ſettle there for the

Digitized by Google

the purpoſe of cultivating the ground, ſhould be abſolved from their ſentence of exile; and all this was done in conformity to the ſenſe of the laws, which were found to declare clearly, that every proſcribed and exiled perſon, who ſhall have rendered eſſential ſervices to the ſtate, of ſuch a nature as tends to its preſervation, ſhall be capable of receiving the favour of abſolution. This proceeding of a whole council convinced me that there are no laws which cannot be interpreted as convenience may dictate. The preſent day's work completed my ſatisfaction; for after I had declared in the council that I had diſpoſed all the exiles to undertake the eſtabliſhment of this new colony, the governor commanded me to bring them, that they might ſign their declaration to that effect. I flew home with this order, and aſſembled my friends, to whom I explained my meſſage. They immediately followed me to the chancery, to ſign their ſubmiſſion; in conſequence of which the governor cauſed an amneſty to be publiſhed in their favour.

The rapidity of my operations aſtoniſhed every one; but that which gave me the greateſt pleaſure was the conviction that no one ſuſpected my intentions. When we left the chancery, we proceeded in a body to return our thanks to the governor, the chancellor, the hettman, and other counſellors: the reſt of the day was employed in viſiting the merchants and other inhabitants of the town. While I was at the houſe of Kolokow the hettman, the family of Caſarinow intreated me to cauſe him to be ſet at liberty, and to procure a repeal of the ſentence by which he was condemned to labour in the mines. I promiſed this afflicted family that I would uſe my beſt endeavours, but

Digitized by Google

but as I had learned that his fortune, which was confiscated, amounted to more than sixty thousand roubles, I clearly saw how difficult the business would be; for it was certain that I could not save this unhappy man, but on condition that he should give up all thoughts of reclaiming his property. I informed his wife of my fears; but she assured me, that her husband would submit to the sacrifice on condition that the governor would employ him in a voyage to the Kurelles islands to collect the tributes. I therefore promised to obtain his liberty; and as this act of generosity might add greatly to my reputation, I determined to use every effort to overcome such obstacles as might present themselves.

On the same evening I had an opportunity to speak to the chancellor, and accordingly proposed the affair to him. He was displeased at first; but when I informed him that Casarinow renounced his fortune, he hesitated, and a short time after told me, he had thought of a method to remove every difficulty; but that he would communicate his ideas to the governor and the hettman, and give a decisive answer in the course of twenty-four hours.

On the 10th I assembled a committee, in which, after having discussed our common interests, we resolved to make the necessary preparations to repair to the country of Lopattka in the month of March, at which place we should pretend to busy ourselves in establishing our colony: And that at a proper opportunity we would request a vessel from the governor to transport our effects and provisions; on the arrival of which we would take possession of it, and bid adieu to this wretched place.

Digitized by Google

In conformity with this reſolution, we determined to collect proviſions ſufficient for a voyage by ſea of three months. At the breaking up of the committee I propoſed to give the ſociety an entertainment on the occaſion of our abſolution from ſlavery, to which all the principal men of the town ſhould be invited. My propoſal was approved of, and Mr. Cruſtiew was directed to make every requiſite preparation.

About noon Mr. Caſimir came to inform me that the meeting of the gentlemen of the town had determined to make me a preſent of ſix thouſand roubles, one-third in ready money, one-third in merchandize, and the reſt in proviſions and articles of domeſtic uſe. I accepted this mark of generoſity; and as the meſſage was delivered in writing, I returned my anſwer in the ſame manner, taking care to uſe every expreſſion ſuitable to the extent of my gratitude.

After the departure of Mr. Caſimir I waited upon the governor to dinner, and obtained his permiſſion to give the propoſed entertainment at the town-houſe. It was fixed on the 15th, becauſe the governor was deſirous of ſetting out on his journey on the 16th.

When dinner was ended, the chancellor came in, together with the hettman. They conferred a ſhort time with the governor in his cloſet, after which I was ſent for, and was informed that the liberty of Caſarinow was granted, on condition that he ſhould immediately go to the Kurelles iſlands, and remain there two years, which was a ſufficient time to repair his loſs; for theſe gentlemen were not at all diſpoſed to reſtore his fortune. The governor charged

Digitized by Google

charged me with the meſſage, which I immediately executed. Upon entering the priſon, I ſaw this unhappy man at my feet, intreating my forgiveneſs for having attempted to take away my life. I interrupted his lamentations, by demanding what reaſon he could have to hope for favour from me? He replied, by conjuring me to have pity on him, and pardon him on account of his unfortunate family. At length, however, being deſirous of removing his apprehenſions, I propoſed to him the conditions under which I believed I could deliver him from impriſonment. Theſe he accepted with profeſſions of eternal gratitude, and at laſt, when he was told that I had obtained permiſſion for him to go to the Kurelles iſlands, he aſſured me that a ſingle year would be ſufficient to re-eſtabliſh his fortune. Whereupon I declared that he ſhould be ſet at liberty as ſoon as the veſſels were ready to convey him there. This information tranſported him with joy. He embraced my feet, and uſed all the expreſſions of the moſt lively ſentiments of gratitude.

Being thus aſſured of Caſarinow's readineſs to accept the terms propoſed, I quitted him to render an account to the governor, who was delighted with his compliance, and ordered the chancellor to expedite him, with the ſerjeant Cuſmina, to the Kurelles iſlands. I perceived that the governor was deſirous of converſing in private with the chancellor and the hettman, and therefore took my leave. As I paſſed through the town I called on the family of Caſarinow, and informed them of the favour the governor had granted him. I naturally expected acknowledgment

Digitized by Google

and thanks: but my heart was not proof against the ſurprize of beholding a family at my feet, who called me their protector and benefactor. Ivan Gloni, who ſince the affair of Caſarinow called no more upon me, came likewiſe to embrace me, and addreſſed himſelf in the following words: "Liſten, my friend. I was informed of your attempt as well as Caſarinow, and conſequently I had as great a right to be your enemy as he. We were partners in the accuſation intended to be made againſt you, but I was not an accomplice in the attempt to poiſon you. The misfortune which afterwards happened to my relation cauſed me to ſwear your deſtruction. Your generoſity to him has reconciled me, and I not only ſwear to keep all I know in ſecrecy, but I likewiſe devote myſelf to your ſervice in every thing you may require me to do."

This explanation aſtoniſhed me, but I ſaid no more, in anſwer, than that I hoped his gratitude would be ſhewn in forgetting all that had paſſed. Upon my return I related the incidents of the day to my companions, who rejoiced at the happy ſituation of our affairs.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XIII.

PREPARATIONS FOR MARRIAGE. SINGULAR PRELIMINARY CUSTOM. PRECAUTIONS FOR PRESERVING SECRECY AND SECURING THE PROGRESS OF THE UNDERTAKING OF THE EXILES DURING THE COUNT'S ABSENCE. GRAND PROJECTS FOR CREATING GOVERNMENTS AND EMPIRES IN THE NORTH. AN ENTERTAINMENT ON THE OCCASION OF THE FREEDOM OF THE EXILES.

ON the 11th, Madame Nilow ſent to deſire me to wait upon her, and informed me, that ſhe wiſhed her daughter might do the honours of the entertainment of the 15th, and that ſhe ſhould be publickly declared my future ſpouſe. As I could find no proper excuſe, I conſented to her requeſt, upon which ſhe cauſed her daughter to be called, and recommended her to be careful that the buſineſs of the day ſhould be conducted in ſuch a manner as to do her honour.

After the departure of her mother, my pretended future ſpouſe reproached me for being more attached to the ſociety of my companions than her's; and I anſwered her preſſing remonſtrances by promiſing to wait upon her as frequently as poſſible.

About noon, being engaged to dine with the governor, who now called me by no other name than ſon, he requeſted me to compoſe a ſhort deſcription of Kamchatka, in a form proper for the preſs; as he was deſirous of exhibiting proofs of his abilities. I promiſed to write the work according to his ideas, and engaged to finiſh it during our journey. He expreſſed his ſatisfaction

as

at this promiſe, and embraced me, ſaying, that he hoped by this work to obtain the government of Ochoczk. After dinner he informed me in confidence, that the affair of Caſarinow had been worth eighteen thouſand roubles to him; but that the raſcal would be well repleniſhed by the voyage he was going to make.

In the evening, the governor being invited to ſup with Ivan Cſorni, I accompanied him with my intended lady. Mr. Proſcurakow engaged me to play at cheſs, and a very ſtrong party was formed. The chancellor and the hettman were on my ſide; and Proſcurakow, Ottlaſkow, and Ribnikow, were on the oppoſite ſide. The game was for five hundred roubles ready money, twenty dozen martins ſkins, twelve beavers, and twelve black foxes ſkins. After a long conteſt I won the game, as well as three others following. Our play detained us till three in the morning, and my ſhare of the winnings amounted to near eight hundred roubles.

The governor took a pleaſure in looking on, and I did not quit the company till about four in the morning, when I attended him to his houſe, where I offered to take my leave, but was detained on pretence of the danger of accidents. But great was my ſurprize, when the governor's lady introduced me into the chamber of Miſs Aphanaſia, where ſhe took her leave, ſaying, I hope you will be prudent; but as it is proper you ſhould be accuſtomed to live together, I thought you could not be better lodged than with my daughters; with theſe words ſhe retired, wiſhing me a good night. Aſtoniſhed as I was at this ſpeech and manner of proceeding, ſo contrary to the cuſtoms of Europe, I had ample matter to form ſyſtems,

Digitized by Google

ſyſtems, but my charming companion did not permit me to employ my thoughts on meditations of this kind. She had ſo much to ſay and I to anſwer, that we paſſed the time without thinking of ſleep, and I did not leave her company till eight in the morning.

When I returned home, I found Mr. Cruſtiew and my other friends very uneaſy at my abſence; but their apprehenſions diſappeared as ſoon as they ſaw me. The fatigue of the foregoing day required that I ſhould take ſome repoſe. I therefore retired to ſleep, after reminding Mr. Cruſtiew of his having undertaken that every preparation ſhould be regularly made for the 15th. When I awoke at five in the evening, I had the pleaſure to ſee my pretended future ſpouſe beſide me, who expreſſed the moſt lively apprehenſions for my health, and declared that ſhe would not quit me; for which purpoſe ſhe had already ſent to her mother to inform her, that ſhe had found me indiſpoſed, and was reſolved to ſit up with me. It was to no purpoſe for me to repreſent that her attachment to me might injure her in the opinion of her father, for ſhe perſiſted in her reſolution; and during the diſcuſſion of this point between us, Madame Nilow's maid arrived and brought word that her miſtreſs approved the determination of her daughter, and for that reaſon had ſent her ſervant and her bed; after which meſſage, and the uſual enquiries concerning my health, the ſervant returned. This day paſſed without any unfavourable incident.

On the 13th, I conducted my pretended future ſpouſe to the governor's, and was received in the moſt affectionate manner. The governor took me into his cloſet, begged

ged me to come in future every morning for an hour, to read the reports and letters which he received, in order to make a regular ſtatement of their contents, and draw out the anſwers or orders. As his deſire was a command to me, I endeavoured to perform this taſk with zeal, and to the utmoſt of my abilities; after which I took my leave, as I was deſirous of paſſing the day with my companions, in order to regulate certain arrangements neceſſary to ſecure our correſpondence during my journey.

When I returned home I was complimented by my companions, who preſented me with a complete and magnificent habit of red ſattin, edged with gold lace and faced with ſables, with a pair of buſkins very curiouſly embroidered; at the ſame time requeſting that I would wear it on the 15th. After this prelude, which was attended with every teſtimony of friendſhip and regard, I appointed a general meeting to be held after dinner. I exhorted my aſſociates of the committee to be more particularly careful than ever to preſerve our ſecret, as the leaſt indiſcretion would ruin us all. I did not conceal from them my fears reſpecting my abſence, for which reaſon I deſired them to make an oath of obedience, without reſtriction, to the orders of Mr. Cruſtiew, and to do nothing without his conſent: And as I was deſirous of maintaining a regular correſpondence with Mr. Cruſtiew, I requeſted them to appoint me three companions of the ordinary number, who might pretend to be hired by me; in order, that in caſe of any misfortune or unlucky incident, I might not be unſupported, but might avail myſelf of their ſervices to ſend notice to the other aſſociates in time, if any treacherous diſcovery

ſhould

Digitized by Google

ſhould come to light. In conſequence of my propoſal it was determined that Ivan Kudin, George Lapkin, and Nicholas Rubatow, ſhould follow me, each having a ſledge and being well armed, and attended by a native on whom he could depend. Mr. Panow added, that he did not think this precaution ſufficient, but was deſirous that ſeveral of the ſociety ſhould offer their ſervices to the governor to hire ſledges and to conduct them themſelves for his ſecurity and convenience. Mr. Panow's propoſition was agreed to, and Mr. Kuznezow undertook to propoſe this affair to the governor. So that as the attendants of Mr. Kuznezow would conſiſt of ſix ſledges, I ſhould by that means have an addition of twelve armed men, which, together with myſelf and the ſix others, amounted to nineteen, a ſufficient number to withſtand the firſt check. This precaution being ſettled, we paſſed that day and the following evening in an agreeable manner.

On the morning of the 14th Mr. Hettman came to ſee me, and intreated me to perſuade the governor to ſend him to Peterſburg in the ſpring, and ſupport his requeſt, that her Imperial Majeſty would permit him to form an eſtabliſhment in the Aleuthes iſlands, under himſelf as governor. The ambition of this perſonage was well known to me, though I could not avoid ſmiling, in my own mind, at the enthuſiaſm of the man, who, with very little abilities, was deſirous to become a legiſlator. Nevertheleſs, as his friendſhip and good will were neceſſary to me, I promiſed to obtain the governor's conſent to his requeſt, and engaged to draw up a memorial, on the part of the governor, in ſupport of his propoſal. My com-

Digitized by Google

plaiſance led him to profeſs the ſtrongeſt attachment to me, to which he added a promiſe, that on his return I ſhould be inveſted with the government of Kamchatka, while my future father-in-law ſhould be eſtabliſhed at Ochoczk. According to his ideas, our triumvirate was to be unalterable; but as the chancellor was left out of the plan, I propoſed to this new governor to confer upon him the government of Kamchatka; obſerving that I ſhould be contented to attend him to the Aleuthes iſlands in the quality of ſecond, where I might be of the greateſt ſervice to him in the conqueſt of California, a project which ſtood foremoſt in the imagination of Mr. Hettman.

The tone of conviction which I uſed in ſaying this to the hettman, encouraged him to give full ſcope to his imagination; and the remainder of the converſation clearly proved the extravagance of his ideas, for I could eaſily perceive that it was with ſome reluctance that he retained the idea of a ſtate of dependence, while he had it in his power to become a ſovereign.

After his departure, I communicated the ſubject of his viſit to my companions, and could not avoid reflecting how little the Ruſſian ſenate, by whoſe decree I was ſent into exile, were aware of the projects which then employed my mind, and more eſpecially the ideas to which I gave birth, of eſtabliſhing empires, and robbing the Spaniards of their remote poſſeſſions by arranging this chimerical project in writing. Nevertheleſs it led me to the probability, that at ſome future time California might be taken by the Ruſſians, and that the Spaniſh co'onies might, ſooner or later, become their prey.

About

Digitized by Google

About noon I waited on the governor, and gave him an account of the project of the hettman, with ſo many reaſons in its favour, that he declared himſelf ſatisfied with it, ſeduced, no doubt, by the hope of obtaining the government of Ochoczk. After dinner, when the chancellor and hettman arrived, the propoſition of the latter was treated of at large, and I ſaw, with the greateſt ſatisfaction, that all theſe three perſonages adopted my plan, which they commiſſioned me to draw out. It therefore lay with me to create theſe three governors, to whom I accordingly promiſed the utmoſt exertions of my pen in their favour. This day gave me a decided ſuperiority at Kamchatka. Hitherto I had been uſeful to theſe three chiefs, but when they adopted a ſyſtem, the compoſition of which reſted with me, I became more than uſeful, for I was then indiſpenſably neceſſary to them. In the evening I retired to enquire concerning the preparations for our entertainment. Mr. Cruſtiew gave me an ample account, from which I was ſatisfied that every particular was arranged in the beſt manner.

On the 15th, at nine o'clock, all the exiles came to me, perfectly well and even richly clothed. We proceeded from my houſe to that of the governor, in twenty-three ſledges, each drawn by four dogs, where we were received affectionately. The chancellor and the hettman being preſent ſaved us the trouble of going to their houſes. The governor gave us a liſt of perſons whom he deſired to be admitted. I then detached ſeveral parties of my companions to invite the gueſts, while myſelf, with Mr. Cruſtiew and my intended ſpouſe, went to the town-houſe to give orders. We had eleven muſicians, and ſixty-ſeven

Digitized by Google

covers were ſerved up to thirty-five gentlemen and thirty-one ladies, for the young gentlemen and unmarried ladies were invited only to the dance, which followed the entertainment. As the hettman had lent me three peices of artillery, we fired them off on the arrival of the governor's family. At two o'clock the company ſat down to table, and did not riſe till five, at which hour the younger part of the company began the dances, which laſted till three. Mr. Kuzneczow inſinuated himſelf ſo well into the favour of the governor, that his company, and the offer of ſix ſledges to carry the governor's effects and equipages, were accepted of. He immediately informed me of his ſucceſs; for which I embraced and thanked him with all my heart.

When the governor retired, he told me he would defer his journey till the 17th, as he was deſirous of a day's repoſe after this entertainment; a reſolution which was very agreeable to me, as I myſelf felt the ſame neceſſity for an interval of reſt.

When the company broke up, Madame Nilow preſented her youngeſt daughter, and declared her my future ſpouſe. This attracted compliments from all ſides, with a degree of jealouſy from ſome of the merchants and young officers.

When I had ſeen the governor home, as I excuſed myſelf from remaining at his houſe, Miſs Nilow accompanied me home, to look to my health, as ſhe ſaid; and I paſſed the whole of the 16th within doors, till the evening, about ſix o'clock, when I conducted my intended lady home, and received the orders of the governor, who placed the whole care of his voyage and the buſineſs of a ſecretary upon me. Our attendants were

to

Digitized by Google

to consist of nineteen sledges and forty-six persons, and our departure was settled at six in the morning of the 17th. Plate II. exhibits a view of the sledge drawn by dogs.

CHAP. XIV.

A JOURNAL OF AN EXCURSION MADE BY THE GOVERNOR OF BOLSOREZKY OSTROGG, IN COMPANY WITH THE COUNT DE BENYOWSKY.

THE following is a journal of our travels. On the 17th in the morning, about ten o'clock, we quitted Bolsorezky Ostrogg, and arrived at Molerowka, at which place the tajon, being informed of our arrival, regaled us with fish and cavear, and made the governor a present of several furs. The weather was severe and frosty, with an easterly wind in our faces.

On the 18th we left Molerowka, and proceeded to Baniowka, where we were received and entertained by exiles, who likewise made the governor a valuable present of furs.

On the 19th we left Baniowka, and the river of the same name, and, after much labour and fatigue, we arrived at Hereboſtova. Here the tajon of Koanik complained to the governor, that a soldier of the garrison of Verchney Ostrogg, after having violated his daughter, had slain

Digitized by Google

ſlain her. In conſequence of this accuſation, which was proved, the governor directed me to expedite an order to Verchney Oſtrogg, that the ſaid ſoldier ſhould ſuffer the knout until he died.

On the 20th we arrived at Chiakollautka, almoſt martyred by the impetuoſity of the wind, and very near being ſwallowed up by the drifts of ſnow. We had ſcarcely entered the jourt of the tajon before it blew a perfect hurricane, and in the morning we found our dwelling buried under the ſnow. The country people exerted themſelves to open a paſſage through the ſnow, in order to get out. Being deſirous of taking a view of the country, I aſcended through the hole; but it was impoſſible to diſcover the leaſt ſigns of any houſe, though I knew that our attendants were lodged in nine different adjacent jourts. The continuance of the hurricane, which conſiderably augmented the quantity of ſnow about us, compelled us to remain here till the 25th.

On the 26th in the morning we departed, and towards evening arrived at Valowka, where we found certain exiles, whoſe occupation conſiſted in making ſalt in the bay of Avatcha.

On the 27th I accompanied the governor to viſit this famous bay. It is a noble baſon, into which I obſerved that a large river and three others emptied themſelves, though the Ruſſians affirm the contrary. We afterwards proceeded to viſit a ſtore-houſe ſituated to the northward of the bay.

On the 28th our attendants joined us, and we paſſed near the lake of Nataſchova, and arrived at Katchoun, where the governor received very conſiderable preſents.

Here

Digitized by Google

Here we were joined by the hettman and the chancellor, whoſe company ſerved to enliven our converſation.

On the 29th we paſſed near another lake named Kimak, and proceeded to Alzime. On the 30th we left Alzime, and arrived at Tahallka, where the governor determined to reſt. The tajon, who was one of the moſt conſiderable in the province, did not fail to regale us with rein deers fleſh, the fruit of larac, * and Jukola, which is a kind of fiſh dried.

On the 2d of February we proceeded to Kronotowa, where I was deſirous of ſeeing the head land of Kronock, which lay to the eaſtward of us, while the lake of Kronock lay to the weſt; but the governor oppoſed my deſign, by aſſuring me that the road was not cleared, and I might probably be buried in the ſnow. On the 3d we proceeded to Katham, from which place I ſent to Niſney Conratiew, to adviſe my companions of our arrival, and to direct them to bring a preſent of their fineſt furs for the governor, the chancellor, and the hettman. On the 4th we arrived through a very bad road, over mountains and precipices, to Chovalova, where we found Mr. Norin, commanding officer at Niſney, together with the principal merchants, waiting for us; who informed the governor that conſiderable preſents were prepared for his arrival in town.

On the 5th, after having paſſed the river Kamerath, a part of the exiles preſented themſelves before the governor, to whom they announced their intention of making preſents, and afterwards joined our ſuite. On the ſame day, about ſix in the evening, we arrived at the town or village of Verchney, where the governor alighted at the habitation

* This word is obſcure in the manuſcript.

Digitized by Google

tion of the protopop, and I lodged with him; but the others fixed their lodging with the town's people. On the 6th I received orders to forward all the preſents to Bolſha, and, from a moderate eſtimation, I found that the governor's journey to Niſney had been worth near ſeven thouſand roubles to him.

We remained in this town till the 13th; and as the ſeverity of the cold did not allow me to make any excurſions, I employed my time in drawing up a deſcription of Kamchatka, in order to promote the deſigns of the governor. My work was interrupted only by the game of cheſs, which was eagerly ſtudied by every one who was deſirous of diſtinguiſhing himſelf from the common rank of people. My winnings at this game amounted to near thirteen thouſand roubles, in furs and ready money, which the chancellor and the hettman ſhared with me.

On the 13th we reached the village of Kamenin, where all my projects would have been overthrown, if a lucky accident had not averted this moſt imminent danger. On the 14th, in the morning, I came out to direct Mr. Kuzneczow to ſend an expreſs to our aſſociates at Bolſha, to adviſe them of our return. As ſoon as I came out I was accoſted by a native, who requeſted to be introduced to the governor, as he ſaid he had a letter for him from an exile who had been taken ill, and was by that means prevented from waiting on the governor himſelf. I ordered this man to follow me, and went with him to Kuzneczow, where, after opening the letter, I ſaw it contained an account of the ſecrets of our union, from one of the aſſociates named Levantiew. This man came

Digitized by Google

came from Niſney to join the governor, and make his report in perſon; but, happily for our cauſe, a violent cholic ſeized him in the middle of his journey, and forced him to adopt the expedient of ſending a letter to the governor. Upon this information I ordered Kuzneczow to depart immediately with Ivan Kudrin, and diſpatch the traitor. I then rejoined the governor, with whom I breakfaſted, after which we proceeded on our journey.

We arrived at Kolitova, where I requeſted the governor to remain, on pretence of viſiting the volcano of Kraſnaia. He conſented, and on the 15th we proceeded to view this famous volcano. I approached within five toiſes of its mouth, where a ſudden exhalation of ſulphureous fume ſurprized me, and cauſed me to fall backwards among the hot aſhes, which burnt my face. But, fortunately for me, there were ſeveral natives of Kamchatka near at hand, who were provided with iron hooks, with which they dragged me out, and, after having rubbed the burned parts with whale oil, they reconducted me to Kolitova, where I found Mr. Kuzneczow returned from his expedition. He reported, that Levontiew had declared his reſolution to his couſin at Niſney, who, not being able to diſſuade him from it, had poiſoned him in a glaſs of brandy, which they drank together; and that, on the arrival of Kuzneczow, this unhappy wretch was at the point of death. He confeſſed his intention to Kuzneczow, and entreated, as a favour, that he would put him out of his miſery, at the ſame time that he declared the ſociety had nothing more to fear, ſince his letter was intercepted; becauſe he had diſcovered his intention to no one but his couſin, who,

Digitized by Google

faithful to his engagement, had poiſoned him. This account gave me great ſatisfaction, and induced me to preſs the governor to return; but, as he was determined firſt to viſit Tigilb, nothing could be done but follow him.

On the 16th we arrived at Napana, where I met a foreign exile whoſe acquaintance I immediately requeſted, and was not a little ſurprized to behold a man of the age of ninety-two years in perfect health. He told me his name was Ehrenſchild, a Swediſh colonel, who had been exiled forty-nine years before into Siberia, and had dwelt at Kamchatka for twenty-two years. I propoſed to him to join us at Bolſha, to which he conſented, and for which purpoſe I obtained the governor's permiſſion, but this unfortunate perſon died a ſhort time after.

On the 17th we arrived at Chippin, where we found the jourts forſaken. On the 18th we arrived at Voloſka, which was likewiſe deſerted, and on the 19th we at laſt arrived at Tigilb, a town and fort, which I ſhall hereafter deſcribe. At this place the governor remained three days, and received conſiderable preſents. On the 22d we proceeded from thence to Galiny. On the 23d we arrived at Belozolova, and on the 24th at Sigican. On the 25th we reached Takout, from whence the governor ſent the chancellor and the hettman the next day to Verchney Oſtrogg to inſpect the military, while he himſelf, with his attendants, continued his journey towards Bolſha.

On the 27th we arrived at Ivanka, and laſtly, on the 28th, at Bolſheretzkoy Oſtrogg, where I was received by my friends with that cordiality which can only be found in a ſociety united by indiſſoluble intereſts. The fatigue

Digitized by Google

fatigue of my journey did not allow me to proceed in copying out the work I had written for the governor, which, for that reaſon, was not preſented till ſome days after; and as it may convey ſome information reſpecting this remote part of the world, I ſhall inſert it in this place.

CHAP. XV.

AN ABRIDGEMENT OF THE HISTORY AND DESCRIPTION OF KAMCHATKA.

THE peninſula of Kamchatka forms the north-eaſt extremity of Aſia, extending from the 62d to the 51ſt degree of north latitude. The weſtern coaſt of Kamchatka is very ſinuous, forming many harbours, and is interſected by many rivers, among which Bolſha is the largeſt. Veſſels from Ochoczk enter this river, which, however, they cannot do with ſafety but at the time of ſpring tides, which riſe between nine and eleven feet. It is difficult to go up this river on account of it's rapid ſtream and the great number of iſlands it contains.

Kamchatka, by offering an aſylum for our navigators during winter, engages them in the purſuit of diſcoveries. At the preſent time it is merely a place of rendezvous, and ſtorehouſe for the exchange of rich furs, brought by the hunters from the Kurelles and Aleuthes iſlands; but

Digitized by Google

in caſe the ſovereign ſhould think proper to eſtabliſh colonies in thoſe iſlands, and cultivate a trade with China, Japan, Korea, and Idzo, Kamchatka would become a ſource of great riches and proſperity to the Ruſſian empire.

This peninſula may likewiſe ſerve to eſtabliſh a communication between the two continents of Aſia and America. The only commodious port on the eaſtern coaſt is the bay of Avatcha, named Racova. The governor of Kamchatka has built a regular fortreſs, capable of defending its entrance.

The inhabitants of the torrid zone are indebted to the ſun for the art of producing fire, but the northern nations owe this to volcanos. I apprehend theſe phænomena to be an effect of the central heat of the earth, which burſts forth, and that the ſea may contribute to the phænomena by a fermentation, engendered by the ſaline parts of the waters, filtrated through the earth. Without entering into conjectures reſpecting the origin of volcanos, I muſt take notice that there are more than twenty in the peninſula of Kamchatka; of theſe, the three moſt celebrated are at Avatcha, Tolbatſchz, and the third near the river of Kameralteria. The ſame principles which have given riſe to volcanos have produced a great number of hot ſprings, which have been found to poſſeſs the efficacy of mineral waters. The water which flows from theſe ſprings is covered with a black ſcum, ſome of which I collected, and found it perfectly adapted for uſe as India or China ink.

With regard to the fertility of the ſoil of Kamchatka, after having made many remarks and obſervations, I cannot avoid

Digitized by Google

avoid contradicting the different accounts which have been delivered at the chancery. All the attempts which have been made to produce grain have been unſucceſsful, except on ground prepared by manure. Though ſome wood is naturally produced, ſufficient for the conſtruction of huts, there is none proper to be uſed in the building of ſhipping. In this reſpect I can contradict Mr. Steller, who likewiſe reports, that this country abounds in herbage, and that the cattle are of a prodigious ſize. If there had been any cattle at Kamchatka in his time their number ought to have increaſed till the year 1771, in which I made the tour of the place; and throughout the whole of Kamchatka I found only five cows and two bulls, which were fed with the bark of birch nine months in the year, for there is no verdure except between the months of July and September.

Neither is the climate and the air of Kamchatka ſo mild as many writers pretend. A continual miſt, which covers the whole country, produces ſcorbutic diſorders and other illneſſes, which check population. The cold is ſo extreme that ſeveral ſoldiers were found, during the late winters, frozen on their ſtands. The long duration of the ſnow likewiſe occaſions blindneſs, inſomuch that the natives of the country ſeldom exceed forty years of age before they become blind.

Kamchatka produces metals. Near Avatſet I found iron ores, and near Girova the ore of copper. The mountains afford rock chryſtal, ſome ſpecimens of which are green and reddiſh; the natives of the country uſe it to make heads for their javelins. The only kind of trees which grow in Kamchatka are a ſpecies of baſtard fir, cedars,

Digitized by Google

cedars, willows, and birch; the cedar affords a grain which the natives are very fond of: the bark of the willows and the birch ſerves them inſtead of bread. The only uſeful plant in this country is the ſarana, which flowers, and affords fruit in the month of Auguſt. The natives of Kamchatka make a large proviſion of this ſubſtance, which, together with cavear, forms a certain paſte, which they think delicious, but upon which I think I never could ſupport life. Beſides the ſarana, government has cauſed another plant to be collected, under the name of Vinovaya, from which a kind of brandy is diſtilled, which produces a moderate revenue, but is hurtful in its uſe, as nothing can equal the poiſon of this plant. The governor would act very prudently by prohibiting this diſtillation, and importing a larger quantity of brandy from Europe.

Kamchatka makes no great figure with reſpect to animals. The firſt rank belongs to the dog, which ſerves inſtead of draught horſes, and, after it's death, affords a ſkin for the clothing of man. The dogs of Kamchatka are large, but active and laborious; they are fed with opana, which is a compoſition of ſtale fiſh and the bark of the birch, but they are moſt commonly obliged to ſeek their own food, which they find in the rivers produced by the hot ſprings, where they find fiſh.

The fox comes next after the dog; its ſkin is gloſſy, and there is no fur in Siberia which can be put in competition with the fox's ſkin of Kamchatka.

The ram of Kamchatka is excellent food; its ſkin is highly valued, and its horns are likewiſe an article of commerce;

Digitized by Google

commerce; but of late years the number of this ſpecies has greatly diminiſhed.

The ſable is very common in Kamchatka, and the natives continually hunt this animal, as do likewiſe the hunters. The number of ſables brought to market laſt year from Kamchatka amounted to ſix thouſand eight hundred.

The fur of the marmotte is very warm and light.

Bears are very numerous in Kamchatka; their diſpoſition is gentle, and they do no miſchief, except in their own defence. The hunters are obliged to hunt the bear for ſubſiſtence, but it often happens that they get torn, though the bear very ſeldom kills a man. It ſeems as if this animal ſpared the life of the creature it no longer fears: they have never been known to hurt women. Theſe creatures are fat during the ſummer and lean in winter.

Amphibious Animals.

The manate reſembles a cow in the form of its head. The females have two nipples, and hold their young againſt their boſoms. The French have named this animal lamenti, from its cry. It has a black rough ſkin, as thick as the bark of an oak, and capable of reſiſting the ſtroke of an hatchet. The teeth of the manate are preferred to ivory. Kamchatka affords annually of theſe between two hundred and fifty and three hundred. The fleſh of the manate reſembles beef when full grown, and veal when young.

Kamchatka likewiſe affords beavers. The fur of this creature is as ſoft as down; its teeth are ſmall and ſharp, but

Digitized by Google

but its tail ſhort, flat and broad, terminating in a point. Beavers are catched here with the line, and ſometimes they are ſhot under the ice.

The ſea-lion is of the ſize of an ox; its cry is dreadful; but, happily for navigators, it is one of the ſigns of the vicinity of land during the fogs, which are ſo common here. The ſea-lion is a timid animal; it is ſtruck with the harpoon, or ſhot with the muſket, or bow and arrow.

The ſea-calf is found in great abundance near all the iſlands and headlands of Kamchatka; it never goes far from ſhore, but enters the mouths of rivers to devour fiſh. The ſkin of the ſea-calf is uſed to make buſkins. The inhabitants of Kamchatka take this animal with the line.

Kamchatka affords a large quantity of different kinds of fiſh, from the whale to the ſmalleſt ſpecies, but the birds of this country are few; and as I know of nothing new with reſpect to either, I ſhall here conclude this article.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XVI.

AN ACCOUNT OF THE NATIVES OF KAMCHATKA, THEIR ORIGIN, FOOD, HABITATIONS, RELIGION, ETC. THE NARRATIVE OF THE PROCEEDINGS OF THE EXILES RESUMED. PREPARATIONS FOR WAR. THE CONSTITUTION OF THE SOCIETY OF EXILES ALTERED. CONSEQUENCE THENCE ARISING.

THE original people of Kamchatka call themſelves Itelmen, which word denotes inhabitants of the country. If we were to attempt to diſcuſs their origin from the conſtruction of their language, we ſhould declare them to be deſcendants of the Mongal tartars: their figure reſembles that people; their hair is black, their beard is thin, and their face broad and flat. This nation poſſeſſes no tradition reſpecting its origin: it was numerous at the arrival of the firſt Coſſacks, but has ſince greatly diminiſhed.

The natives of Kamchatka have no other ſubſiſtence than fiſh, roots, bear's fleſh, and the bark of trees, with water to drink, and ſometimes brandy, for which they pay very dear to the merchants.

Though this people is at preſent cloathed, for which advantage they are indebted to the Europeans, it has coſt them dear, when placed in the balance againſt the barbarous and tyrannical treatment they have experienced from their new maſters. Their women are exceedingly diſpoſed to luxury, to ſuch a degree, that they do not perform the offices of the kitchen without their gloves on; and they would not, on any account, ſuffer them-

Digitized by Google

ſelves to be ſeen by a ſtranger without their gloves and rouge, which they ſmear in large quantities upon their hideous countenances. Theſe people dwell in two kinds of houſes; their winter habitation is called yourth, and that of the ſummer balagan.

The whole religion of the natives of Kamchatka conſiſts in the belief that their God, having formerly dwelled in Kamchatka, fixed his habitation upon the banks of each river ſeveral years, and peopled thoſe places with his children, to whom before his diſappearance to eſtabliſh himſelf elſewhere, he gave the circumambient country for an inheritance. For this reaſon they never quit a domain ſo ancient and unalienable.

The ſenſations of this people are merely corporeal. Happineſs, in their opinion, conſiſts in idleneſs, and the gratification of the natural appetites. It is impoſſible to perſuade them that any mode of life can be more happy or more agreable than theirs, and they always conſider the manner of living in Ruſſia as worthy of their utmoſt contempt and diſdain.

The inhabitants of Kamchatka have a peculiar cuſtom in contracting marriages; but as this uſage is deſcribed in the memoir of Spamberg, I ſhall not repeat in thisit place. Every intimacy between the ſexes is allowed of, and, according to the principles of the Kamchatka nation, a plurality of wives is allowed; but the Ruſſian government forbids poligamy, in which reſpect perhaps it tends to depopulate this country.

It is difficult to conceive what reaſons could lead ſo wretched a people, who have nothing either to loſe or to gain, to enter into war. But it is very certain that they are

Digitized by Google

are ſtrongly addicted to revenge. The object of their wars can be only that of making priſoners, to employ the men in work, and ſubject the women to their pleaſures. There is no doubt, however, but that the Coſſacks on their arrival excited troubles and differences among them, in order to profit by their inteſtine wars. The conqueſt of this nation has been a very difficult taſk to the Coſſacks, for, though feeble in its wretchedneſs, it has ſhewn itſelf terrible in its defence. They have availed themſelves of ſtratagem and treachery when force was unſucceſsful; and if it be true that this nation is baſe, yet the fear of death prevails ſo little among them, that ſuicide is very common. There are inſtances of theſe people being beſieged by the Coſſacks in a place of retreat, and, when deſtitute of all hope of eſcape, they have firſt cut the throats of their wives and children, and afterwards killed themſelves. The uſe of muchomor is convenient for this purpoſe, as a doſe of it cauſes them to die by a profound ſleep, which deprives them of all ſenſation. The muchomor is a kind of champignon, very common in this country; the infuſion of which cauſes drunkenneſs and hilarity, but, if uſed to exceſs, produces ſtrong convulſions, which terminate in death.

After I had preſented my abridgment of the hiſtory of Kamchatka to the governor, who found it a maſter-piece in his opinion, excepting that the expreſſions were not ſufficiently free from a foreign manner, I applied all my attention to contrive ſuch meaſures and precautions as might inſure the ſucceſs of my plan. The two inſtances of treachery I had experienced made me very uneaſy; and as I had to do with people who were governed by

Digitized by Google

the prejudice of religion, I could not take too much precaution to ſecure myſelf. In conſequence of this, I convened all my aſſociates on the 1ſt of March, about ſix in the evening. I opened the committee by giving an account of my voyage and the death of Levontiew, after which I declared that it appeared neceſſary, in my opinion, that we ſhould ſummon all thoſe who were abſent, in order that we might be ready to defend ourſelves, or to make an attack in caſe of neceſſity.

Mr. Meder informed the committee that he had prepared one hundred cartouch boxes, each containing forty-eight full cartridges, and ſixty other charges faſtened to each; and that Mr. Cruſtiew had collected, or cauſed to be made, ſixty knives, which might be uſed to advantage inſtead of cutlaſſes, as each of them was eighteen inches long and three broad: that ſixteen pair of piſtols and thirty-ſix hatchets had been purchaſed; and that Mr. Panow had cauſed one hundred pikes to be made.

The number of our company amounted to fifty-nine perſons, every one of whom appeared fully determined to ſupport each other. I therefore aſſured my companions that when we had united our forces we ſhould be able to reſiſt every open attack, provided we were all together. For this reaſon I ordered Mr. Panow to ſend an immediate expreſs to thoſe that were abſent. The approach of ſpring permitted our coming together without exciting any ſuſpicion; becauſe the governor and all the inhabitants of Kamchatka were perſuaded that our attention was taken up in preparations for our eſtabliſhment on the extremity of the peninſula.

In

Digitized by Google

In order to give more ſtrength to this general opinion, I propoſed to the ſociety that we ſhould draw up a memorial, and preſent it to the governor, in which we ſhould pray him to grant us a ſhip to tranſport all our proviſions and effects.

The meeting was on the point of breaking up, when Mr. Panow made a motion. He began by obſerving that the indiſcretion of one ſingle perſon would be ſufficient to deſtroy all our hopes; for which reaſon he held it to be of the laſt neceſſity to reſolve in this committee that the aſſociation ſhould give up all authority into my hands, in order that, after having given ſo many proofs of my attachment to their intereſts, I might in future be diſpenſed from communicating my intentions reſpecting the meaſures I propoſed to take, and the means which I intended to employ in carrying my plan into execution. He therefore propoſed that the whole ſociety ſhould agree to ſubmit implicitly to my orders, and to ratify this ſubmiſſion by an oath. He obſerved, that when the ſociety had thus granted me the ſupreme authority, it would depend upon myſelf to nominate my council and the chiefs who might be propoſed to the parties I ſhould hereafter form.

Mr. Stephanow oppoſed this motion; but it was agreed to by the ſociety, ſo that Mr. Stephanow remained alone. In order to diſſipate his confuſion, I declared that I would nominate him a member of my council, becauſe, as he was the only one who miſtruſted my intentions, he might ſuperintend my actions. The meeting, however, oppoſed his nomination, at the inſtance of Mr. Panow, who declared that Stephanow had rendered himſelf incapable

Digitized by Google

capable of any confidence on our part, and that it was merely with a view of excluding him from our ſecrets that he had made his propoſition. For he could not, as he obſerved, conceal that he was in poſſeſſion of indications of treachery meditated on the part of Mr. Stephanow, though he had never choſen to ſearch to the bottom of his intrigues, becauſe he was deſirous of ſparing the life and honour of his relation. But he threatened, that if Mr. Stephanow did not conſent to receive and ſubmit to the future orders, till the day of our departure, he ſhould hold himſelf obliged to employ every means in his power to come at the knowledge of his proceedings, and to expoſe him to the company.

I was extremely aſtoniſhed to hear Mr. Panow expreſs himſelf in this manner, in the preſence of Mr. Stephanow, who did not anſwer a ſingle word. The company, equally ſurprized, requeſted me to force Mr. Panow to declare what he knew; but I refuſed, by obſerving, that I reſpected the ſentiments of Mr. Panow, and placed the moſt unbounded confidence in his declaration. Nevertheleſs I aſked Mr. Stephanow, whether he would receive and obey the orders; to which he anſwered in the affirmative, at the ſame time that he loaded me with invectives, and declared that I was indebted to Mr. Panow for the preſervation of my life. He called his relation to witneſs, that he had no wiſh to betray the intereſts of the ſociety, and that his vengeance had no other object in view than myſelf perſonally; a loſs which, he ſaid, was of little conſequence, as he was well aſſured that many of the company were more capable of executing the appointment of chief than myſelf. He even took upon him to declare, that

I had

Digitized by Google

I had abuſed my authority in putting Levontiew to death, in which affair his couſin had been deceived; though the truth was, that I was deſirous of uſurping his fortune after his death. This confident aſſertion excited the indignation of Mr. Kuzneczow, who preſented the letter of the deceaſed to the ſociety. The hand-writing was immediately known, and the contents juſtified my reſolution. This circumſtance, however, produced no change in the ideas of Stephanow, who demanded the judgment of God between him and myſelf. This judgment is founded on a cuſtom of the Coſſacks, which eſtabliſhes that the two opponents ſhall fight a duel, in preſence of witneſſes, and the perſon overcome is eſteemed guilty.

His ridiculous appeal produced a diviſion in the meeting. The moſt rational part were of opinion that it was neceſſary to interpoſe their authority, and condemn Stephanow; but the reſt heſitated. Upon this diviſion I thought it proper to anſwer for myſelf, being aſſured that it was of the greateſt conſequence that I ſhould give proofs of reſolution. I therefore replied that I accepted his challenge, and appointed ten o'clock the following day to give him ſatisfaction, at the diſtance of two leagues from our habitation.

The aſſociates agreed to accompany us, under pretence of hunting. This incident occaſioned the final termination of Mr. Panow's propoſition to be retarded. He thought proper, nevertheleſs, to keep Mr. Stephanow in ſight, and to endeavour to pacify him; but finding it impoſſible to produce any alteration in his diſpoſition, as he himſelf told me, he abandoned him to his unhappy fate.

On

Digitized by Google

On the 2d in the morning I ordered my ſledge to be harneſſed, and departed with Meſſrs. Cruſtiew and Kuznec-zow for the rendezvous. Mr. Panow attended his relation, and at nine o'clock the whole company were met, and determined that the quarrel ſhould be decided with the broad ſword. As ſoon as we had received our arms he advanced towards me with unexampled temerity. I parried the firſt ſtroke he made, by engaging his ſword, which broke in two; at which inſtant I ſtepped back to let him ſee that I was not diſpoſed to take advantage of his being diſarmed. The wretch then drew out a piſtol, and fired it at me, without any other effect except that the ball grazed my left arm. His treachery irritated me to ſuch a degree that I advanced towards him, though I ſaw a ſecond piſtol in his hand, which, however, miſſed fire. I then ſeized him and threw him on the ground. The aſſociates immediately came up, and urged me to put him to death. This, however, I refuſed. I put him into their hands, requeſting that they would ſpare the life of this wretched perſon; but my requeſt did not prevent their inſulting and ill treating him on all ſides.

Mr. Panow took charge of him, and we returned to our habitations, where I appointed a meeting of the committee at ſix in the evening; and in the mean time I viſited the governor, with whom I dined. Our diſcourſe ran upon the projects of Mr. Hettman. I omitted nothing to confirm the governor in the hope of poſſeſſing the government of Ochoczk. After dinner Madame Nilow called me aſide, and informed me that her daughter preſſed her reſpecting the concluſion of our marriage, and conſequently that it depended on me to perſuade her to

Digitized by Google

to wait the moment fixed for our union; but that if I conſented ſhe would undertake to diſpoſe her huſband to agree to the celebration of our union.

Being thus obliged to gain time, I had no other means of excuſe than to urge my intention of firſt making an excurſion to fix my new colony, and to build a houſe, and arrange my houſehold affairs, that her daughter might not be expoſed to the rigour of the ſeaſon, without every neceſſary convenience. After a long converſation this good mother adopted my reaſons, and pleaded my cauſe with her daughter, to whom ſhe introduced me; but as ſhe ſoon after left us, the whole charge fell upon me, and it was with difficulty that I prevailed on this amiable young lady to conſent to the delay.

CHAP. XVII.

VARIOUS PROCEEDINGS IN THE ASSOCIATION FOR PROJECTING THE ESCAPE OF THE EXILES FROM SLAVERY.

AT ſix in the evening, I repaired to our meeting, where Mr. Cruſtiew preſided in my abſence. He addreſſed me in the name of the whole company, which granted me the entire authority and moſt abſolute command over the ſociety. I accepted their ſubmiſſion, which was confirmed by mutual oath. After this ceremony, I required Mr. Panow to declare the motives which had determined Mr. Stephanow to attempt my

Digitized by Google

life; he at firſt begged me not to preſs him in this reſpect, as he obſerved that he had given his word and oath to the unfortunate Stephanow, though he would not conceal that, in a long converſation with him ſince his laſt accident, he had obtained his permiſſion to diſcover the cauſes that had produced his enmity towards me.

My friends all declared unanimouſly that it was neceſſary the wretch ſhould himſelf appear, whereupon Kuzneczow immediately went out to fetch him. This unhappy man appeared before us, not only without the leaſt confuſion, but with a degree of audacity by which he appeared to dare me. I made a ſign to Mr. Cruſtiew, who queſtioned him concerning the diſpoſition of his mind, and the cauſes which had produced his extreme malice againſt me. His anſwer was to the following effect.

" Ever ſince I firſt knew your chief, I found it im-
" poſſible to forgive that ſuperiority which he has aſſumed
" over us all. My jealouſy was often outrageous, but the
" confidence he repoſed in me uſually reſtored my recol-
" lection, and I have often applauded my own reſolution
" in overcoming my natural diſpoſition, which led me to
" offend. I had even perſuaded myſelf that I poſſeſſed
" the moſt unſhaken attachment to him, when I was
" ſurprized by jealouſy. I beheld the lovely daughter
" of the governor, I became enamoured of her, and the
" certain knowledge of her approaching marriage with
" your chief, cauſed me to ſwear his deſtruction. You
" know the reſt, gentlemen, and I here proteſt, that
" though his generoſity has preſerved my life, it has
" made no change in my intentions. If, therefore, it be

" of

" of any conſequence to you to preſerve his life, do not " ſpare mine."

Several members of the ſociety repreſented his folly and baſeneſs to him, but his anſwers only ſhewed that his mind was in a ſtate of deſperation. His ſituation, nevertheleſs, affected me, and I addreſſed myſelf to him in a mild and friendly manner, aſſuring him that I harboured no reſentment againſt him, though he had juſt reaſons to blame himſelf for the little confidence he repoſed in me, before he made a determination to engage in ſo baſe an attempt againſt my ſafety. I acquainted him that it was very true I had an eſteem for the governor's daughter, and had reaſons to think myſelf the object of her affection; but that I did not intend to marry her, and conſequently his deſpair was premature. I then called the whole company to witneſs the truth of my aſſertions; whereupon the unhappy Stephanow fell at my feet, begged a thouſand pardons, and entreated me to forget all that had paſſed. I promiſed the moſt abſolute compliance with this requeſt, on condition that he would inviolably ſubmit to the orders of the ſociety; and with a view to make ſure of him, I nominated three aſſociates to attend him and watch his motions. After I had thus received the ſatisfaction of recalling this man to his ſenſes, I adjourned the committee till nine o'clock.

On the 3d, Mr. Panow waited upon me in the morning, to thank me for the goodneſs I had ſhewn to his unhappy friend, at the ſame time that, in his name, he requeſted permiſſion to ſee me. I conſented, the more willingly, as I could depend upon the rectitude of Mr. Panow. Stephanow arrived about ten o'clock, and en-

Digitized by Google

treated me to confirm the promiſe that I did not intend to marry the governor's daughter, which I did with the utmoſt earneſtneſs; upon which he begged, that at the inſtant of my departure I would permit him to carry her off. Compaſſion for the man's unhappy ſituation, as well as the neceſſity of ſaving myſelf from the exceſs of his deſpair, induced me to promiſe, after adviſing him to be patient, that I would uſe every means to ſatisfy his wiſhes, as far as their accompliſhment might agree with the inclinations of the young lady. This promiſe contented the poor man, who then returned to his confinement. Mr. Panow, after his departure, embraced me cordially, with many thanks for the pains I took to reſtore the peace of mind of his relation. The reſt of the day was employed in compoſing the order of ſervice for my companions, that every one might perform his taſk with propriety. In the evening the hettman came with ſeveral merchants to loſe ſome games at cheſs, which happened to his wiſh, and produced no ſmall profit; for his winnings did not amount to leſs than two thouſand five hundred roubles that night.

On the 4th, I received a letter from Niſney Oſtrogg, from one of the aſſociates, named Loginow, who adviſed that three exiles from Verchney Oſtrogg had reſolved to wait upon me, in order to be admitted into our ſociety, though he was aſſured that their deſign was to regain their liberty by betraying me. He expreſſed his ſuſpicions that theſe three exiles had been informed of our deſign by the late Levontiew, and concluded his letter by informing me that himſelf and Sibaew had reſolved to return very ſoon, with all the other aſſociates.

On

Digitized by Google

On the 5th, I convened a meeting to draw up a petition to the governor, requesting a vessel for the carriage of our utensils and effects to Lopattka, in order that we might form our establishment. After this business was dispatched, I informed them of the approaching arrival of our companions from Nisney Ostrogg, and the project of the three exiles of Verchney. With regard to the last affair, we resolved that we would confess to them that it was very true we had formed a design to escape from the tyranny under which we had suffered, but that since the governor had extended his protection to us, we had determined to form a new colony at Lopattka, and consequently we should propose to them to associate in our undertaking. I requested all the members of our society to converse with them agreeable to this arrangement.

Towards evening, a certain merchant, named Krasitnikow, arrived, and proposed to me to enter into a contract with him for the sole furnishing of our colony with supplies; on which account he promised to give credit for twelve thousand roubles. I replied, that this affair being a common concern to all the individuals who composed this new colony, I could not, for that reason, make any stipulation with him until I had first received their instructions, though I did not doubt their consent, on account of the great advantages the society would derive from such a credit. This poor merchant already devoured in imagination the great advantages which such an exclusion must produce. In hopes, therefore, of purchasing my good will, he drew a purse of two hundred roubles out of his pocket, which he pressed me to accept, and which I did not think proper to refuse, as it served the

the better to cover my intentions and confirm the public in the perſuaſion that a new colony was really about to be formed. With this view I likewiſe begged him to procure me ſome good carpenters and blackſmiths.

On the 6th, I was invited to ſpend the day with the hettman, who put a confuſed maſs of papers into my hands, containing his projects relative to the Aleuthes iſlands; from which he begged me to compoſe a memorial to be preſented to her Imperial Majeſty. The head of this man was filled with ſuch a numerous arrangement of chimerical projects, that it was with the utmoſt difficulty I could diſſuade him from the groſſeſt abſurdities in the foundation of his ſyſtem; and perhaps I ſhould not have ſucceeded, if the chancellor, who arrived during our conference, had not ſupported my reaſoning.

In the evening the governor's family arrived, who, at my requeſt, invited ſome of my companions, among whom was Mr. Stephanow. I had before found an opportunity to perſuade Miſs Aphanaſia to diſſemble her ſentiments towards him, which ſhe promiſed to do, and I could depend on her promiſe. In this manner we paſſed the evening very agreeably, and I had ſufficient leiſure to make my reflections on the weakneſs of the human mind, when I ſaw that the ſame Stephanow, who, a ſhort time before had uſed every effort for my deſtruction, was now continually loading me with the titles of his guardian angel and benefactor.

Upon our departure I accompanied the governor's lady home, at her own requeſt, where I learned the diſcourſe which had paſſed between Mr. Stephanow and Miſs Aphanaſia.

Digitized by Google

Aphanaſia. The amount was that Stephanow had declared his love in due form, and entreated her to accept him for her huſband. To this the lady anſwered, that as ſhe had not yet had a ſufficient opportunity to become acquainted with him, ſhe could not accede to his propoſal; but that ſhe hoped time would tend to advance his expectations. She aſſured him that ſhe had no averſion to his countenance, but that the accompliſhment of his hopes would, it was to be feared, find great obſtacles on the part of her parents, who expected a fortune to ſecure her future welfare; and, as Mr. Stephanow, being an exile, could have no poſſeſſions, the adjuſtment of that buſineſs would doubtleſs be very difficult. She further acquainted him that this greateſt obſtacle could only be removed by my protection, for which purpoſe ſhe recommended him to employ every means of cultivating my friendſhip. I thanked this amiable young lady for her goodneſs, while at the ſame time I felt the ſincereſt regret to behold myſelf the inſtrument of her future affliction, though her kindneſs and friendſhip baniſhed, for the moment, theſe afflicting thoughts from my mind.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XVIII.

THE EXILES IN DANGER OF TREACHERY. THEY ENDEAVOUR TO PROCURE A VESSEL, BUT WITHOUT SUCCESS. THEIR MILITARY ARRANGEMENT. FINAL PROJECT.

ON my return home Mr. Cruſtiew informed me of the arrival of Meſſrs. Ivaſkin, Voladimir, and Puſkarew, the three exiles concerning whom I had received information from Verchney. On the 7th in the morning I received a viſit from Mr. Stephanow, who fatigued me by his meanneſs. At ten o'clock Mr. Ivaſkin came to ſee me, together with his two companions. Their firſt converſation turned upon their ſufferings and their birth, which they finiſhed by compliments, and the obſervation that they had lived long enough in the world to be ready to ſubmit to the commands of ſo enlightened a chief as myſelf, at the ſame time that they declared the intention for which they had come ſo far; namely, to be in readineſs to ſacrifice their lives to promote my intereſt. I thanked them for their compliment, but declared, that as I was equally wretched with themſelves, it was out of my power to ſerve them in any other way than by mitigating, in ſome meaſure, the hardſhips of their ſituation, for which purpoſe, in caſe they choſe to aſſociate with us to form our new colony, I would readily ſhare with them the advantages which our labour and induſtry might procure. This reply had a very ſtriking effect upon their countenances. Mr. Ivaſkin replied that they had formed very different hopes, as they had heard from

Digitized by Google

from ſome of their intimate friends that I had reſolved to purſue a plan to ſet the exiles at liberty; the hope of co-operating in which had been the ſole motive of their application to me. Upon this declaration I aſſured them, that it was true that the unhappy ſtate of ſlavery in which I found myſelf, as well as the ſufferings of ſuch a number of brave men, had led me, at firſt, to the determination of running all riſks to procure our liberty, but that ſince government had granted us ſuch diſtinguiſhed marks of protection, and had given us the means of procuring an eaſy and comfortable ſituation, I had changed my reſolution, and had perſuaded all my companions to relinquiſh theirs; in conſequence of which they had reſolved to aſſiſt in my labours. I continued to diſplay to them, at full length, the advantages that might be expected to reſult from our enterprize; and I gave ſo flattering an account of the hopes I had conceived of it's ſucceſs, that they were entirely convinced of it's reality.

Several of our companions entered ſoon after, and the converſation turned entirely upon the means I had adopted to render our eſtabliſhment ſucceſsful. I took this opportunity of aſking Mr. Ivaſkin for his determination, who replied, that the thing required mature examination, and could not be decided in an inſtant; but Meſſrs. Puſkarew and Voladimir declared that they would unite themſelves to us without reſerve, and at the ſame time proceeded to ſay, in the preſence of Mr. Ivaſkin, that as for him, they were determined to have no further connection with one who had formed the villainous project of obtaining his pardon by betraying a number of brave men. They declared that they had undertaken

Digitized by Google

the journey with him, expreſſly with the intention of fruſtrating his deſign, in caſe our views had been to eſcape from Kamchatka, and proceeded to relate the whole of Ivaſkin's project, who finding himſelf diſcovered, began to intreat for pardon. I ſaid no more to him in reply, than that the idea alone of ſo vile an undertaking convinced me that he could not eſcape diſgrace and puniſhment, though, with reſpect to myſelf, as my conduct had been ſuch as to fear no reproaches, I would conſent to pardon him, on condition that he never again appeared in my ſight.

After his departure, as I did not think it prudent to expoſe myſelf to the enterprizes of ſo baſe a wretch, I immediately waited on the chancellor, and acquainted him with Ivaſkin's attempt. This account enraged the chancellor to ſuch a degree, that he immediately went to the governor, and obtained an order to diſpatch Ivaſkin to Verchney, with an injunction never to return again to Bolſha. Thus ended the attempt of this inſidious wretch. My companions congratulated me on its happy iſſue; but I required them to diſcover none of our views or intentions to our new aſſociates, becauſe I was deſirous firſt of gaining a knowledge of their real intentions before we ſhould communicate any particulars of information to them.

On the 8th I convened the chiefs of our ſociety, and went in a body with them to the chancery to preſent our petition, which the governor cauſed to be read. The deciſion of the council was, that, as government could not furniſh us with a veſſel, we ſhould be ſupplied by baydars, which are large boats. In conſequence of which reſolution, a ſufficient number of theſe boats were ordered

to

Digitized by Google

to be delivered to us, which, by making ſeveral trips along the ſhore, might render us ſervices equally eſſential with thoſe of a larger veſſel. To prevent delay the governor ordered them to be immediately delivered, and at the ſame time he cauſed the conceſſion of the land of Lopattka to be given into my hands, together with the permiſſion to begin my operations as ſoon as I thought proper.

This reſolution, ſo unfavourable to our intereſts, deſtroyed our hope of poſſeſſing a veſſel in our own power. I therefore aſſembled a committee, in which, after conſiderable diſcuſſion, it was determined, that we ſhould poſtpone our departure, under various pretences, till we could ſeize a proper opportunity of gaining poſſeſſion of an armed veſſel by main force, and by that means making our eſcape. And, in order that the execution of this project might not be left entirely to accidental events, we appointed the 12th for a ſecret committee, the members of which were immediately nominated, and were as follow: Myſelf, Preſident; Mr. Cruſtiew, Mr. Kuzneczow, Mr. Baturin, Mr. Panow, Mr. Gourceſinin, and Mr. Wynbladth.

On the 12th Sibaew and Loginow arrived from Niſney-Oſtrogg with twelve other aſſociates. I dined this day with the governor, and after dinner Madame Nilow acquainted me that ſhe deſigned to cauſe a complete houſe to be conſtructed in wood, that it might be carried to the ſpot where I might eſtabliſh the principal place of my new colony. She aſſured me, that I need not give myſelf any uneaſineſs concerning the arrangement of my houſehold affairs, as ſhe was determined to take

Digitized by Google

charge of the whole; for ſhe declared her intention, that my marriage with her daughter ſhould be celebrated in the month of May at fartheſt. This delay removed the apprehenſions I had began to entertain. I thanked her with all my heart for the care ſhe had the goodneſs to take of my future eſtabliſhment, and paſſed the reſt of the day in the company of this worthy family. It was very late before I returned home, where I found a letter from Mr. Norin, commanding officer at Niſney, which was brought by Sibeaw. This officer had forwarded to me a quantity of furs, in payment for the ſum I had lent him. He felicitated me on my poſſeſſion of the favour of the governor, and my approaching marriage, and concluded his letter by requeſting my protection.

On the 10th I conferred with the different perſons appointed to form the committee of the 12th, and the reſt of the day was employed in attending to our arms and ammunition.

On the 11th the private meeting was held by adjournment, to appoint the order of ſervice, in caſe we ſhould be obliged to act by main force. It was ſettled as follows in three diviſions.

The left wing, commanded by Mr. Wynbladth.

Mr. Kuzneczow,
Stephanow,
Sibeaw,
Bielſky,
Lopcſow,
With thirteen aſſociates.

The

Digitized by Google

The center, Myſelf, chief.
Mr. Panow,
Ruimin,
Meder,
Srebernicow,
Loginon,
Baturin,
With fourteen aſſociates.

The right wing, commanded by Mr. Cruſtiew.
Archidiacre Protopop,
The Prince Zadzkoy,
Brandorp,
Novozilow,
Lapkin,
Volkow,
With twelve aſſociates.

With regard to Meſſrs. Puſkarew and Voladimir, as well as Iſmaelow and Bayarew, who had been before propoſed by Mr. Stephanow, we determined to communicate no part of our intentions to them 'till after the expedition. On the ſame day it was determined, that all the arms ſhould be carried into our hall of meeting, where they ſhould be kept charged, and in order to conceal them from view, an alcove ſhould be erected for that purpoſe.

On the 12th, at eight in the morning, the committee met, wherein I propoſed to conſult reſpecting an expedient to procure a ſuitable veſſel, in which we might effect our eſcape as ſoon as the port ſhould be open by the thawing of the ice. Mr. Wybladth propoſed to embrace the opportunity, when a veſſel ſhould be on the point of ſailing,

Digitized by Google

ſailing, as the captain uſually gives an entertainment the evening before, at which a part of our ſociety might introduce themſelves with a quantity of poiſoned liquors, which might be adminiſtered before the cloſe of the night, ſo that about midnight it would be eaſy to get poſſeſſion of the veſſel; after which, on a ſignal being given, the whole aſſociation might go on board, and force the crew to ſet ſail without the leaſt oppoſition. His advice was rejected.

Mr. Gourcſinin was of opinion, that we might make our eſcape with our boats, in which we might paſs from one of the Kurelles iſlands to another, and thence to Japan, where we might meet with Dutch veſſels, and gain a paſſage to Europe. His advice was not approved of. The difficulty of navigating theſe boats in the open ſea was attended with evident danger of ſeparation; beſides which, in order to arrive at the eſtabliſhment of the Dutch at Nangaſaky, it would be neceſſary to ſail round Japan, which was impracticable.

Mr Panow declared that he would not preſume to make any propoſal on account of his ignorance in ſea affairs, but referred intirely to me for information.

Mr. Baturin propoſed to give the governor an entertainment on the pretended occaſion of our approaching departure to Lopattka, to which we might invite all the principals of the town; and that in the middle of the night, we ſhould ſeize and keep them as hoſtages until government conſented to deliver a veſſel to us. This propoſition was likewiſe rejected, becauſe complicated in the execution; for as the garriſon amounted to two hundred and forty ſoldiers, a number greatly ſuperior to ours,

it

Digitized by Google

it would always be in their power to force us to set the persons at liberty, whom we might have seized; besides which, as there were near seven hundred Cossacks in the town, it was not probable that so considerable a number of armed men would not interest themselves in a quarrel of this nature. Lastly, a difficulty equally insurmountable arose from the officers of the marine in the port, who might collect their sailors belonging to nine or eleven vessels then in the harbour, and render our escape impossible.

Messrs. Kuzneczow and Crustiew pressed for my opinion, which I stated by representing to the commitee the inconveniencies annexed to the execution of the projects before proposed. I convinced them that every attempt by main force would be impracticable, and therefore not to be made, unless called for by the pressing situation of events. I avowed my readiness to sacrifice my life; but, at the same time, expressed my opinion that our affairs were not so desperate as that we should leave every thing to chance. I informed them that my wish was to take advantage of the departure of the packet St. Peter and St. Paul, which would be ready on the 15th of May, and was manned by only twenty-two sailors, with five or six passengers. It was therefore my desire, that ten or twelve of our associates should engage as sailors on board this vessel, and that Mr. Kuzneczow, being a merchant, might agree with the captain for his passage, by which means it would be easy to engage the captain by promises and money to receive several bales of furs secretly in the night, on pretence of evading the duties. This arrangement would require the captain to sail out of the harbour

Digitized by Google

bour in the evening, when it would be eaſy for us to board the veſſel by the aſſiſtance of our boats, in which caſe we ſhould find ourſelves maſters of the veſſel without any effuſion of blood, as our number would exceed that of the crew four to one; after which we might ſend back the ſailors and officers in our boats, and continue our voyage.

The end of our debate was, that my propoſition was unanimouſly approved, and the committee charged Mr. Kuzneczow to ſelect twelve aſſociates, and procure them to be entered on board that veſſel. In the evening the whole ſociety aſſembled, and received the agreeable news that the meaſures for carrying our enterprize into execution were abſolutely ſettled, without endangering the life or ſafety of any one. This declaration ſet every mind at eaſe. After which I acquainted the ſociety that I thought it neceſſary to make a journey to Lopattka, in order to fix the public opinion reſpecting the eſtabliſhment of our colony. The meeting approved my propoſition, whereupon I nominated Meſſrs. Stephanow, Panow, Wynbladth, and ſix others, to accompany me.

On the 13th, I acquainted the governor, and alſo the chancellor and the hettman, with my intentions. The governor gave directions for ſupplying me with an order, that all the tajons, or chiefs of the villages of Kamchatka, ſhould afford me the ſame aſſiſtance as would have been given to himſelf. Madame Nilow promiſed me proviſions for the journey. The reſt of the day was employed in preparing our ſledges and refreſhing the dogs.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XIX.

A JOURNEY TO LOPATTKA. SIBERIAN SORCERY. RETURN TO BOLSHA.

ON the 14th, at ſeven in the morning, I departed with four ſledges; we ſtopped at the governor's houſe to breakfaſt and take our leave. The governor's ſon and Miſs Aphanaſia, accompanied us as far as Nichilova, where we dined with the tajon, and afterwards parted. I continued my route as far as Tſekawka, where we ſlept at the houſe of the tajon. Here we found a ſchaman, who called himſelf a ſorcerer, and who, according to the opinion of the natives, had dealings with the devil. I was deſirous of being a witneſs of the manners of theſe impoſtors, and therefore preſſed the tajon to bring the ſchaman to me, that he might tell my fortune: the tajon accordingly uſed his endeavours to perſuade him to gratify my expectations; and a preſent of ſix roubles ſecured his compliance. Here follows an account of the manner in which the ſorcerers of Kamchatka exhibit their artifices:

He firſt cauſed all the women to go out of the yourth, after which he ſtripped himſelf entirely naked, and waſhed his whole body with his own urine. He then clothed himſelf in a long garment made of dogs ſkins, tanned; upon his head he placed a capuchin with two horns, and laſtly he faſtened a drum to his belt. Thus equipped he placed himſelf in the center of the yourth, turned round once, cried out, *kutti*, *kutui*, *kutuchta*, and drew a bottle out of his

Digitized by Google

budget, part of the contents of which he drank. He then threw himſelf on the ground, where he remained motionleſs for ten or fifteen minutes. At the expiration of this time he began to howl and cry, and ſoon after got up and beat the drum with all his might, and without any intermiſſion, except at intervals to give more efficacy to his howlings. His motions were ſo violent that he ſcreamed out with all his force, and at laſt, his mouth, eyes, and all his limbs, became convulſed in a manner truly ſhocking to behold. When an hour had thus paſſed, during which he made every imaginable contortion, the ſchaman ſat down on the ground, and began his prophecy with a hoarſe and feeble voice. The following is what he ſaid, word for word: "Thou art come to demand thy fate of "my ſpirit; he will ſecond thy efforts to avenge the "death of the ſpirits of our fathers whom the Ruſſians "have cut off. It is Kutuchta who is with thee. Thou "ſhalt behold the blood of thine enemies, thou ſhalt be "happy in thy voyage; but afterwards, when thou ſhalt "ſpill blood and thine own ſhall flow, thou ſhalt be "dear to the ſpirits of our fathers." After theſe words he fell aſleep, and the tajon cauſed him to be carried into a ſeparate yourth.

Upon my enquiry reſpecting the liquor this pretended ſorcerer had drank, the tajon informed me that it was an infuſion of muchomor, a kind of champignon, which has the power of intoxicating. He aſſured me that its force was ſuch, that the ſchaman ſometimes ſlept three or four days after it; whence I concluded that the muchomor produced effects ſimilar to thoſe of opium. As ſoon as this curious, though by no means

Digitized by Google

means agreeable entertainment was over, I went to bed and slept comfortably.

On the 15th, we arrived at Kurinka, a village composed of eight yourths, where we staid till a storm was over, which every instant threatened to bury us beneath the snow.

On the 16th, we arrived at Compak, a village situated at the foot of the mountain Opala. The tajon of this place presented me with several pieces of copper ore, and some pieces of lapis lazuli.

On the 17th, I slept at Ozernaia, a village situated on the banks of a river of the same name, which flows into the lake Kurille.

On the 18th, we arrived at Tontina, a village of the Kurilles; the tajon received us cordially, and promised to accompany us in examining the whole country of Lopattka; but as we arrived very late and were greatly fatigued, we deferred the business to a future day.

On the 19th, the tajon presented his family to us, and made us an offer of his vessels to double the cape; for he assured us that the eastern part of Lopattka was more fertile than that which he inhabited; but as I had determined to conduct myself in such a manner as to convince government that I really designed to establish a colony, I proposed to travel inland towards the lake Kuil, and therefore requested the tajon to provide me with a guide. He offered his own services, and that of his sons; we therefore departed at nine in the morning, and arrived very late in the evening on the banks of the lake, after which we travelled to the eastward along its banks, and

Digitized by Google

arrived at an habitation of the Kuilles, where we paſſed the night.

On the 20th, we directed our courſe toward the head of a ſmall river which falls into the lake, and is nearly in the midway between cape Lopattka, and the lake itſelf. Here we had the good fortune to find a very agreeable plain; but as it was ſtill covered with ſnow, I could not form any judgment reſpecting the ſoil. For this reaſon I contented myſelf with erecting ſeveral piquets, to denote the ſituation of the future town, and then I drew a plan of the place, with the intention of more effectually ſecuring the good opinion of the governor and other principal inhabitants. From this place we departed directly for Tontina, where we arrived in the evening.

On the morning of the 21ſt, after a ſhort repoſe, I requeſted the tajon to furniſh me with two Baydara, in which, with a gentle breeze at north-weſt, I ſailed round the cape in a very ſhort time. The iſland Schoumtſkoy being in ſight, I determined to land on its north-weſt ſide, where I paſſed the night, becauſe there was no wind, and I did not wiſh to fatigue the rowers.

On the 22d, I ſailed to the iſland Poromuſir; and as the wind began to draw round to the eaſtward, I determined to paſs over to the iſland Anfigonone, commonly called Alaide. We quitted Poromuſir at ten in the morning, and arrived at Alaide at three quarters after three, where we ſlept upon the ſnow, having no other bed than our bear's ſkins.

On the 23d, the beauty of the weather, with the wind in the ſouth-weſt quarter, tempted me to return to Bolſha by

Digitized by Google

by ſea; but as I had left my ſledges and equipage with the tajon of Tontina, I reſolved to ſend Mr. Panow thither in one of the boats, that he might return with our equipage to Bolſha. After his departure I ſet ſail at eleven in the morning, and ſailed north-eaſt a quarter north, with a ſtrong breeze, under which we made great way. About five in the evening we arrived at the entrance of Lopattka, where we got in with much difficulty, as we had the misfortune to run aground on the bar.

On the 24th, at four in the morning, we departed from Lopattka and ſailed along ſhore until we arrived at the port of Bolſha at three in the afternoon, and came to an anchor at Tchekawka, a bay at the entrance of the port; for the river being frozen, we could not proceed further by water. Hence I ſent to the tajon for ſledges, and after making ſome preſents to the Kurelles of Tontina, I departed for Bolſherezk, at which place I arrived on the 25th, at three in the morning.

My return ſurprized Mr. Cruſtiew, who informed me, that the governor's lady had ſent orders to the tajon of Niſchilow, to inform her of my arrival, as ſhe had determined to make a party of pleaſure to meet me. But the news which gave me the greateſt ſatisfaction was, that every thing was quiet, and no one any longer doubted the reality of our project. I then laid down to reſt; but as I intended to ſurprize the governor, by appearing before him and preſenting my plan, I gave orders to awake me at ſix in the morning, when I got up and ſketched out my plan, with the ſituations of our gardens, which, on the whole, made a very pretty appearance. I finiſhed my work

Digitized by Google

work at ten o'clock, and immediately waited upon the governor. The ſerjeant of the guard knew me at a diſtance, and carried the news to the governor and his whole family, whom I found on the draw-bridge. I was greatly affected at the manner in which they received me. The governor took me with him into his cloſet, and heard the account of my excurſion; but upon the ſight of my plan it was impoſſible to conceal his joy. He obſerved that the enterprize was really one of the moſt happy thoughts in the world, and ſaid he had not the leaſt doubt but her Imperial Majeſty would give marks of her ſatisfaction on receiving the plan, together with his repreſentation of the collateral circumſtances. Full of this project, he ſent for the chancellor and the hettman, to communicate his ideas to them; while in the mean time he ſent me to give an account of my abſence to his dear Aphanaſia. This beautiful and lovely young lady received me with thoſe tranſports which the candour and openneſs of her diſpoſition did not permit her to conceal, and her reſpectable mother bore a ſhare in her joy.

I was detained to dinner, and, during my ſtay, had no leiſure to reflect on the agitation of my mind. The different queſtions of the governor, the chancellor, and the hettman, which required proper anſwers, afforded ſufficient employment for my whole attention. But as ſoon as dinner was over I retired, on pretence of taking ſome repoſe, but was very far from being capable. For, on my return home, I could no longer ſupport the anxiety which poſſeſſed my mind, and forced me to attend to an infinity of reflections that preſented themſelves. Every day brought the moment of the exe-

cution

Digitized by Google

cution of my enterprize nearer. Gratitude, and the attachment I had formed to the governor's family, ſeemed to reproach me; for I clearly ſaw that my departure would be attended with the ruin of him, and all his family, becauſe the court would attribute to him alone the crime of granting me the means of making my eſcape. Theſe reflections were ſtill further aggravated by the conſideration that our enterprize, though well planned, might fail, and, in that caſe, no other expedient would remain than to attack and gain poſſeſſion of the fort by ſurprize; an expedient which could not be carried into execution without riſking the blood of thoſe who had ſo greatly intereſted themſelves in my welfare. It was evident that the governor, who had given me his confidence, and had honoured me with his friendſhip, was intitled to my moſt grateful returns; but, on the other hand, as the chief of a party, I ſhould become perjured, and unworthy to live if I ſhould endanger or abandon the intereſts of the ſociety.

Such were my reflections, which I communicated to Mr. Cruſtiew, a man of underſtanding and a ſincere friend. After he had heard me, he embraced me, and aſſured me that, from the knowledge of my character, he had always been apprehenſive of this criſis; that he was infinitely obliged to me for the confidence I had placed in him, and would ſpeak his ſentiments with freedom. He admitted, that the court would impute my eſcape to the governor, if information ſhould be given reſpecting the advantages he had afforded me; but that the chancellor and the hettman, being likewiſe concerned, there could be no doubt but they would draw up their report

in.

Digitized by Google

in ſuch a manner that the court ſhould know nothing of what the governor had done in my favour. For this reaſon, he obſerved, that I might diſmiſs my apprehenſions; more eſpecially as my obligations to the governor could not be put in competition with my duty to the ſociety. Such, he ſaid, was his opinion with reſpect to our future eſcape; but in caſe we ſhould be obliged to act by open force, one or the other event muſt happen, either that we ſhould all be put to the ſword, or ſhould become maſters of the country. In which laſt caſe, it would be in my power to carry the governor with me by force, who, no doubt, would embrace this determination with pleaſure, with a view of eſcaping from puniſhment; and that, on our arrival in Europe, I ſhould find means to ſhew my gratitude to him and his whole family.

Theſe reaſons, weak as they were, ſerved to quiet my mind, and I perceived, that when the mind eaſily gives way to deſpair, it is as eaſily comforted. They who may read the preſent paſſage ought to beware of deciding either on my weakneſs or my fortitude. When Mr. Cruſtiew obſerved that my anxiety was removed, he propoſed to aſſemble a committee, which I appointed to to be held at eleven that evening.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XX.

A DANGEROUS DISTURBANCE AMONG THE EXILES. ITS CONSEQUENCE.

THE principal aſſociates met, and Mr. Kuzneczow informed me, that he had ſucceeded in placing ten hunters and two natives of Kamchatka, on whom he could rely, among the crew of the packet St. Peter and St. Paul, and that he had likewiſe agreed with the captain for his paſſage to Ochoczk, as well as reſpecting the embarking and private conveyance of his merchandizes. This account of the advanced ſtate of our affairs gave me the greateſt ſatisfaction.

On the 26th in the morning, I received an invitation for myſelf and friends from Madame Nilow, to attend her on an excurſion in our ſledges. We therefore waited on the governor, and ſet out with him and his family, accompanied by the chancellor and the hettman. At the diſtance of two leagues from the banks of the Bolſha, near its entrance, we ſtopped and examined ſome houſes, newly and very neatly built in wood. After this inſpection, the governeſs informed me, that they were deſigned for me and her daughter, obſerving, at the ſame time, that ſhe thought it became her, as a mother, to give us houſes and furniture, as her huſband had given us land. The governor, who was 'till this inſtant unacquainted with his lady's undertaking, highly approved it, and ordered the chancellor to direct workmen to finiſh the building. Mr. Stephanow, who was preſent, and

Digitized by Google

heard all that paſſed, could not avoid obſerving to Mr. Cruſtiew, that he ſaw very clearly that I deceived him, and ſhould deceive the whole ſociety, after which words he went off with his ſledge. Mr. Cruſtiew concealed this diſcourſe from me, and only ſaid, that he was obliged to go; immediately after which, he left us: ſo that I remained alone with Mr. Baturin, with whom I waited upon the governor home, and dined with his family.

After dinner, Mr. Sibeaw requeſted to ſpeak with me, and informed me that it was abſolutely neceſſary I ſhould go home, as Mr. Stephanow had produced a dangerous riot. I ſent him back with the aſſurance that I would come without delay; but as it was neceſſary that I ſhould give ſome reaſon to the governor for my haſty departure, I told him in public, that I was informed Mr. Stephanow had again fallen into a ſtate of phrenzy, which required my aſſiſtance. Miſs Aphanaſia ſaid openly, that ſhe knew his diſorder, and was convinced it was not at all dangerous. It was to no purpoſe that I made ſigns to her to deſiſt, as ſhe took no notice, but directing herſelf to me; You are going, ſaid ſhe, to intereſt yourſelf in favour of an unhappy wretch, who wiſhes to deprive you of life; upon which ſhe burſt into tears. Theſe words excited the governor's curioſity, who demanded an explanation; whereupon I gave him an undiſguiſed account of my adventure and combat with Stephanow, not omitting to obſerve, that his enmity aroſe from his paſſion for Miſs Aphanaſia. Upon this information, the governor deſired me to let him ſend him to priſon, where he would contrive to render him a little wiſer. I inſiſted, however, upon its being left in my power to impriſon him

Digitized by Google

him at home, and, at the ſame time, repreſented the neceſſity of this act of authority for maintaining ſubordination among thoſe who were deſtined to form the new colony. He therefore determined to grant me this right, and the chancellor added, that it was very proper that I ſhould be permitted to exert my authority. Seeing the governor in this diſpoſition, I requeſted the conceſſion of this power in writing, and accordingly the chancellor drew up an inſtrument, which the governor immediately ſigned.

Theſe tranſactions prevented me from returning home as ſoon as I ſhould otherwiſe have done. Upon my arrival, I found more than fifty ſoldiers or coſſacks round our habitations, diſputing with my companions. I was immediately informed that Mr. Stephanow, after a diſpute with Mr. Cruſtiew, had called a ſoldier, who was in ſight, and told him to run for aſſiſtance, for that otherwiſe I ſhould put him to death, and that he had ſecrets to reveal to the chancery. The ſoldier had collected others, and ſeveral coſſacks came to the aſſiſtance of Stephanow, who was already ſhut up by our companions. The ſoldiers inſiſted that he ſhould be ſet at liberty, and at laſt attempted to force their way into our habitations, ſo that our companions were obliged to take arms to check their impetuoſity. Upon this I enquired if any of the ſoldiers could read writing, and a corporal anſwered in the affirmative. I made this man read the conceſſion of right, ſigned by the governor and the chancellor; after which he begged my pardon, and intreated that I would not inform the governor of what had paſſed. I promiſed him I would not, and thus the diſturbance ended.

Digitized by Google

As ſoon as I came within doors, Mr. Cruſtiew informed me that he had luckily followed Mr. Stephanow, from a conviction that he was going to create ſome diſturbance; but that as he did not overtake him till his arrival at his houſe, he took Meſſrs. Kuzneczow and Gourcſinin to accompany him. They all three entered Mr. Stephanow's houſe, whom they found buſy writing. At ſight of them he flew out into exclamations and threatenings too dangerous to be heard by ſtrangers, and ended by declaring to them, that he would immediately go and diſcover the whole plot.

Theſe circumſtances evidently ſhewed how much this madman was to be feared. They attempted to ſeize him, but he proved ſtrong enough to overthrow Mr. Cruſtiew and Mr. Gourcſinin, and, in ſpite of the efforts of Mr. Baturin, who held him faſt, he had got out of the door, and excited the ſoldiers to aſſemble, in order to deliver him; for he told them, that the other exiles intended to poiſon him, and that he had ſecrets of treaſon to declare at the chancery. Mr. Cruſtiew proceeded to obſerve, that while the ſoldier ran to the town, they bound and gagged Stephanow, whom they ſhut up under guard; but a multitude being afterwards got together, and demanding the liberty of Stephanow, they ſaw themſelves neceſſitated to take arms, while Sibeaw ſtood over the priſoner, with orders to put him to death, at the firſt report of any fire arms.

This relation put me in fear for the life of the unhappy wretch, for which reaſon I made haſte to change the orders of Sibeaw; after which, fearing that the reports might reach the governor, I ſent Mr. Cruſtiew, with inſtructions to inform

Digitized by Google

inform him of what had paſſed, and then I gave orders to aſſemble the whole ſociety.

We only waited the return of Mr. Cruſtiew to begin our proceedings, who at laſt arrived, and brought the good news, that the governor left me entirely maſter of the priſoner and his puniſhment; but that with regard to the aſſembling of the ſoldiers and coſſacks, he would give orders that no perſon in future ſhould dare to approach our quarters with the intention of committing violence, under pain of fifty ſtrokes of the knout, and condemnation to the public works for three months.

This agreeable meſſage was delivered to me by Mr. Cruſtiew in the full meeting, and as ſoon as he had taken his ſeat, I demanded their advice how to act with regard to Stephanow. The greater part were for putting him to death, as a man capable of exceſſes which, ſooner or later, would endanger the ſociety; and inſiſted that it was better to ſave the lives of fifty-ſeven perſons by ſacrificing one ſingle perſon, eſpecially one who was a criminal. I could not, however, conſent to this reſolution, on account of my attachment for Mr. Panow, who was related to the priſoner, and was not then preſent. I therefore uſed every perſuaſion to induce them to defer the execution till his return; but the company appeared very unquiet, and preſſed me to paſs judgment upon him. I ſucceeded at laſt in calming their apprehenſions by a ſtratagem. I propoſed that Stephanow ſhould be brought before us, be reproached by the whole company, and that ſentence of death ſhould afterwards be paſſed on him; but inſtead of arſenic and corroſive ſublimate, I would only give him an emetic, the effects of which would lead him to believe

Digitized by Google

believe his death near at hand. I aſſured the meeting that I was convinced that this criſis would produce his reformation, and that the inſtant would decide his fate, and convince him that life or death would depend on his repentance or perſeverance in his criminal deſigns.

My propoſal had its effect on the company. I therefore ſent four armed aſſociates for the priſoner, and in the mean while the doſe of emetic was made up, conſiſting of three grains. On his arrival he appeared before us with ſome firmneſs, but at the ſight of the goblet on the table, he turned pale. Before any queſtion was propoſed to him the order of the governor was read, and as he knew his hand-writing it was ſhewn to him, that he might believe the evidence. After this preliminary, I repreſented to him that his firſt miſconduct indicated nothing more than malevolence againſt my perſon, and that therefore he had been pardoned; but the preſent caſe being of ſuch a nature as to endanger the whole ſociety, it was not in my power to change the laws of the conſtitution, and conſequently that I muſt deliver him to their judgment. Mr. Cruſtiew then diſplayed all his rhetoric to repreſent to this unhappy wretch his crimes, and his blindneſs to his own individual intereſt. His diſcourſe threw the miſerable Stephanow into tears, who confeſſed himſelf to be worthy of the greateſt puniſhment. After this, each of the company beſtowed ſome words of deteſtation on him, and as this ceremony laſted for ſome time, poor Stephanow fainted, and fell on the ground. By the application of ſpirit of ſal ammoniac and vinegar, he was brought to himſelf. During the time of his inſenſibility, Mr. Cruſtiew drew out the ſentence,

Digitized by Google

ſentence, to which he liſtened with the greateſt anguiſh, but at the laſt words, which were, "for theſe cauſes the "ſaid Stephanow is condemned to drink the liquor con- "tained in the bowl, in order that death may enſue," he fainted away a ſecond time. Upon his recovery he aſked to ſpeak with me, which being granted, he intreated me to pardon his faults, and to deliver him, if poſſible, from this fatal judgment, promiſing that his life and blood ſhould be employed in my ſervice. He then openly declared, that this misfortune was, no doubt, a puniſhment from the hand of GOD, whom he had offended by attempting to contract a marriage, though he was already married to a wife then living in Ruſſia. He proceeded to declare, that from that moment he abjured the madneſs of love, which had led him to the loſs of his life in ſo diſgraceful a manner. At length this unhappy man, being urged to drink the liquor, implored the grace and compaſſion of the company, but in vain, for they perſiſted in the execution of his judgment. Being thus convinced of the firmneſs of their reſolution, he at laſt took the cup in his hand, but upon bringing it to his mouth, his courage again failed him, and he fell back into the arms of Sibeaw and Baturin, who held the cup. On his recovery he wept bitterly, and again intreated the company to pardon him. The peculiar ſtate in which I beheld him, moved me to compaſſion; and as there was reaſon to fear that the drink, though ſimply an emetic, might deprive him of life through apprehenſion, I interpoſed to obtain his pardon, which was granted, on condition that he ſhould be kept a priſoner until our departure. He conſented to this; but, as he

was

Digitized by Google

was too much exhauſted, the company did not preſs him to ſign his ſubmiſſion. He had ſcarcely ſtrength enough to thank me in a few words for my protection before he fainted again. I cauſed him to be taken to Mr. Cruſtiew, where he was bled by Mr. Meder; but this precaution did not preſerve him from a violent illneſs, which ſeized him and kept him in his bed till the time of our departure. This incident having employed us almoſt the whole night, the meeting broke up a little before day.

On the 27th I awoke very late, and was, by that means, prevented from waiting upon the governor in the morning, as I had promiſed. Miſs Aphanaſia came to ſee me, and reproached me for my neglect. She breakfaſted with me and Mr. Cruſtiew; after which ſhe returned, happy in the information that I had nothing more to fear from Mr. Stephanow.

About noon, Mr. Panow came to me. This worthy aſſociate having been informed of the intereſt I had taken in the ſafety of his relation, fell on my neck, and thanked me for my indulgence. He afterwards told me, that he knew that Stephanow had meditated the carrying off the governor's daughter, and had for that purpoſe, connected himſelf with Iſmailow and Boſcarew, with ſix others, who were determined to quit Kamchatka, but that he had defered adviſing me of the plot, becauſe Iſmailow and Boſcarew had aſſured him, that they would not take any ſtep without informing him of it. Mr. Panow recommended theſe two men to me, as likely to be ſerviceable on board, on account of their knowledge in ſea affairs.

After

Digitized by Google

After dinner I went to Stephanow with Mr. Panow. This unhappy man related to him his laſt adventure, in which he did not ſpare every expreſſion ſuitable to the enormity of his crime. It was with ſome ſatisfaction that I was convinced of the ſincerity of his repentance. Mr. Panow did not fail to expreſs a due ſenſe of his conduct, and adviſed him to ſhew his gratitude to me in future. We ſoon retired, as we were not deſirous of increaſing his confuſion; after which we returned to my houſe we where ſpent the evening very agreeably.

CHAP. XXI.

THE COUNT NEGOCIATES WITH THE CAPTAIN OF A VESSEL. PREPARATIONS FOR THE APPROACHING CRISIS.

ON the morning of the 28th, Mr. Kuzneczow requeſted to ſpeak with me in ſecret, for which purpoſe I begged Meſſrs. Cruſtiew, Panow, and others, who were preſent, to retire. He then informed me, that Mr. Cſurin, commander of the Corvette St. Peter and St. Paul, had acquainted him, that he was unwilling to return to Ochoczk, becauſe of his debts, and for fear of the conſequences of a proceſs then againſt him in the Admiralty court, the iſſue of which, if it ſhould turn againſt him, might condemn him to the mines. He would not, therefore, conſent to make the voyage but on condition that Mr. Kuzneczow would find ſecurity to the

Digitized by Google

amount of three thouſand roubles, and would promiſe to obtain leave of the Admiralty that he might take the command of a merchant veſſel. Mr. Kuzneczow obſerved that this overture had entirely diſconcerted his project, as he could not depend on the compliance of another captain, in caſe Mr. Cſurin ſhould give up the command. This account at firſt alarmed me, but, upon ſerious reflection on the ſituation of Mr. Cſurin, I perceived ſome reaſon to hope that it would forward the project of gaining him over to my intereſts. I immediately communicated my ideas to Mr. Kuzneczow, who thought them very well founded; but he objected that Cſurin was ſo ſtrongly attached to a girl at Kamchatka, that he never would conſent to go without her: I removed this laſt difficulty, by obſerving that he might carry the girl with him, to which Mr. Kuzneczow could make no objection.

As it was my wiſh to become acquainted with the ſentiments of Mr. Cſurin by perſonal converſation, I directed Mr. Kuzneczow to bring him to me, and to promiſe, in general terms, that he would do every thing that might be neceſſary to render him the ſervices he required. When Mr. Kuzneczow was gone, I rejoined Mr Cruſtiew, who was in company with ſeveral of our aſſociates. I freely told them what I had heard, and the reſolution I had adopted; but I found them ſtrongly perſuaded that I ſhould not ſucceed in the attempt.

After dinner, Mr. Kuzneczow arrived, and informed me of the approaching viſit of Mr. Cſurin; I therefore went home and had juſt time to order tea before he came. He made a thouſand excuſes on his arrival for the liberty he had

Digitized by Google

had taken of waiting on me, and requeſted to know if I had any commiſſions for Ochoczk, as he, being the commander of the St. Peter and St. Paul, would gladly take charge of them, and I might depend on his diligence.

On this offer I replied, that as it was my intention to import ſome proviſions and other articles for the uſe of my colony, I would avail myſelf of his kind offer to put a couple of thouſand piaſtres, into his hands, that he might convert them into ſuch articles of merchandize as I ſhould direct. To this I added, that if it was in my power to render him any ſervices he need only ſpeak, as I knew the gentlemen of the ſea were obliged to engage in certain indirect buſineſs to enable them to ſupport the charges which were neceſſary to maintain their ſituation with credit. I hoped therefore that he would not be offended at the offer of a ſum for that purpoſe.

The open and undeſigning manner in which I made this offer, appeared to affect him, and his manner convinced me that I ſhould have no difficulty in ſettling my buſineſs with him. Our diſcourſe was interrupted by the appearance of tea, but we reſumed it as ſoon as the table was cleared. He began by informing me of the ſubject of the proceſs he had at the Admiralty, the cauſe of which was as follows.

Captain Lewaſcheff had commenced a proceſs againſt Mr. Cſurin, for exciting a mutiny among the crew of the ſhip St. Ecatherina, in the expedition of the year 1769. Several ſailors depoſed that Mr. Cſurin was the cauſe of the overſetting of the boat in the middle of the river Bolſha, in which captain Kreniczin then was; and, as the captain was drowned by this accident, the proceſs had been in-

Digitized by Google

ſtituted criminally againſt Cſurin. His explanation of the affair afforded ample matter to enable me to convince him that he would certainly be condemned. My reaſons appeared to be ſo well founded, that he declared he would pretend illueſs, in order to avoid commanding the veſſel. This deciſion reduced me to the neceſſity of forcing his ſecond retrenchment, which I did, by repreſenting that his delaying his departure would not ſave him; becauſe, doubtleſs, when the council ſaw that he was determined not to return, they would require the governor of Kamchatka to ſend him under guard, ſo that by this manœuvre, he would gain only a few months delay; after which the confuſion of his affairs would be ſtill greater than before. He admitted the truth of this remark, and entreated me to ſend him to my new colony, or, at leaſt, to favour his procuring a paſſage to the Aleuthes iſlands, where he would finiſh the reſt of his unfortunate life. As he ſaid theſe laſt words he burſt into tears, and ſaid, that he could give up his life and fortune without regret, but that his affection for a young perſon with whom he lived, was ſuch, that he could not bear the thoughts of leaving her.

After this confeſſion, he begged me to have pity on his ſituation, and grant him my protection and advice. I promiſed to reflect ſeriouſly on his affairs, but obſerved, that it would require ſome time to conſider maturely what was beſt to be done. I gave him my word, however, that I would clear him of his embarraſſment; but at the ſame time, as a previous condition, I inſiſted that he ſhould not mention his ſituation to any one, nor think of quitting the command of the veſſel. He ſwore

Digitized by Google

ſwore that he would comply with my directions, and thus we parted. But as I thought it neceſſary to intereſt his mind by ſome immediate advantages, I called him back, to put a bag of five hundred roubles into his hands, with the compliment, that I begged him to accept of this advance to purchaſe a preſent for his lady. He refuſed at firſt, but I forced him to accept the preſent by declaring, that, if he perſiſted in his refuſal, I ſhould not believe he was really attached to my intereſts. He therefore accepted my preſent, and I was delighted at having made ſo good a bargain.

On my return to Mr. Cruſtiew, I informed the ſociety of the good diſpoſition of my client, and they were not a little aſtoniſhed at the rapidity of my proceedings. In conſequence of which, they determined no more to oppoſe my deciſions in future, but wait, with patience and calmneſs, for the reſult. I aſſured them of my readineſs to perform my part, and promiſed to neglect nothing to ſecure the ſucceſs of my plan with the moſt ſcrupulous attention. I obſerved, that by this management, ſteadily adhered to, the moment of execution would be naturally eaſy, provided we were not forced to precipitate our meaſures, in conſequence of treachery from our own aſſociates, or a diſcovery on the part of government.

This laſt reflection induced Mr. Panow to requeſt that I would at leaſt communicate to the ſociety the plan I ſhould adopt, in caſe we ſhould be diſcovered or attacked when we leaſt expected it. To this poſitive queſtion I thought proper to anſwer, that my reſolution would depend on circumſtances, and the meaſures taken by Government; ſo that it was impoſſible, at this moment,

to

Digitized by Google

to fix my determination. But in the mean time I exhorted the ſociety not to be alarmed at the criſis, which might ſurprize us, but to confirm themſelves in the reſolution of dying with courage. I likewiſe added, that to prevent any ſurprize, I had ſecured means of receiving poſitive advice reſpecting every ſtep which Government might take againſt me; and that, provided we could have one night before-hand, I would anſwer for the poſſeſſion of the fort and garriſon; after which I was convinced the town could not hold out, becauſe it ſtood expoſed in every part to the cannon of the fortreſs.

This anſwer ſatisfied Mr. Panow; but it gave riſe to a longer conference, wherein every one ſpoke his thoughts, and the whole ſociety unanimouſly repeated their profeſſions of ſtrict obedience at the critical moment.

I left the company, and proceeded to paſs the evening at the governor's houſe, where I was received like one of the family; and, after paſſing the evening very agreeably, I returned home about midnight.

On 29th I was buſied with Mr. Meder, in making three petards, to be uſed in caſe circumſtances ſhould require the gates of the fortreſs or the chancery to be forced open. During this work I reflected on the buſineſs of Mr. Cſurin, and digeſted my plan; for which reaſon I ſent to deſire to ſee him in the evening. Before dinner I viſited Mr. Stephanow, whoſe fever had increaſed the preceding day. I found him tolerably eaſy. He made many apologies for his attempts againſt my perſon, and appeared to repent ſincerely of what he had done. I therefore endeavoured to raiſe his ſpirits, by aſſuring him,

Digitized by Google

him, that it would always be in his power to preſerve my eſteem and friendſhip, as long as he avoided a repetition of his offences. His reply conſiſted of reiterated profeſſions of amendment in his future conduct, which confirmed the good opinion I had formed of him.

After dinner I returned home, where I waited the arrival of Mr. Cſurin, who came at five o'clock. He began the converſation with promiſes and aſſurances of his devotion to my ſervice, and concluded, by requeſting to know what I had ſettled reſpecting him; to which I anſwered,

1. That I required him to retain the command of the packet, and to conform exactly to the arrangement he had made with Mr. Kuzneczow.

2. That at his departure I would let him know what he had to do, but that at preſent I ſhould only inform him that Mr. Kuzneczow would mange matters ſo, that the ſecond day after his departure the Ship ſhould ſpring a leak, which would afford a ſufficient reaſon for coming to an anchor, which he might do at Lopattka. In the mean time I promiſed to obtain the Governor's permiſſion that he might be permitted to eſtabliſh himſelf among us. I obſerved that this appeared to me to be the only honorable method of avoiding the voyage to Ochoczk; and further, with regard to his eſtabliſhment and future marriage with the young lady in queſtion, I promiſed him two thouſand roubles, and the place of captain of the military.

My propoſal pleaſed him, and he bound himſelf, by oath, to conform ſtrictly to every particular. He even offered to ſign an engagment to that effect, which he confirmed by oath. This affair being finiſhed, I diſmiſſed him, and haſtened

Digitized by Google

haſtened to call a committee, to communicate the news of my ſucceſs; and as I thought it very neceſſary not to loſe ſight of Mr. Cſurin, I charged Mr. Kuzneczow to connect himſelf with him, and not to leave his company.

CHAP. XXII.

PREPARATIONS FOR DEPARTURE. MISS APHANASIA DISCOVERS THE INTENTION OF THE EXILES.

ON the 30th Mr. Cruſtiew and Mr. Panow, at the head of twenty-five of our aſſociates, were deputed to wait on the governor, with a requeſt that he would pleaſe to receive the title of Protector of the new colony. They were likewiſe charged to wait on the chancellor and the hettman, with a ſimilar requeſt, that they would accept other titles relative to the colony; and, in the laſt place, they were to preſent a memorial to the magiſtrates of the town, to requeſt their aſſiſtance and ſupport in favour of the new colony, which was to bear the name of Nilovaga, in honour of the governor. They performed their commiſſion, and returned with the news, that they had met with an agreeable reception from all the gentlemen on whom they had been directed to wait.

On the 31ſt I received a meſſage from the magiſtrates of the town, informing me, that they had favourably received my memorial, and that, in conſequence of the utility

Digitized by Google

utility and ſervices which the capital expected from our induſtry and attachment, they had ſent us an aggregation to the rights of citizens of Bolſharezk for all the children which ſhould be born in the new colony. After I had made the meſſenger a preſent, I communicated our good fortune to the company, which was greatly amuſed at this comedy of my compoſing.

April the 1ſt. As I knew that the veſſels employed between Ochoczk and Kamchatka uſually took no larger ſtock of water than ten or twelve butts, I ordered Mr. Solmanow to purchaſe twenty or twenty-five butts, and carry them to Cſekawka, after getting them put in order, under pretence of applying them to the manufacture of ſalt from ſea water. About ten o'clock this day I received a meſſage from Miſs Nilow, that ſhe would call on me in the afternoon, requeſting at the ſame time that I would be alone, becauſe ſhe had affairs of importance to communicate. As I ſuppoſed the latter part of this meſſage to be mere pleaſantry, I was far from expecting any extraordinary information; and my ſurprize at the event was much greater, as I had not the leaſt reaſon to ſuppoſe ſhe had made any diſcovery of my intentions. Miſs Nilow arrived at three in the afternoon; her agitation on her firſt appearance convinced me that ſhe was exceedingly afflicted. At ſight of me ſhe pauſed a moment, and ſoon after burſt into tears, and threw herſelf into my arms, crying out, that ſhe was unfortunate and forſaken. Her ſighs and tears were ſo extreme that it was more than a quarter of an hour before I could obtain a connected ſentence. I was extremely affected at her ſituation, and uſed every expedient to calm her mind,

Digitized by Google

but this was extremely difficult, becauſe I was entirely ignorant of the reaſon of her affliction.

As ſoon as ſhe became a little compoſed, ſhe begged me to ſhut the door, that no one might interrupt us. I came back, and on my knees entreated her to explain the cauſe of her preſent ſituation, which ſhe did to the following effect:

She informed me that her maid had diſcovered to her, that a certain perſon, named Ivan Kudrin, one of my aſſociates, had propoſed to her to ſhare his fortune, and that this indiſcreet perſon had aſſured the girl, that he was about to quit Kamchatka with me, to make a voyage to Europe, where he hoped to place her in an agreeable ſituation. The maid had firſt related the circumſtance to her miſtreſs, but, as ſhe could never believe me capable of ſuch baſe and treacherous behaviour to her, ſhe was deſirous of hearing the account herſelf, and had, for that purpoſe, perſuaded the ſervant to appoint a meeting with Kudrin, in order to qneſtion him more amply, while ſhe herſelf might hear the whole, by being concealed behind a curtain. In this manner, ſhe ſaid, ſhe became convinced of her unhappineſs and my treachery, and that ſhe would have ſpared me the confuſion of hearing this, if, from a conviction that ſhe could not live after ſuch an affront, ſhe had not been deſirous of bidding me a laſt farewell.

On finiſhing theſe words ſhe fainted; and tho' I was exceedingly alarmed and diſtreſſed on the occaſion, yet I did not fail to arrange a plan in my mind, during the interval of her inſenſibility. When this amiable young lady recovered, ſhe aſked if ſhe might give credit to what ſhe had heard. I then threw myſelf at her feet, and intreated her to

Digitized by Google

to hear me calmly, and judge whether I was to blame or not. She promiſed ſhe would and I addreſſed her in the following terms.

" You may recollect, my dear friend, the account I gave you of my birth, and the rank I held in Europe: I remember the tears you ſhed on that occaſion. The misfortune of being exiled to Kamchatka, would long ſince have compelled me to deliver myſelf from tyranny, by death, if your acquaintance and attachment had not preſerved me. I have lived for you, and if you could read my heart, I am ſure I ſhould have your Pity; for the poſſeſſion of your perſon is become as neceſſary to my exiſtence as liberty itſelf. The liberty I ſpeak of, is not that which your worthy father has given me, but implies the poſſeſſion of my eſtate and rank. I have hoped for the poſſeſſion of your perſon, with a view of rendering you happy, in the participation of my fortune and dignity. Theſe views cannot be accompliſhed at Kamchatka. What rank can I beſtow on my love but that of an exile? The favours of your worthy father may be of the ſhorteſt duration. His ſucceſſor may ſoon recall his ordinances, and plunge me again into that ſtate of ſuffering and contempt, from which I was delivered for a ſhort moment. Repreſent to yourſelf, my deareſt friend, the affliction and deſpair that would overwhelm my ſoul, when I beheld you a ſharer in my pain and diſgrace; for you well know, that all the Ruſſians eſteem the exiles as diſhonoured perſons. You have forced me to this declaration of my intentions, in which I have been guided by the attachment and ſincerity of my heart. I deferred the communication to you, but I ſwear that ſuch was my reſolution.—Why then, interrupted ſhe, did you conceal

Digitized by Google

your intention from me, who am ready to follow you to the fartheſt limits of the univerſe?—This aſſurance encouraged me to proceed, and engage this charming young lady in my intereſts. I told her, therefore, that I was prevented only by the fear leſt ſhe ſhould refuſe my propoſals, on account of her attachment to her parents; but that, as I now had nothing to fear in that reſpect, I could inform her, that my intention being to leave Kamchatka, I had determined to carry her off; and in order to convince her, I was ready to call Mr. Cruſtiew, who would confirm the truth. On this aſſurance ſhe embraced me, and intreated me to forgive her want of confidence, at the ſame time that ſhe declared her readineſs to accompany me.

This degree of confidential intercourſe being eſtabliſhed, I perſuaded her to diſmiſs every fear from her mind. Many were the trials I made of her reſolution, and the event convinced me, that ſhe was perfectly determined to follow my fortunes. The ſecret being thus ſecure, by her promiſe to keep it inviolably, I had no other uneaſineſs remaining but what aroſe from the communication having been made to her ſervant. I mentioned my fears to Miſs Nilow, who removed them, by aſſuring me that her ſervant was too much attached to her to betray her ſecret; and had, beſides, an affection for Kudrin, ſo that ſhe could anſwer for her diſcretion. Thus agreeably ended our converſarion, though the commencement was rather tragical; and I received the vows of attachment and fidelity from an artleſs and innocent mind.

Miſs Nilow did not depart till about ſix o'clock. I immediately ſent for Kudrin, whom I reproached for his miſconduct

Digitized by Google

conduct and indiſcretion, by explaining the great danger to which he had expoſed the whole ſociety. I promiſed at the ſame time not to divulge his fault to the ſociety; but inſiſted that he ſhould in future avoid all farther explanation of the ſtate of our affairs to the young woman. I likewiſe promiſed, in order to calm his uneaſineſs, that I would contrive matters ſo that he ſhould take her with him. This poor wretch, on my firſt accuſation, was ſeized with the moſt terrifying apprehenſions, and fell to the ground at my feet, crying out for mercy, as he ſuppoſed I ſhould deliver him up to the judgment of the ſociety, from whom he had nothing to expect but death. But, on my concluſion, he aroſe, kiſſed my hand, and ſwore eternal fidelity. For my part, I was very well ſatisfied to have extricated myſelf out of ſuch a diſagreeable embarraſſment, by ſettling affairs on ſo good a footing.

After the departure of Kudrin, I went to Mr. Cruſtiew, who, being apprized in the morning, of Miſs Nilow's intended viſit, and ſeeing me come out ſo late, thought proper to rally me up upon the occaſion. But his hilarity ſoon gave place to aſtoniſhment, when he heard what had paſſed. He was perſuaded, he ſaid, that I muſt have been born under a happy influence, and that nothing could fail us under ſuch auſpices. I laughed at his enthuſiaſm, though I was truly ſenſible of that good fortune which had removed ſo many unpleaſant incidents.

On the 2d Madame Nilow invited me to breakfaſt, and took me apart to enquire what I had done to her daughter, who uſed to be exceedingly in ſpirits at her return home, but had, ſince yeſterday evening, been continually

Digitized by Google

continually in tears. It was difficult to anſwer this home queſtion; to which I could at firſt make no better reply than by ſaying, that Miſs Nilow had imparted a ſecret to me, that related to herſelf alone, and was communicated under the ſeal of confidence, which I could not infringe. Madame Nilow laughed at this excuſe, and afterwards ordered her daughter to be called, whom ſhe required to releaſe me from the injunction of ſecrecy, that I might be at liberty to relate what had paſſed between us yeſterday; to which ſhe anſwered, that ſhe would intirely rely on my prudence, and that if I thought it neceſſary I was at liberty to ſpeak, though ſhe would be preſent, to know whether I ſpoke the truth. I then related that ſome perſon, with a view to injure me in Miſs Aphanaſia's opinion, had informed her that I was not of the Greek religion, and had perſuaded her to aſk me me to become of that faith: that ſhe had accordingly made the propoſal to me two days ago, to which I anſwered, that though, in my opinion, all religions were alike, I could not conſent to make any change in mine; and upon her obſerving, that my determination might prevent our marriage, I replied, that then we ſhould die without reproach, ſhe was vexed, and our friendly intercourſes had ſuffered a ſlight interruption, till a ſecond opportunity for explanation offered itſelf. I added, that in our laſt converſation I had expreſſed my hope that Miſs Aphanaſia would in future put leſs confidence in adviſers. Madame Nilow, after having patiently heard my account, blamed her daughter for preſuming to meddle in affairs of religion; and ſaid, ſhe hoped her prudence in future would prevent her going into any ſuch extravagancies. She then retired, and left us at liberty. I

embraced

Digitized by Google

embraced the opportunity to confirm the young lady in her reſolution; and ſhe aſſured me that I might remain perfectly eaſy with regard to her maid, who was as deſirous as herſelf to ſee us ſafe in Europe. We finiſhed our converſation on the happineſs we ſhould enjoy when at perfect liberty. After which I retired, and ordered a general meeting to be held on the 5th. I then viſited Mr. Stephanow, whom I found under the application of bliſters, having been in a continual delirium for three days and nights.

CHAP. XXIII.

VARIOUS PROCEEDINGS. THE CHANCELLOR RECEIVES INFORMATION OF THE ATTEMPTS OF THE EXILES. THE COUNT'S EXERTIONS TO PREVENT THE CONSEQUENCES OF THIS DISCOVERY.

ON the 3d of April, Mr. Solmanow purchaſed twenty-two butts and forwarded them to Tſekawka. Mr. Kuzneczow likewiſe adviſed me, that he had purchaſed a caſk of brandy for ſeven hundred and eighty roubles, which I immediately paid. Meſſrs. Baturin and Wynbladth, who were commiſſioned to ſalt fiſh, alſo informed me, that they had prepared two caſks of fiſh, and one caſk of whale oil; but they could procure no more than four hundred and fifty pounds of flour.

On the 4th Mr. Kuzneczow informed me that Mr. Cſurin was going on board to ſet the ſhip to rights; and conſequently

Digitized by Google

quently thoſe of our aſſociates who were engaged in the veſſel muſt be ready to depart on the 7th; and that in order to overlook the tranſactions of Mr. Cſurin, he had determined likewiſe to go on board himſelf. I agreed to his propoſal, earneſtly adviſing him to exert every attention to promote the buſineſs intruſted to him; but at the ſame time to hold himſelf in readineſs to return at the firſt call. And, in order that our coreſpondence might be rendered more certain, I commiſſioned him to ſtation a truſty native of Kamchatka at Mikutka, to carry my advices and orders to him. I was informed in the evening that the governor was indiſpoſed.

On the 5th I put off the meeting 'till the evening, on account of the neceſſity of viſiting the governor. On my arrival at the fort I found the whole family greatly afflicted, and the governor very ill with a violent colic. I gave him a little extract of aloes with brandy, and had the pleaſure to ſee him able to walk about by noon. He thanked me for my aſſiſtance, and begged I would give him a proviſion of the medicine which had done him ſo much ſervice. I refuſed ſtaying to dinner, and returned home; after which the general meeting was held, where I gave the ſociety an account of the meaſures I had taken to ſecure the veſſel St. Peter and St. Paul; but I thought it likewiſe neceſſary to expreſs to the meeting my fears of ſome unfortunate accident. For this reaſon I required that no one in future would go into the town without a companion, and that they would not haunt public houſes, where ſeveral diſputes had ariſen between the ſoldiers of the garriſon or coſſacks, and my people. I obſerved that the moment of the execution of our project was nearly

Digitized by Google

nearly approaching, for which reaſon it was of the utmoſt conſequence to avoid every miſunderſtanding, and to be upon our guard. I therefore exhorted them to remain peaceably in their houſes, and always near the chiefs which I had nominated, in order that they might come together in caſe of any unforeſeen accident, and be in readineſs to obey my orders. The whole company unanimouſly replied, that they would ſtrictly obey my orders, and that I might depend on their fidelity. Their readineſs gave me much ſatisfaction: I thanked them for their confidence in me, and regaled them with a large quantity of punch, the diſpoſal of which employed the company till four in the morning.

On the 6th I remained at home the whole day, at reſt, except in the evening, when I made a viſit to the governor. On the 7th, Mr. Kuzneczow took his leave with ten of our companions. This day Mr. Baturin informed me, that Iſmailow, Boſcarew and Zablikow had propoſed a number of queſtions to him concerning the new colony; and that he overheard Iſmailow whiſper Boſcarew, "we ſhall get nothing out of him, for he is Sa-"muelovicz's friend, let us go to the others," from which he ſuſpected that theſe three men had received ſome information of our project. From this account I recollected, that Mr. Stephanow had been connected with theſe perſons, and might have informed them of ſome of the particulars: I therefore went immediately to him, but he was not in a ſituation to anſwer any queſtions. Nothing therefore remained to be done, but to apply to Mr. Panow, whom I ordered to enquire for one of the

Digitized by Google

three, and found his intentions, that I might take my meaſures in time.

Mr. Cruſtiew, when informed of this buſineſs, appeared very uneaſy, which was a circumſtance unuſual in him, as he was a man of courage, and poſſeſſed great firmneſs of mind. After reflecting a ſhort time, he told me, that he thought he ſhould be able to ſift the buſineſs to the bottom; but that there was reaſon to fear a diſcovery on the part of government which we could not avoid, ſuppoſing his ideas to be true; for he told me that Iſmailow was related to the chancellor, and poſſeſſed his confidence. The ſtrong marks of apprehenſion which I ſaw in Mr. Cruſtiew, obliged me to requeſt his thoughts concerning the information of Baturin. He replied, that he was fearful of an intrigue among women; and ſaid he was aſſured that it was Mr. Kuzneczow's intention to carry with him the ſiſter of ſerjeant Kuzmin; and that probably he had divulged the ſecret to that woman. On the other hand, he was convinced that Mr. Iſmailow likewiſe kept company with the ſame perſon, whence he inferred, that Iſmailow had got ſome hints of our project, which led him to endeavour at a more perfect diſcovery.

Mr. Cruſtiew promiſed that he would uſe every exertion in his power to come at the truth by means of the woman, and adviſed me, in the mean time, to wait on the chancellor, and obſerve his behaviour, from which I might eaſily know whether his nephew had already ſpoken to him concerning his diſcovery.

Theſe ſteps appearing reaſonable, I determined immediately to wait on the chancellor, while Mr. Cruſtiew was

Digitized by Google

was employed in making his enquiries. On my arrival the chancellor received me with more politeneſs, but leſs cordiality than uſual. He ordered tea, and, during the time it was preparing, our diſcourſe turned firſt on the government, in which the chancellor repeated all the advantages I had received from the chiefs, in forwarding my projects; and twice ſaid that he hoped my zeal and conduct would juſtify their opinions and proceedings. In anſwer to his diſcourſe, I replied, that I was greatly affected with the marks of goodneſs I had received, and ſhould neglect no favourable occaſion of ſhewing my gratitude. After a ſhort pauſe, the chancellor aſked me how far I was connected with Kuzneczow. I anſwered, that Mr. Kuzneczow having rendered me eſſential ſervices at my firſt arrival at Kamchatka, when I was in the loweſt ſtate of indigence, I thought it proper to acknowledge his good offices, at a time when I was at my eaſe. He replied, that he hoped my motives were ſuch as I expreſſed, but that he could not help taking notice that various reflections were made in the town concerning our intimacy; more particularly ſince Mr. Kuzneczow had been ſeen openly aſſiſting the exiles, with a muſket in his hand, at the time of their diſpute with the ſoldiers and coſſacks, reſpecting Mr. Stephanow.

This overture ſufficiently ſhewed, that Mr. Iſmailow had related his ſuſpicions or perhaps diſcoveries to his uncle, for which reaſon I determined to clear the way by one effectual ſtroke. I therefore replied, that I ſaw clearly from whence this prejudice againſt Mr. Kuzneczow aroſe. I informed the chancellor, that Kuzneczow and his nephew, kept company with the ſame woman,

Digitized by Google

whom I named, being the ſiſter of Serjeant Kuzmin; and obſerved, that jealouſly had dictated this expedient to his nephew, with a view to prejudice his rival. I aſſured him that, with regard to myſelf, I was happy in the preſent opportunity of ſpeaking my ſentiments to him, as my benefactor. I admitted, that it might be very convenient, and not unbecoming Mr. Kuzneczow, to frequent the company of a common woman, though ſuch a proceeding would very ill become his nephew, who enjoyed a diſtinguiſhed rank. But what more particularly mortified my feelings in this buſineſs was, that I underſtood it to be the intention of his nephew to marry the girl; for which reaſon I had diſpoſed Mr. Kuzneczow to perſuade her to make a voyage with him to Ochoczk, where they were to be married. I ended my ſpeech by obſerving, that I ſhould have concealed this proof of my perſonal attachment to him, if there had not been reaſon to fear that ſilence, at this moment, might impair his friendſhip for me.

The chancellor liſtened very attentively, pauſed a moment, and then embraced me, ſaying, that if I had not come he might have taken a very dangerous ſtep. He then informed me, that his nephew had conſtantly repeated to him for ſome days paſt, that he was certain Kuzneczow and myſelf intended to leave Kamchatka, and take ſome women with us; adding, that he was ſure of our plot, but would come at the bottom of it by new inquiries. The Chancellor proceeded to ſay, that, from the reiterated obobſervations of his nephew, he had determined to ſend for Mr. Stephanow, and examine him; but that he now conſidered my arrival as a happy circumſtance, ſince it had ſpared him

Digitized by Google

him the confuſion of intimating his ſuſpicions of me. My account, he ſaid, had opened his eyes, and ſhewn him the neceſſity of regulating the conduct of his nephew.

Affairs being in this favourable train, I begged him to enquire of Captain Cſurin whether it were not true that Kuzneczow intended to ſail with him to Ochoczk, and whether he had not contracted for the paſſage of a lady.

The chancellor immediately ſent for Cſurin, and after receiving the confirmation of what I had ſaid from him, he promiſed me a complete ſatisfaction on the part of his nephew.

CHAP. XXIV.

THE SUBJECT OF THE PRECEDING CHAPTER CONTINUED.

I Was exceedingly happy in having remedied an affair of ſuch a deſperate nature, and haſtened home, where I found Mr. Cruſtiew in the utmoſt uneaſineſs. He could not contain his anger at ſeeing me laugh; but began by informing me, that he was certain that the chancellor had received information concerning us, and was now buſied in diſcloſing our projects to the government: for the ſiſter of Kuzmin had informed him, that Mr. Iſmailow had liſtened to her diſcourſe with Kuznec-zow, under her window; in which he had promiſed to marry her, if ſhe would conſent to go with him to Eu-rope; obſerving, that the voyage would be long, but that he would make her amends by his love and fidelity.

Upon

Upon which propoſal ſhe had demanded, how he ſuppoſed it would be in his power to ſail to Europe; and Kuzneczow replied, that there was no reaſon to be uneaſy about the ſucceſs of any undertaking when directed by ſuch chiefs as myſelf. She proteſted that Mr. Kuzneczow had ſaid nothing more; but that, after his departure Iſmailow entered, and inſulted her, and directly afterwards went out, threatening to ſend Kuzneczow to the mines. She likewiſe told Mr. Cruſtiew that ſhe had avoided ſpeaking to Mr. Kuzneczow on the buſineſs, for fear of a quarrel.

Upon this intelligence I deſired my friend to go immediately to the girl, and direct her to ſay, if ſhe ſhould be ſent for by the chancellor, that Mr. Kuzneczow had propoſed and agreed with her to go to Ochoczk, where they were to be married, and that I had promiſed her a marriage portion of a thouſand roubles, provided ſhe would depart and avoid the viſits of Mr. Iſmailow. Mr. Cruſtiew was perfectly aſtoniſhed at this meſſage, and aſked if I thought him out of his ſenſes. I ſaw that he did not comprehend my intentions, and therefore gave him an account of my converſation with the chancellor, upon which he perfectly underſtood the whole buſineſs, and haſtened to execute my commiſſion. For my part, as Mr. Kuzneczow was not yet gone, I ſent for him, and gave him inſtructions likewiſe, in caſe he ſhould be queſtioned by the chancellor. Theſe meaſures being taken, I found my mind more at eaſe, and went to reſt late at night, for I had found it impoſſible to take any repoſe during the continuance of my apprehenſions.

On

Digitized by Google

On the 8th, I learned that the chancellor had examined Kuzneczow and the ſiſter of Kuzmin ſeparately, and at day break had ſent his nephew to Verchney Oſtrogg, with orders not to return to Bolſaretz without his conſent. In the evening the chancellor himſelf came to me, made a thouſand excuſes for his ſuſpicions, and begged me to accept the portion I had promiſed the girl, which, however, I refuſed, at the ſame time intreating him to excuſe my taking it, as a proof of his confidence in my good intentions.

On the 9th, Mr. Kuzneczow informed me of his departure, and aſſured me that I might entirely depend on Mr. Cſurin. This news was ſome conſolation to me; for though the chancellor was apparently reconciled, I could no longer depend on his confidence. I knew that inquiſitive diſpoſition would not permit him to baniſh the adventure of his nephew from his mind; and as the ſlighteſt appearances might revive his ſuſpicions, I thought it proper to keep my people conſtantly aſſembled. With a view likewiſe to ſecure myſelf againſt any ſurprize, I engaged Miſs Nilow to pay a ſtrict attention to every thing that paſſed at the governor's houſe, eſpecially when the chancellor was preſent.

The ſame day I aſſembled the company, to whom I gave an account of all that had paſſed between me and the chancellor, and declared, that though all our meaſures were perfectly well eſtabliſhed, I was morally ſure that they would be ineffectual, becauſe I had every reaſon to think that we ſhould be diſcovered before the time of the departure of the veſſel. In conſequence of this diſcouraging proſpect, I ſaid that I ſhould proceed to pro-

Digitized by Google

propoſe to the company another regulation. The meeting unanimouſly aſſured me, that they would agree to every ſtep which I ſhould think proper to be taken, ſo that I needed only to give my orders, which would be immediately complied with. On this declaration, which was ſo full of confidence, I repreſented to them that it would be impoſſible for us to reſiſt the force which government might employ againſt us, if we remained near the town, and, therefore, that on the firſt intimation of a diſcovery, I ſhould propoſe to the company to retire to the ſea-ſide, where we might defend ourſelves in the intrenchment of the light-houſe, which was provided with four large pieces of cannon, which would be ſufficient to keep the aſſailants at a diſtance; and, in the mean time, as I could depend on Mr. Cſurin, I would direct him to bring the veſſel out of the Bay, by towing her through the ice, and that I did not deſpair of carrying this project into execution in the courſe of eight days.

The company replied, that this ſtep was ſalutary, and neceſſary to be carried into execution. I therefore drew up inſtructions for Mr. Kuzneczow, which I forwarded to him by the hands of Sibeaw, at the ſame time that I directed Mr. Panow to diſtribute money to ſeveral of our aſſociates, to purchaſe gunpowder in all the ſhops, and, if poſſible, at the great magazine. For I had been informed that the cannon of the redoubt of the light-houſe was well provided with bullets and grape ſhot, though the quantity of powder was inſufficient to fire ſix ſhot. I paſſed the reſt of the day with Mr. Cruſtiew, in conference on the means neceſſary to be adopted in the preſent exigence of our circumſtances.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP XXV.

VARIOUS PROCEEDINGS RELATIVE TO THE PROJECTED ESCAPE OF THE EXILES, AND THE DISCOVERIES MADE BY GOVERNMENT.

ON the 10th, Mr. Baturin informed me, that Boſcarew and Zablikow had written a letter to Mr. Stephanow, which was to be put into his hands by a Kamchadal woman. I immediately ſent notice to Mr. Panow, who undertook to watch his relation, to whom he went without delay, and returned with the letter, which he ſaid had been delivered the inſtant before by the woman, and that after reading it, Stephanow had ſaid, "I am "the unhappy wretch who have produced all the miſchief "which may follow," and then intreated his relation to carry the letter to me, with a requeſt that I would cauſe theſe two men to be put to death, in order to preſerve our ſecret; for he confeſſed he had revealed the greateſt part of it to them. The contents of the letter were as follows:

"The treatment you have experienced from the un-"worthy chief whom you have choſen, has excited our "compaſſion. We are informed that your illneſs is not "real, but that you are a priſoner, and, we therefore "take this opportunity of aſſuring you, that we are "ready to deliver you, and that you may depend on our "willingneſs to ſacrifice our lives in the attempt. The "oath we entered into with you, has prevented us from

Digitized by Google

" betraying your abominable chief; beſides which, we " were unwilling to be the authors of the deſtruction of " ſo many brave men as have entered into the aſſociation. " If your life be in ſafety, ſend us ſome intimation, " and inform us at what hour of the night we can " enter your priſon without being diſcovered; but if " you think it proper for our intereſts, that we ſhould " deliver you from the tyrant, let us know your wiſh, " and his death is certain. Remember the engagements " you have entered into with us, and be aſſured of our " fidelity.

" Signed, BOSCAREW and ZABLIKOW."

I read this letter in the preſence of ſome of the aſſociates, to their no ſmall conſternation. Several of them were deſirous of going to ſeek theſe two bravos, with whom they propoſed to quarrel, and then diſpatch them. Mr. Panow ſupported this opinion; but, for my part, I declared that I could not, without regret, conſent to be the cauſe of the death of two ſuch determined young men, eſpecially as I had reaſon to think we might avail ourſelves of their ſervices. For this purpoſe, I propoſed that Mr. Panow ſhould perſuade his relation to ſend them an anſwer, which I would draw up; as I was well aſſured that we might cauſe them to join us by this means, provided Mr. Stephanow conſented to aſſiſt. Mr. Panow anſwered for him, whereupon I drew up the following minute:

" You will be convinced that my illneſs is real when " you ſee my hand-writing. I have kept my bed from " the day I laſt ſaw you. I thank you, my friends, for " the aſſiſtance you offer, though it is unneceſſary; for, I can

Digitized by Google

" I can assure you, that my whole consolation at present " consists in the acknowledgment of my improper conduct " towards my chief. You hate him, because I have " described him to you as a man worthy of hatred; but, " I earnestly intreat you, by the oath we have entered " into, not to aggravate my remorse, by making any at- " tempt against this worthy and respectable chief. I " thought him my enemy, and acted accordingly; I even " sought his death. Doubtless you have concluded that he " would revenge himself; but, on the contrary, he has " declared himself my protector, and has preserved my " life at the risk of his own. It is to him I am indebted " for my safety, and I intreat you to respect the protector " as your friend. I have written this letter, to prevent " the consequences of your impetuosity; hasten then to " me, that I may inform you concerning my situation. " You are at perfect liberty to come, and I flatter myself " that, on an interview, I shall render you an essential " service, by bringing you acquainted with a man to " whom you may unite."

This answer being approved of, Mr. Panow carried it to his relation, who copied it, and sent it back by the messenger who had brought him the letter. About eleven in the evening Mr. Panow requested me to come to his friend, who was desirous of introducing Messrs. Boscarew and Zablicow to me, with six other associates. When I arrived Mr. Stephanow begged me to come near his bed, took my hand and kissed it. He then proceeded to recapitulate all his faults, enumerated the marks of kindness and confidence he had received, and concluded, by intreating my forgiveness; after which,

Digitized by Google

without giving me time to reply, he preſented Meſſrs. Boſcarew and Zablikow to me, with their companions; with the aſſurance that they deſired to join our aſſociation, and that he could anſwer for their fidelity and attachment. On this offer I aſked the gentlemen whether they were firmly reſolved to enter into our ſociety without being informed of our projects and meaſures? To which they anſwered, that they had been informed of every thing, and were determined to acknowledge me as their chief, from their knowledge of the inducements. After this ſhort explanation I informed them, that I would expect them at three o'clock tomorrow, in order to proceed in their reception. But as they requeſted I would permit them to remain in future with us, I conſented that they ſhould ſtay all night; for they proteſted that they would not quit our dwelling till they were admitted members of the ſociety.

On the 11th, I viſited the governor, who ſeemed to be meditating on ſome ſubject that occupied his attention, and as it was of conſequence for me to become acquainted with the reaſon of his ſerious deportment, I enquired, and received for anſwer, that he believed the chancellor was out of his ſenſes, becauſe he had been talking to him of an enterprize purely chimerical; for, continued he, the fool ſuſpects you of an intention to deſert, and has vexed me ſo much, that I have ſent him away in an ill humour: he has even dared to accuſe my daughter of being a party in your plot. I anſwered, laughing, that I was very well acquainted with the weakneſs of the chancellor, who though a worthy character, had ſuffered himſelf to be led by his nephew Iſmailow, a man

Digitized by Google

man jealous of my good fortune, and at enmity with one of my friends, Kuzneczow. I informed the governor, that Iſmailow had compoſed a fiction, which had turned the chancellor's head; and then, without heſitation, I related all that had happened. My ſtory put the governor into a chearful humour. He ſent for the chancellor, who was ſurprized to find me ſeated with the governor. The latter began the converſation, by acquainting him that he had informed me the whole of the chancellor's ſuſpicions; and that, on the other hand, I had acquainted him with all that had paſſed between us. The chancellor ſeemed to pay very little attention to this, but told me flatly that I was guilty, and that he repented the indulgence he had ſhewn me in regard to time; but as he was ſo lucky as to find me in a place of ſurety, he ſhould exhibit his proofs, and had no doubt but they would be ſufficient to induce the governor to ſend me to priſon. He then drew out of his pocket a letter from his nephew, which contained a confirmation of his firſt accuſation, and an appeal to Meſſ. Boſcarew and Zablikow, which when he had read, he demanded of the governor whether he had reaſon or no to accuſe me. The governor ſeemed to heſitate; but I ſeized the moment to propoſe, that thoſe two witneſſes might be ſent for, and promiſed that I would own myſelf guilty, if they could prove the leaſt deliquency againſt me. In ſupport of my propoſition, I obſerved, that he well knew Stephanow to be my irreconcilable enemy, and that Boſcarew and Zablikow were his intimate friends; who, conſequently, were in no danger of giving a flattering depoſition in my favour. I requeſted, moreover, that the

Digitized by Google

the governor would permit me to retire into his cabinet during the examination.

This propoſal was agreed to by the governor, and the chancellor was in the greateſt rage to ſee himſelf dared to this point. He therefore required them to be ſent for, and as I had told him they were then with Stephanow, the meſſengers were ſent directly thither. In the mean time I took the liberty to rally the chancellor on his diſcovery. But the governor proteſted, that if the alarm he had raiſed ſhould prove unfounded, he would break off his friendſhip with him.

At length, however, the two witneſſes were announced, and I retired. The chancellor ſhewed them the letter, and they replied, that they knew the hand writing perfectly, though they were ignorant of the ſubject on which it was written, and, in a word, they knew nothing of any plot. They obſerved that it was true that they were intimate with Mr. Stephanow, who had complained to them againſt me, in conſequence of which they had declared themſelves my enemies, and had ſought occaſions of quarrelling with me; but that their oppoſition was perſonal, and did not require them to depart from their characters as men of veracity. To this they added, that they recollected perfectly well, that Mr. Iſmailow had ſome days before related to them a feigned ſtory, contrived by himſelf, and had miſled them ſo far as to cauſe them to ſeek opportunities of quarrelling, with a view to do me a miſchief. But that ſince they had found that the whole of Mr. Iſmailow's narration was falſe, they had given up their quarrel, and were much mortified to find, that they had been ſo far miſled and involved

Digitized by Google

volved; though they could not avoid expreſſing their determination, that Iſmailow ſhould ſooner or later give them an account of his conduct.

After this declaration, the governor politely diſmiſſed Meſſ. Boſcarew and Zablikow, with the requeſt that they would continue to entertain the ſame ſentiments of eſteem and friendſhip for me. He then brought me out of his cabinet to be a witneſs of the confuſion of the chancellor, who ſcarcely durſt look me in the face. I did not fail, however, to do my utmoſt to reſtore his confidence; and, by dint of intreaty, I at laſt prevailed on him to ſpeak. He apologized for his error, by laying the blame on the malice of his nephew, againſt whom he breathed forth imprecations. He made the beſt excuſes he could to the governor, who let him underſtand that he did not approve ſuch liberties. Thus the whole buſineſs of conciliation fell upon me, which, however, I performed with ſucceſs, by the help of a few glaſſes of brandy.

This affair being accompliſhed, I went to Madame Nilow and her daughter, who received me with open arms. The account I gave of what had paſſed aſtoniſhed and alarmed them for the moment; but the happy termination was very ſatisfactory to them all, more eſpecially Miſs Aphanaſia, who was not a little uneaſy at the beginning of my narrative. I then took my leave, and bleſſed the happy chance that had afforded me the means of receiving into my party two ſuch dangerous evidences, whoſe intimate acquaintance with all our deſigns had put us completely in their power.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XXVI.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE GOVERNMENT OF KAMCHATKA, IN CONSEQUENCE OF THE DISCOVERY OF THE COUNT'S PLAN TO LIBERATE THE EXILES.

ON my return home, I dined, and after dinner the ceremony of the reception of Meſſrs. Boſcarew and Zablikow was performed: after which I proceeded to relate to my companions the dangers I had paſſed, and publickly thanked our new aſſociates for their eminent ſervice.

We paſſed the evening together, and I did not quit the meeting, 'till I was informed of the arrival of the chancellor, who came to complete our reconciliation. I remonſtrated ſtrongly with him on the abſurdity of his conduct, and aſſured him that, though I had done my beſt to reconcile him with the governor, he muſt not attribute this proceeding to my want of a due ſenſe of the injury I ſuſtained, but to a deſire of ſeeing harmony prevail among the chiefs. I obſerved, that he ought to have miſtruſted the inſinuations of his nephew after the former diſcovery of his plot, and the falſhood he had been proved to be guilty of. And I concluded by informing him, that I was willing to overlook this ſecond affront; but that if he ſhould ſuffer himſelf to be miſled into ſuch an error a third time, I would not fail to ſeek my revenge. The chancellor proteſted that in future he would act with ſincerity towards me, and we parted good friends.

On

Digitized by Google

On the 12th I received a letter from Mr. Kuzneczow, wherein he informed me, that Mr. Cſurin was buſy in fitting out his veſſel, but that it was impoſſible to clear the ice during the preſent month: That he would anſwer for the taking of the redoubt, the fire of which would protect the ſhip, while the veſſel in return would clear the approaches to the redoubt: That Mr. Cſurin was diſpoſed to ſhare our fortune at all riſks, as he had his lady with him: And laſtly, he concluded his letter by intreating me to facilitate the means of his female friend joining him. The friendſhip and attachment of Mr. Kuzneczow entitled him to every return in my power; for which reaſon I charged Sibaew, who brought the letter, to ſend La Kuſmika to Cſekawka in one of the boats.

After dinner I was ſeized with a violent cholic, ſucceeded by a fever, which forced me to go to bed. In the night I grew worſe, which obliged me to ſend for Meſſrs. Cruſtiew and Panow, to whom I intruſted the care and ſuperintendence of the company.

On the 13th, Mr. Cruſtiew having acquainted Miſs Aphanaſia with my illneſs, ſhe haſtened to ſee me, and, as I was informed after my recovery, never quitted my bedſide, nor ſuffered any other perſon to attend me. The fever continued, without any regular period, during the 14th, 15th and 16th. On the 17th Mr. Meder bled me, and on the 18th he preſcribed an emetic, by which treatment the fever left me on the 19th.

On the 20th I was able to quit my bed, and Miſs Aphanaſia informed her mother of my recovery, who came, together with her other children, to congratulate me on the occaſion. It was at this time I was informed of the ſervices Miſs Aphanaſia had done; I thanked her with

Digitized by Google

the utmoſt ſincerity, and was convinced that my gratitude affected her exceedingly. After the departure of Madame Nilow, though her daughter ſtaid with me, Mr. Cruſtiew gave me an account that all our arrangements were in good order, and that the tranquillity which prevailed every where with reſpect to our intereſts was ſuch that we had no reaſon for any apprehenſions.

On the 21ſt I thought it neceſſary to perſuade Miſs Aphanaſia to return home, for which purpoſe I repreſented to her that her preſence was neceſſary to prevent our being ſurprized, for want of that information reſpecting what paſſed at her father's, which no one could better obtain than herſelf. For theſe reaſons I urged her to return as ſpeedily as poſſible: ſhe admitted their force, and left me with tears.

After her departure, Mr. Cruſtiew informed me of his ſuſpicions that the chancellor, in conjunction with the hettman, was meditating our deſtruction: For the hettman, he underſtood, was gone two days before to Verchney Oſtrogg, and he had every reaſon to believe that the adventure of the death of Levontiew was his motive, becauſe Boſcarew and Zablikow had received a letter from Iſmailow, who ſuppoſed them ſtill his friends, in which he informed them of the diſcovery of an aſſaſſination committed by my order. In confirmation of this opinion Mr. Cruſtiew ſhewed me the letter, which clearly convinced me, that it became us to prepare for an open attack: for tho' I was well aſſured that the circumſtances which had accompanied the death of Levontiew could not be brought in evidence againſt me, yet I had juſt reaſon to fear that the depoſition of the tajon, who had put the letter directed to the governor into my hands, would produce an effect which,

Digitized by Google

which, ſupported by the credit of the chancellor and the hettman, could not fail to overthrow me. The more I reflected on this buſineſs, the more critical I found it, and as I was ſtill too weak to ſit up for any length of time, I gave Mr. Cruſtiew a charge to admit the two exiles, companions of Mr. Ivaſkin, into our ſociety, as I was ſufficiently convinced of their attachment. This was done the ſame day, and they were ſo well ſatisfied with this mark of confidence, that they thanked me on their knees for the favour I had beſtowed on them, as; they ſaid, of receiving them into my company, and giving them an opportunity either of avenging themſelves of the unjuſt government which had oppreſſed them, or of dying in the attempt.

On the 22d I aſſembled the whole company, and cauſed arms and the neceſſary ammunition to be diſtributed to each, in order that, in caſe our dwellings ſhould be inveſted, they might not be unprovided; and as there was reaſon to fear an attack in the night, I gave regular orders for a guard and patrole. The arms were diſtributed in the night for the greater ſecrecy.

On the 23d Miſs Aphanaſia came to ſee me incognito. She informed me, that her mother was in tears, and her father had talked with her in a manner which gave reaſon to fear that he ſuſpected our plot. She conjured me to be careful, and not to come to the fort, if ſent for. She expreſſed her fears that it would not be in her power to come to me again, but promiſed ſhe would, in that caſe, ſend her ſervant; and ſhe intreated me, at all events, if I ſhould be compelled to uſe force againſt government, that I would be careful of the life of her father, and not endanger my own. I tenderly embraced this charming young lady, and thanked her for the intereſt

Digitized by Google

ſhe took in my preſervation; and as it appeared important that her abſence ſhould not be diſcovered, I begged her to return, and recommend the iſſue of our intentions to good fortune. Before her departure I reminded her to look minutely after her father, and to ſend me a red ribband in caſe government ſhould determine to arreſt or attack me, and, in the ſecond place, that at the moment of an alarm ſhe would open the ſhutter of her window, which looked to the garden, and cauſe a ſledge to be laid over the ditch on that ſide. She promiſed to comply with my inſtructions, and confirmed her promiſes with vows and tears.

As ſoon as Miſs Aphanaſia was gone, I thought it proper to ſet up a pole for the conveniency of hoiſting a light, and, at the ſame time, I ſent inſtructions to my companions that the light ſhould be the ſignal for rallying.

On the 24th, being buſied in preparing againſt every ſurprize, I cauſed a bridge to be broken down, which had been laid over a ravine that ſeparated us from the town; and, inſtead of the bridge, I cauſed a ſingle plank to be laid; over which no more than one perſon could paſs at a time. At three in the afternoon, Mr. Cruſtiew informed me that the hettman was on his return, and had brought with him the tajon in queſtion, and that Iſmailow was likewiſe with his uncle. This information was ſufficient to point out the ſteps it became us to take; but, in order to obtain a more perfect knowledge of the ſtate of affairs, we ſent ten of our aſſociates of the party of Boſcarew on diſcovery. They did not return 'till very late in the evening, and reported, that the hettman had had a long conference with the chancellor, and that about five in the evening, they had waited on the governor, accompanied by

Digitized by Google

by Iſmailow and a Kamſchadal chief. This report cauſed us to double our guard and patrole, and the whole ſociety remained under arms.

On the 25th, in the morning, Miſs Aphanaſia's ſervant brought me a red ribband. She told me verbally, to beware of coming to the fort; that her miſtreſs as well as Madame Nilow, was in tears, as the governor had treated them with great ſeverity, and had even ſtruck his lady. About ten o'clock the governor ſent a ſerjeant to me, to invite me to breakfaſt; to which I anſwered, that as I was not quite recovered of a dangerous illneſs, I could not wait upon him then, but hoped I ſhould be able to have that pleaſure to-morrow. The ſerjeant anſwered by adviſing me to go by fair means, if I did not wiſh to be dragged to the fort by main force. To this I replied in ſhort, by deſiring him to mind his own buſineſs, and carry my anſwer; at the ſame time that I adviſed him to make his confeſſion before he ventured to come on any ſuch enterprize.

About noon I ſaw the hettman coming towards our houſe. I received him very politely, and he informed me that he came on the part of the governor to perſuade me to come to the fort. The buſineſs, he told me in confidence, was to diſcuſs one of the ridiculous fancies of the chancellor, which I might eaſily overthrow, and conſequently, that I ought to make no difficulty in accompanying him. But when I replied, that my illneſs did not permit me to wait upon the governor, and that I certainly ſhould not go that day, he became angry, and threatened to force me thither by his Coſſacks. I laughed at his threats, which did not tend to reſtore his calmneſs

calmneſs. He called out to his Coſſacks to come in and compel me to follow him. I whiſtled, and five of my companions inſtantly ruſhed in, and diſarmed the hettman and two Coſſacks, to whom I declared that they were my priſoners.

After this ſtroke, the hettman aſked permiſſion to write to the governor, and I promiſed to diſpatch a letter from him, provided it was firſt ſubmitted to my peruſal. In his letter he propoſed to the governor to enter into terms with me, at the ſame time informing him that he was himſelf detained as a priſoner. Together with his letter I ſent one in my own name to the governor, in which I explained that the premeditated treachery of the chancellor, which I was ſufficiently informed of, had induced me to take this ſtep, and that I entreated him not to conſider it as an attempt to incite an inſurrection, as it depended on his excellency's pleaſure to permit me to depart for Lopatka.

About five in the evening, the governor ſent me word, that if I did not ſet the hettman at liberty, I ſhould pay for my inſolence at the price of my life; that my trial would be proceeded on in full aſſembly the next day, where, if I ſhould be found innocent, he would take care that I ſhould receive ſatisfaction from the chancellor; but that, in caſe I was conſcious of guilt, he adviſed me to come and apply to the goodneſs and clemency of the throne for my pardon.

In a written anſwer to this meſſage I replied, that if myſelf alone were perſonally concerned; I would not heſitate a moment to appear before him; but as the chief of a party, acknowledged as ſuch by his own proper order, I could

Digitized by Google

I could not act without conſulting my companions: and, as it was late, I propoſed likewiſe to conſult them on the morrow. I added, that my perſonal conduct, as well as the liberty of the hettman, would depend on their deciſion.

At nine in the evening I ſent a party of ſix aſſociates to ſeize the chancellor, but he took care not to ſtir out of the fort: in his ſtead, however, they brought me Iſmailow, his nephew, Szudeikin, his ſecretary, and the tajon, who was intended to be produced in evidence againſt me.

On the 26th I received two red ribbands from Miſs Aphanaſia, at the ſame time that I learned from one of our aſſociates, that the governor had ſummoned a council, at which no one could give an account how Iſmailow and the tajon had been carried off; that, as no witneſſes appeared, the governor had reproached the chancellor, and threatened him with the effects of his anger, calling him a traitor, who took a pleaſure in exciting diſturbances; and laſtly, that every one was perſuaded that, the accuſation of the chancellor being falſe, Iſmailow and the tajon had diſappeared, becauſe incapable of ſtanding the examination. He further reported, that the governor, enraged at the witneſſes not appearing, had diſmiſſed the council, and retired to the fort.

At eleven o'clock I received a meſſage that the governor was convinced of my innocence, and conſented that the company ſhould keep Mr. Hettman as an hoſtage; but that, for the ſake of the form, he would ſend four ſoldiers for me, to whom he begged me to ſurrender. In reply to this meſſage I anſwered, that I would

Digitized by Google

would entirely depend on the word and honour of the governor, who might ſend his guard for me, and that in the mean time, I would do every thing in my power to perſuade my aſſociates to conſent to my departure, which I had no doubt they would agree to, in conſideration of their holding the hettman as an hoſtage.

Immediately after I had diſmiſſed this meſſenger, I received another, with a letter from Miſs Aphanaſia, who intreated me to come to the governor, and aſſured me that her father was more prejudiced in my favour than ever. I could depend on the integrity and attachment of this amiable young lady, and her letter might have had its influence on me, if I had not obſerved that it contained many clippings of red ribband, which ſhewed me in what manner to proceed. I therefore gave orders to Meſſrs. Baturin, Wynbladth, and Panow, to place themſelves at the head of their diviſions, in readineſs to act in the night, as I expected an attack, from the information I had received, that the ſoldiers of the garriſon, as well as the Coſſacks of the town, were buſied in preparing their arms. Our number amounted to fifty-ſeven perſons, but Mr. Cruſtiew informed me that he had ſent an order to Mr. Kuzneczow to return with his people, and that he expected him at the cloſe of the night. In order that I might not be taken by ſurprize, I formed three diviſions, who ſtationed themſelves round my houſe, while the fourth diviſion remained within.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XXVII.

THE GOVERNMENT SENDS A MILITARY FORCE TO TAKE THE COUNT PRISONER. THE EXILES OPPOSE THEM, AND BY THEIR SUPERIOR BRAVERY AND MILITARY SKILL, ASSISTED BY A FORTUNATE CONCURRENCE OF EVENTS, THEY GAIN POSSESSION OF THE FORT. THE GOVERNOR IS SLAIN IN THE ATTACK.

AT five in the evening, I obſerved a corporal with four grenadiers, who came and ſtopped at my door, where they called out to me to open it by order of the Empreſs. I jocularly anſwered that he lied, for that the Empreſs being at Peterſburgh, would not honour ſuch a raſcal as him with her orders; but told him that if he thought proper to behave with civility, we might perhaps tranſact our affairs in an amicable manner. Upon this he ſaid, that the governor had informed him that it was agreed I ſhould follow him, and conſequently that he was ready to comply with my wiſhes in every reſpect. I then propoſed that he ſhould enter alone to drink a glaſs with me, and afterwards take charge of ſome papers that were neceſſary to be preſented to the governor. He conſented, and I accordingly admitted him, ſhutting the door after him, at which inſtant he beheld four piſtols preſented to his breaſt, and was threatened with inſtant death if he ſhould dare to utter a ſingle word. After conducting him into my chamber, I queſtioned him concerning every particular I was deſirous of knowing, and when his depoſition was finiſhed, I ordered him to call the ſoldiers one by one, each by name, to come in and

Digitized by Google

drink a glaſs, which he was forced to comply with. In this manner I became maſter of the detachment, which I cauſed to be bound, and depoſited ſafely in the cellar.

At nine in the evening I received notice that a detachment had been obſerved on their way towards the ravine. I therefore took the detachment of Mr. Wynbladth with me, and called out to them not to attempt to paſs. They anſwered by ſeveral muſket ſhot; in return for which I ordered my party to fire on thoſe who were foremoſt, and after three had fallen the detachment remained motionleſs, and lay cloſe with their faces to the ground. I could eaſily obſerve however that the officer had diſpatched a man towards the fortreſs, no doubt with the intention of requeſting aſſiſtance. For this reaſon I ſent out a perſon upon diſcovery, but nothing was perceived 'till about eleven o'clock, when I received information that a body of troops were advancing towards our rear, and that from the noiſe there was reaſon to believe they had cannon with them. I gave orders to Mr. Wynbladth to obſerve the detachment at the ravine, and after cauſing the diviſion of the center to join me, I myſelf advanced towards the enemy's troops. Before we met, I ſaw Mr. Stephanow, who, tho' ſcarcely able to walk, came armed, and had only time to tell me that he came to conquer or die with me. This reſolution ſecured him my eſteem; for though the poor man could ſcarcely ſupport himſelf, he nevertheleſs did every thing in his power to encourage the aſſociates.

When we came within the diſtance of fifty paces, the commanding officer of the detachment called out to us to ſurrender ourſelves priſoners, otherwiſe he would not

ſpare

Digitized by Google

ſpare us. I replied that it was neceſſary we ſhould know the conditions, and he in return aſked what conditions I wiſhed to propoſe. Our conference led us within fifteen paces of them, at which diſtance we began our fire, and our adverſaries were ſo diſheartened at our firſt diſcharge, that they left their cannon and fled haſtily towards the wood. The officer was highly to blame in this reſpect, for if he had retired towards the fortreſs, we could never have forced it. His miſconduct inſpired me with hope. No more than a ſhort quarter of an hour was required to collect my people. I availed myſelf of their artillery to fire on the detachment placed behind the ravine; and my fire, though in the air, prevented any of them from venturing to riſe; ſo that I had perfect liberty to approach the fort. The centinel ſeeing us come with cannon, took us for the detachment, and, after challenging us, aſked if we had brought the priſoners, to which I cauſed one of my people to anſwer in the affirmative. The man then worked like a fury to lower the drawbridge; which done, we entered with ſpirit, and finding only twelve men of the guard, they were quickly diſpatched. While a party of my aſſociates mounted to clear the caſemates, I cauſed the drawbridge to be raiſed, and placed a guard. Theſe precautions being taken, as I heard a firing in the court, and ſaw that my comrades were faſtening the petard to force the inner gates, I ventured to paſs through a window which I found open. Madame Nilow and her children, at ſight of me, implored my protection to ſave their father and huſband. I immediately haſtened to his apartment, and begged him to go to his childrens room to preſerve his life; but he anſwered that he would firſt take mine, and inſtantly fired a piſtol,

Digitized by Google

which wounded me: I was desirous, nevertheless, of preserving him, and continued to represent that all resistance would be useless, for which reason I intreated him to retire. His wife and children threw themselves on their knees, but nothing would avail: he flew upon me, seized me by the throat, and left me no other alternative than either to give up my own life, or run my sword through his body. At this instant the petard exploded and burst the outer gate. The second was open, and I saw Mr. Panow enter at the head of a party. He entreated the governor to let me go, but not being able to prevail on him, he set me at liberty by splitting his skull.

April 27th. No words can describe the unhappy scene this event produced: Madame Nilow fell at my feet, her daughters fainted, and the firmness of my mind was scarcely equal to the shock. I was ready to sink to the ground, when Mr. Panow seeing me in this situation obliged me to quit the apartment, and assured me that he would take care of Madame Nilow and her family. He begged I would hasten to a party of my associates, who were still fighting with the soldiers. I went out into the court, where I saw a new spectacle; it was covered with dead and wounded, some of whom informed me that our companions were busied in forcing a subterraneous place, in which several soldiers had taken refuge. I made haste to save the lives of these unfortunate men, and having met with Mr. Wynbladth and Crustiew, with four other associates, quickened my steps towards the bastion under which the casemate was, when all at once we heard a musket shot, and the cry of enemies. These shot were followed by regular discharges, which convinced us that they could not

Digitized by Google

not proceed from the fire of our people, who were diſperſed in various places. We therefore returned to our centinel, who kept conſtantly calling out, the enemy! When we came to him, and mounted the banquet of the paliſade, we ſaw a large party of Coſſacks making preparations for an attack. In conſequence of this, I detached Mr. Wynbladth to collect all the aſſociates, leaving only a guard of four men to watch over the ſoldiers in the caſemate; and in the mean time I was forced to ſuſtain a briſk attack. It was a fortunate circumſtance, however, that the ladders which the Coſſacks had brought were too ſhort, and the obſcurity of the night did not permit our enemies to obſerve the weakeſt places of the fort. Their continual fire aſſiſted us to direct our murdering pieces at them, which ſlew fourteen men in ten minutes, while no one on our ſide had received a wound. On the arrival of Mr. Wynbladth with twenty-two aſſociates, we mounted two three pounders on the platform: two rounds from theſe were ſufficient to diſperſe our military opponents.

After their retreat, as we had reaſon to fear a ſecond attempt, we buſied ourſelves in mounting and charging all the cannon of the place, and afterwards cleared the court-yard and caſemates of the dead. The aſſociates obeyed my orders with the greateſt zeal and activity; ſo that at three in the morning every thing was in perfect order.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XXVIII.

THE PROCEEDINGS OF THE COUNT AND HIS PARTY OF EXILES, FROM THE TIME OF GAINING POSSESSION OF THE FORT, TO THE TIME OF THE SURRENDER OF THE MILITARY FORCE OF THE GOVERNMENT, WHO GAVE HOSTAGES TO THE COUNT.

THE centinel of the baſtion having heard a ſecond noiſe on the city ſide, I went up myſelf and ſaw ſeveral lighted torches in motion, which determined me to ſend out ſome perſons to make diſcoveries. Mr. Cruſſtiew undertook this commiſſion, with two of the aſſociates.

After their departure I ſent to requeſt permiſſion to ſee Madame Nilow, which being granted, I waited upon her and found her on her bed. I threw myſelf at her feet to beg her pardon for having been the involuntary cauſe of the death of her huſband, and intreated her to conſider my behaviour towards him, when I was deſirous of preſerving his life at the riſk of my own. Her grief, extreme as it was, did not urge her to make any reproaches: ſhe only aſked for her children, and begged that the guard Mr. Panow had ſet over herſelf and them might be withdrawn. But when I informed her that the guard was deſigned merely for her preſervation, ſhe conſented that it might remain. With reſpect to her children I was ignorant where they had been ſecured; but a ſervant informed us that Mr. Panow had conducted them into the hall, and had taken care to have them bled by Mr. Lapin. This ſuggeſtion reminded me of the propriety of Madame Nilow's

Digitized by Google

Nilow's undergoing the ſame operation, to which ſhe conſented: I therefore haſtened to ſend Mr. Lapin with directions for that purpoſe; and as I did not think it decent to intrude myſelf upon a family ſo overwhelmed with misfortune, I recommended to this gentleman to uſe every care and attention in his power to mitigate the diſtreſſes of their ſituation.

When I went out to viſit the poſts, I received advice that Mr. Cruſtiew had returned, and I therefore went to enquire what he had diſcovered. He informed me that the town was entirely abandoned by the men; that the hettman, delivered from his impriſonment by a party of men, had armed all the Coſſacks, and had retired to the heights at half a league diſtant from the fort, where he declared he would ſtarve us out; and that his troops did not amount to leſs than ſeven or eight hundred men.

On this information I aſſembled my companions, and repreſented to them that we were certainly out of the danger of an attack in the fort, but that if we ſhould defer the taking a ſpeedy reſolution to act without loſing a ſingle moment, we ſhould, perhaps, find ourſelves, in the courſe of twenty-four hours, ſo well inveſted, that we ſhould not be able to get out, and by that means ſhould be reduced to ſurrender at diſcretion from mere hunger. I informed the company of the report of Mr. Cruſtiew, and requeſted every one to give his advice reſpecting the proper ſteps to be taken in the preſent ſtate of embarraſſment. But as no plan was agreed on, I diſcloſed mine, which I had already formed before hand, the moment I was informed of the reſolution of Mr. Hettman. It was as follows.

I declared

I declared my reſolution to ſend a detachment of twenty-two or twenty-four aſſociates into the town to drive all the women and children into the church; that as ſoon as they ſhould be there ſecured, all the furniture of wood and other combuſtible matters which could be found, ſhould be piled round the church; and when every thing ſhould be thus diſpoſed, which was very poſſible to be done before day-break, notice ſhould be given to the women to prepare themſelves for death, at the ſame time that they ſhould be informed that the determination of their huſbands to oppoſe us by force had left us no other expedient than to ſacrifice their families. And laſtly, that after this declaration it ſhould be propoſed to the women to ſend three of their number, with twelve young girls, to their parents, to require them to lay down their arms.

The company agreed to this propoſal, and Mr. Panow undertook to carry it into execution. But he obſerved that it was neceſſary in his opinion to convey the body of the governor into the ſame church, with the intention of more effectually intimidating the women. After his departure I gave the neceſſary orders, and the body of this unfortunate chief, whoſe life had been ever dear to me, was inſtantly carried to the place of deſtination.

The continual hurry of action had made me forget my wound; but I was deſirous of taking advantage of this moment of tranquility, and accordingly ſent for Mr. Lapin, who declared that the conſequences might be dangerous, becauſe I had ſuffered the blood to coagulate. In fact the froſt had congealed a large quantity, and, in order to thaw it, I was obliged to approach the fire, which gave

Digitized by Google

gave me the moſt excruciating pain. I could not ſtand up nor walk until Mr. Lapin had extracted the ball, in which operation I found him very ſkilfull. After my wound had been dreſſed, as I was not capable of uſing my leg, he cauſed me to be conveyed into the chamber where the reſt of the wounded men were, and where I had the mortification to ſee nine dead, and ſeven dangerouſly wounded of my party, with more than fifty ſoldiers of the garriſon wounded; the dead having been thrown into one of the baſtions. When I had given orders that the neceſſary aſſiſtance might be adminiſtered to all who were in want of it, I retired into the hall of the chancery to reſt; but my uneaſineſs reſpecting the ſucceſs of my project, did not permit me to take any repoſe until the return of Mr. Panow, who related that he had ſhut up more than a thouſand women, girls and infants, who had all unanimouſly requeſted leave to ſend ſome one of their number to their huſbands, whom they promiſed to bring back to our feet.

The day beginning to appear, I thought proper to haſten this expedition, and determined to ſend one of my aſſociates with the woman, beating a drum as the ſign of a parley, at the ſame time that he ſhould carry a proper ſummons to the following effect:

" We are informed of the reſolution you have taken " to block us up in the fort, and reduce us to the " neceſſity either to periſh by hunger, or have recourſe " to your mercy by ſurrendering at diſcretion. This " reſolution ſhews very little judgment on your part; " for in truth it is impoſſible for you to perſuade us that " your determinations are directed to this end, while you

Digitized by Google

" have left in our power the moſt precious depoſit which " nature has given you, your wives, your daughters, " and your children; who muſt ſecure us from your " ſenſeleſs rage, unleſs you are monſters abhorred by " nature. You will be the real executioners of your " families, and their blood will cry out for vengeance " againſt you. It remains in the mean time for you to " adopt one of the two propoſitions we here make."

" 1. We demand that, one hour after the reception " of this meſſage, you ſhall ſet at liberty the four aſſo- " ciates you made priſoners at the time the hettman was " ſet at liberty; and that afterwards you ſhall lay down " your arms, and preſent yourſelves unarmed at the " fort, in order that we may take hoſtages from amongſt " you, which may be neceſſary to prevent ſuch incidents " as may hereafter occaſion new hoſtilities."

" 2. That, on your refuſal to comply with theſe pro- " poſals, we will ſet fire to the church in which your " wives and children are confined. It ſhall be their " tomb; their cries will convince you of the accom- " pliſhment of our reſolution."

" We ſend the preſent to you at nine o'clock preciſely; " haſten to aſſemble, and carry into execution ſuch reſo- " lutions as you may judge moſt ſuitable to your preſent " ſituation. Our reſolution ſhall be carried into effect " at ten preciſely."

After having cauſed the preſent writing to be ſigned by the chiefs of our aſſociation, I ſent Sibeaw towards the Coſſacks, with four women and twelve children.

After the departure of our meſſenger the aſſociates buſied themſelves in amaſſing the wood of chairs, tables, &c.

Digitized by Google

&c. and different utenſils round the church. About eight o'clock Madame Nilow aſked to ſpeak with me; but when ſhe heard that I could not riſe to pay my reſpects to her, ſhe came herſelf, with her youngeſt daughter. The fatigue I had endured throughout the night, and the effuſion of blood which had altered my countenance, made her to forget her own grief. She ran towards me, and her firſt words, which expreſſed her fears for my ſituation, afforded no ſmall conſolation to my mind. This worthy lady, after ſhewing a proper ſenſe of the loſs of her huſband, told me, that, though propriety forbad her ſeeing me, ſhe could not avoid declaring at that moment that ſhe acknowledged my innocence in all that had paſſed; and that ſhe had with wonder beheld my forbearance, at the time when wounded by her huſband, and in the moſt imminent danger of my life, I did not uſe my arms againſt him. For this cauſe, ſhe ſaid, I was juſtified in her opinion; but that, as it would be impoſſible for her to make the public adopt the ſame ſentiments, ſhe had reſolved to retire immediately after the funeral of her huſband; for the performance of which ſhe requeſted my permiſſion and ſupport. She continued her diſcourſe by telling me, that, with regard to her daughter, as ſhe ſaw her firmly attached to my perſon, and could not expoſe her to the reſentment of her ſiſters and her family, ſhe conſented to put her into my hands, provided I would promiſe to eſtabliſh her in the manner I had aſſured her, by marriage. In this ſituation, urged by the neceſſity of calming the mind of an unhappy mother, whoſe virtue and firmneſs of ſoul I have every reaſon to admire, I promiſed all ſhe required.

Digitized by Google

She then embraced her daughter, adviſed her always to preſerve the ſame attachment to me, and wiſhed her every happineſs; and at laſt haſtily riſing, ſhe paſſionately exclaimed, you are the cauſe of the loſs of her father, become her huſband, and be a father to her!

She departed, and her daughter informed me that ſhe had been tormented by the reproaches of her ſiſters, who openly accuſed her of having been in the plot, though ſhe would have gladly conſented to the loſs of her own life to have preſerved that of her father. At theſe words ſhe burſt into tears, but continued her diſcourſe by obſerving, that, in the preſent ſituation, no other reſource offered itſelf to her but to follow me: but, in order that the public might not reproach her mother for having conſented to her departure with me, ſhe requeſted that I would cauſe her to be carried off. I promiſed to proceed accordingly; after which ſhe likewiſe retired, wiſhing me ſucceſs in the conduct of my enterprize.

At a quarter after nine, having received no anſwer from the Coſſacks, I ordered four fires to be lighted, at the diſtance of three fathoms from each angle of the church. At half an hour after nine, I received intelligence that a number of handkerchiefs were ſeen faſtened to piquets on the mountain, with which ſignals were made. At three quarters after nine, about fifty men were ſeen running with all their force towards the fortreſs, but without arms, which led me to think that the Coſſacks had determined to ſurrender. At eleven minutes after ten, two Coſſacks appeared before me, almoſt breathleſs, who told me that they had been diſpatched to inform me that my firſt propoſition was accepted, and that,

Digitized by Google

that, in the courſe of half an hour, the whole troop would preſent themſelves unarmed; for which reaſon they begged me to proceed no further until they could arrive.

A moment afterwards Sibeaw likewiſe arrived, and declared that on the firſt reading of his letter, they had determined to march ſtrait to the church to deliver their families, but on being informed by the women that the combuſtible matters were piled together, and the fire at hand, ſo that their reſolution would only haſten the deſtruction of ſo many innocent creatures, they entered into a debate, which could end only in the impriſonment of the hettman, whom they were bringing to me. At a quarter paſt eleven, the troops at laſt arrived, and as I had given my orders to Mr. Panow, he cauſed thoſe to enter into the fort whom I had determined on as hoſtages, and ſent the others to the church to bring their wives into the town. At the ſame time he took the precaution to ſend a detachment to the mountain, for the purpoſe of guarding the arms until they ſhould be removed into the fort. Every thing being thus in a ſtate of tranquility, I cauſed the caſemate to be opened, out of which came forty-two ſoldiers and the chancellor, whom I ſent to accompany the hettman. The number of our hoſtages amounted to fifty-two perſons, all principal men of the place, whoſe lives were to anſwer for the behaviour of the people.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XXIX.

TRANSACTIONS FROM THE TIME OF THE RECEIVING OF HOSTAGES FROM THE MILITARY OF THE PROVINCE, TO THE FINAL EMBARKATION OF THE COUNT AND HIS PARTY IN THE ST. PETER AND ST. PAUL.

AT noon Mr. Panow made a review of our aſſociates, and reported that Mr. Meder was not preſent. Search was made among the dead, but he was not found, and we were very uneaſy concerning his fate, until Mr. Cruſtiew aſſured us that he believed he was ſecurely hidden at home, and that if I pleaſed to ſend he had no doubt but he would be found in the oven. Mr. Panow immediately ſent four armed companions, who returned with him, but before he was brought in, Mr. Cruſtiew informed me that Mr. Meder had been found on his knees, and that on their entrance he cried out he was innocent, and knew nothing of the plot. This recital made us laugh, but I was greatly ſurprized when I heard that Mr. Meder ſtill believed that he was in the hands of government. For the more perfect aſſurance of this, I ſent for him. At his firſt appearance he threw himſelf on the ground, and repeated his oaths that he knew nothing of the plot. I cauſed him to be lifted up, but this did not prevent his taking me for the governor, and continuing his delirium. It was not 'till after I had ſhaken hands with him, and given him a glaſs of brandy, that he came to himſelf, and freely related, that at the firſt firing he withdrew into his houſe, and prayed to God for our

Digitized by Google

our preſervation, and that about day-break, having heard the Coſſacks knock at the door, he fainted away, and when he came to himſelf he was convinced of our deſtruction; an idea which had deprived him of his preſence of mind.

After taking a little refreſhment, I gave my orders to each of the chiefs. Mr. Cruſtiew was charged to go down the river to ſeize the corvette St. Peter and St. Paul, with the aſſiſtance of Mr. Kuzneczow and his party, and to burn all the other ſhips or barks. Mr. Baturin was ordered to examine the magazine and the treaſury, to make an inventory of their contents. Mr. Panow undertook to ſuperintend the funeral of the late governor, and the burial of the dead. Mr. Wynbladth had the care of the military ſervices; and for my own part, as my wound became exceedingly painful, I was incapable of performing any duty; but I placed all my hope in the ſkill of Mr. Meder; for Mr. Lapin's knowledge extended no further than to the treatment of wounds.

In the evening I entreated Madame Nilow to permit me to ſee her, but ſhe refuſed, In the night Miſs Aphanaſia came to ſee me, and after expreſſing her grief for my ſufferings, ſhe informed me that Madame Nilow intending to depart in two days, it would be neceſſary to carry her off as ſoon as poſſible. I diſſipated the apprehenſions of this amiable young lady, and afterwards had a light ſleep.

On the 28th, every preparation being ready for the funeral, I gave orders to acquaint Madame Nilow that the ceremony waited for her orders. She determined that it ſhould be performed without delay. The whole town was therefore obliged to repair to the church; and the burial

Digitized by Google

burial was made with the greateſt pomp. Twenty one guns were fired from the fortreſs. After this ceremony I ordered Mr. Panow to perſuade the archbiſhop either by threatenings or promiſes, to preach a ſermon in the church in favour of the revolution we had produced, and afterwards to receive the oath of fidelity, from all my companions towards me, upon the goſpels at the altar, and that after all this ceremony he ſhould carry away the miraculous image of St. Nicholas, in order that the liturgy might be duly performed on board. This proceeding appeared to me to be uſeful, as by means of their religious ſuperſtition, I might have the greater power over the minds of ſuch as were governed by the prejudices of their faith. I paſſed this day under a fever, and was informed in the evening, that every thing had been conducted in the beſt poſſible order. Towards midnight the fever returned, and I had only time to inſtruct Mr. Panow of my intention to carry off Miſs Nilow, and to give him my reaſons for ſo doing.

May the 2d. During the three foregoing days I was delirious, in which time I was bled three times, and Mr. Panow did not think proper to interrupt me; but at three in the afternoon Mr. Meder affirming that I was out of danger, he informed me that Mr. Cruſtiew had taken poſſeſſion of the corvette, and that the inventories of the contents of the magazines were made; the people being at preſent buſied in collecting proviſions for our voyage. And laſt of all he informed me, that Madame Nilow was gone, and that the inſtant before her departure ſhe came to ſee me, and wept bitterly, without ſpeaking a word. I then aſked what was become of her daughter, and he replied, that the evening before

Digitized by Google

before the departure of her mother, he had caused her to come out of the window without the least knowledge of her sisters, who, at their awaking, made a disturbance. But that their mother having hastened their departure, shewed great signs of resentment against her daughter who had escaped; by which means her other sisters were persuaded that the disappearance of their youngest sister was voluntary. He informed me, that since their departure Miss Aphanasia had not quitted my bed-side until this day, after Mr. Meder had assured her that I was out of danger, and persuaded her to take some rest.

In the evening, finding myself somewhat better, I admitted the officers of my party and my associates, to whom I expressed my strong sense of their behaviour. This day I ordered rafts to be made, to carry our artillery and ammunition on board the vessel, and on this same day likewise eighteen volunteers offered themselves to follow my fortunes, among whom was Ismailow, the nephew of the chancellor. This man had contrived sufferings for the secretary of the chancery, Mr. Szudeikin, by charging him with all the mischief he had himself intended doing to the company; and during the night, he insinuated himself so well into the good opinion of my companions, that he obtained not only his pardon from them, but likewise their assistance to revenge himself on Szudeikin for several different proceedings.

This rascal conducted them to the house of Szudeikin, who certainly had made no attempts to injure us, where they dragged him out of bed, beat him severely, and after pillaging his house, left him half dead.

On the 3d of May, after I had received an account

Digitized by Google

from Mr. Panow of the conduct of Iſmailow, I cauſed him to be put in irons. On the ſame day I had the archives of the chancery packed up, to carry them with me. The great quantity of furs which my officers found in the magazines, made me perfectly eaſy, as to the means of providing for the ſubſiſtence of all my companions on my arrival in Europe. I therefore began to enjoy ſome calmneſs, when at ten o'clock Miſs Aphanaſia came to me. She at firſt uſed every effort to conceal her ſorrow and tears, but they at laſt overcame her attempts, and, as ſhe was oppreſſed by extreme grief, I had not much difficulty in obtaining a knowledge of what afflicted her. The information ſhe had received gave me great uneaſineſs at firſt; but at laſt ſhe inſpired me with that reſpect which a noble confidence produces in all the affairs of life. This amiable young lady put a letter into my hands, and ſimply ſaid, I know all, forgive the firſt emotions of grief; I am prepared, and you have no future weakneſs to fear. Surprized at the reſolute tone with which ſhe pronounced theſe words, I opened the letter: it was written by Stephanow, who informed Miſs Aphanaſia, that after having been deceived and betrayed by me, ſhe owed the moſt eminent vengeance to herſelf and family; to effect which he offered his ſervices. He informed her that I was married, and conſequently incapable of placing her in any eſtimable rank of life. He repreſented, that after this information, as ſhe could never become my wife, ſhe could not without diſhonour follow my party: and he finiſhed his letter by declaring, that he would efface her ſhame by my blood, for which purpoſe he waited only the re-eſtabliſhment of his health, in order to offer her his hand.

This

Digitized by Google

This letter, at any other time, would have inſpired me with pity for an unhappy man, who was ruſhing haſtily to his deſtruction; but at that moment it affected me ſtrongly. For I had propoſed to defer my confeſſion until I could procure a proper match for the young lady. In this ſtate of aſtoniſhment ſhe rouſed me out of my reverie, by ſaying, "Liſten my dear friend, do not af-"flict yourſelf: your Aphanaſia will not be unhappy. "She loves you, and will always love you. She cannot "call herſelf your wife, but you may keep her as your "child." Immediately after which ſhe ſaid, "Shall it not "be ſo, my dear papa." This ingenuity and freedom of character, united to the heroic ſentiments of ſo amiable a perſon, went to my heart, and I could not avoid paying the tribute to ſuch elevated ſentiments. I begged her pardon for having concealed my ſituation from her, and pleaded in my juſtification, that I was actuated by a regard for my family, and connected with a company whoſe members had expoſed their lives to preſerve mine; and, with a view to intereſt her ſtill more, and obtain her indulgence, I likewiſe urged as an excuſe, the ſentiments that I entertained for her. My words, though very ill calculated for my juſtification, were received with ſuch intereſt as ſecured my pardon, which ſhe pronounced by declaring, that nothing in the world could deſtroy her attachment for me. She added, that ſhe would be contented to live in the country where I ſhould fix my abode, and ſhould enjoy perfect happineſs in ſeeing me, and calling me father. Her hopes, ſhe ſaid, were to enjoy perfect repoſe in the boſom of my family, as ſhe was reſolved to renounce marriage intirely; and the only promiſe ſhe requeſted of

Digitized by Google

me was, to consider her as my own daughter, and permit her to change her cloathing, with a view that, when cloathed as a man, she might be less embarrassing to me.

Mr. Panow interrupted our conversation. This faithful friend being informed of what had passed, desired leave to go and destroy his relation; but soon after, hearing the resolution of Miss Aphanasia, he threw himself at her feet, to render homage to her courage. She at last retired with that tranquility of mind which can only result from a resolution firmly taken. After her departure Mr. Panow informed me, that he had heard the day before, that Miss Aphanasia had discovered my marriage, though he had not been able to discover the name of the person who had betrayed me. He begged me to permit him to abandon his relation to justice, in order to deliver society from a monster, who, by his intrigues and wickedness, might hereafter lead the whole company to destruction. It was not without great difficulty that I could dissuade him from his intentions, but at last I succeeded. At this instant Mr. Baturin arrived, who informed me he had been present at a scene with Mr. Stephanow, where Miss Aphanasia having come in, made the bittersest reproaches for his want of attachment and fidelity to me. She declared that she despised his character and his person; that she had never looked upon him in any other light than as a monster of impiety and ingratitude; that he was basely mistaken to think that she had ever wished to become my wife, as she knew my situation from myself: and that her determination to attach herself to me was as a friend and daughter. She finished her discourse by advising Stephanow

Digitized by Google

phanow to enter into his own breaſt, to diſmiſs every idea of love towards her, and alter his behaviour in future. Stephanow, irritated at this diſcourſe, became furious, and took up one of the piſtols which lay beſide his bed; but Baturin diſarmed him, and cauſed him to be immediately conducted into a ſeparate houſe, where he was at that time, guarded by two of the aſſociates.

This day I diſtributed among my aſſociates all the money of the imperial cheſt, and a quantity of ſilk, ſatitn, and taffaties. I likewiſe received a letter from Mr. Cruſtiew, who preſſed me to haſten to the port, in order to reſtrain the aſſociates, who had behaved improperly to the natives.

May the 4th. This day a council was held to judge Mr. Stephanow, and ſentence was paſſed, that he ſhould be excluded, in every reſpect, from their meetings, and from all command among the aſſociates. Juſt before the breaking up of the committee, Miſs Aphanaſia preſented herſelf in the dreſs, and with the arms of a man, and the company named her Achilles. Her figure in this dreſs was charming, and ſhe certainly had as much courage as it is poſſible for a woman to have. About noon the rafts being ready, I ſent twenty-five of the aſſociates to the ſea ſide, with thirty-three hoſtages under their care, the charge of whom was embarraſſing to me in the town. I likewiſe ſent one hundred and forty-ſix ſledges by land, loaded with forces, to be embarked on board the corvette.

On the 5th of May, 1771, I ordered the prieſt to celebrate ſolemn divine ſervice, and at the reading of the goſpel I cauſed all the aſſociates who were preſent to enter

Digitized by Google

into an oath of fidelity towards me. At the end of this ſervice I gave an entertainment at the fort, at which ſeveral of the inhabitants were preſent. At half paſt ſeven o'clock I gave orders for our departure on the 6th of May.

On the 6th, after having nominated perſons to the adminiſtration, and cauſed the inhabitants to make oath that they would do nothing without the conſent of me or my companions, during the whole time we ſhould continue at Kamchatka, I effected my departure, and the buſineſs was tranſacted to the great contentment of both parties, though from different cauſes. At eleven o'clock in the evening, I arrived at Tſekawka, where I was received with enthuſiaſm by my companions and by Mr. Cſurin, commander of the corvette, who aſſured me that the veſſel would be ready to ſail on the 11th of May.

On the 7th, after viſiting the works, I was ſatisfied with the aſſiduity of my companions. My ſatisfaction was ſtill greater to ſee one hundred and eighty Coſſacks at work, whom they had forced to aſiſt them. This day Mr. Cruſtiew warned me that the Kamchadal tajon of Kawka had entered into an oath with a lieutenant of the garriſon, who had eſcaped, and had promiſed to aſſaſſinate me, at the ſame time that he informed me that the tajon was come, and requeſted permiſſion to ſpeak to me. I gave immediate orders to ſeize him, and bring him before me, where he denied the accuſation, though he admitted that the lieutenant had made the propoſal to him. A piſtol found on this emiſſary aggravated his caſe, and convinced me of the propriety of adminiſtering to him fifty ſtrokes of a bludgeon. He had ſcarcely received twelve before he confeſſed his crime, and declared that the lieutenant

Digitized by Google

tenant was then with the tajon of a neighbouring village, together with Mr. Gurgiew, brother in law to Mr. Crustiew, who was ſtrongly attached to the late government. Upon this depoſition, I ſent Mr. Kuzneczow, with ſix aſſociates, to ſeize the criminals, whom they brought back at five o'clock. Their ſentence, and its execution, was deferred till the following day. On this day I received a requeſt from more than thirty women and girls, who were deſirous of following the fortune of their friends, but as it was impoſſible for us to take ſo large a number of people on board, three only were accepted, and the others were refuſed, with the promiſe, that on our arrival at the firſt iſland, we would ſend the veſſel for them.

On the 8th in the morning, the company condemned Mr. Gurgiew the exile, and Mr. Valnoy the lieutenant, to receive fifty ſtrokes of the knowt, and the tajon double the number. This was inſtantly executed; and Meſſrs. Gurgiew and Valnoy were ſent to the town to be cured.

On this day fourteen exiles arrived from different places, and begged me to receive them into our ſociety, which was agreed to. At ſix o'clock the veſſel, having undergone a complete repair, was rigged, and twenty-two bears were this day ſalted as part of our ſea ſtock.

On the 9th and 10th the company were buſied in loading the veſſel. On the 11th, all being ready for departure, I delivered the hoſtages, and ſent them back to the town, except Mr. Szudeikin, ſecretary of the chancery, whom the company forced to embark, to ſerve them in quality of cook, for which they gave us as a reaſon, that it was neceſſary he ſhould do penance for the miſchiefs he had occaſioned to the ſociety at Kamchatka.

Digitized by Google

chatka. On my arrival on board, I hoiſted the colours of the confederation of Poland, which ceremony was attended with the diſcharge of twenty guns.

CHAP. XXX.

A SHORT EXTRACT OF VOYAGES MADE TO THE EASTWARD OF KAMCHATKA.

AS a ſupplement to this volume, I ſhall give a ſhort extract of the different voyages undertaken to the eaſtward of Kamchatka, the manuſcripts of which I found in the chancery.

In the year 1728, captain Beering, in company with captain Tſchirikow, made an expedition to diſcover the continent of America; but they went no further than cape Naninſkoy, which the Ruſſians ſuppoſed to be cape Tſchukotſkoy. This firſt expedition not having anſwered the intentions of the court of Ruſſia, Mr. Kreniczin made another in the year 1729, which was not attended with any greater advantage. The third expedition, undertaken by theſe two captains in the year 1741, was more ſucceſsful. They viſited the coaſt of America, and ſome iſlands. Captain Beering, on his return, was ſhipwrecked on an iſland near Kamchatka, on which he died, and the crew, in honour of their captain, named the iſland after him. Captain Tſchirikow received his crew on board,

Digitized by Google

board, and returned to Kamchatka in the year 1742. His relation ſatisfied the minds of the Ruſſians, and eſpecially the traders, who haſtened to fit out veſſels in queſt of the riches of theſe new iſlands.

The ſecond expedition was that of two aſſociates, Buſſo and Srebernikow, who went no further than Beering's and the copper iſland. This voyage was undertaken the 22d of May, 1745, and they returned in 1746.

The third expedition was that of Nevodſchikow, likewiſe, in the year 1745, in the galliot Eudochia, in which he ſailed to the Aleuthes iſlands, neareſt to Kamchatka. The great number of beavers he took afforded him a ſufficient booty, and induced him to return, after having left traces of unexampled cruelty behind him. He carried off with him ſeveral young people of the natives; but no more than one lived to arrive at Kamchatka.

The fourth was performed in the year 1747 by two veſſels, fitted out by and belonging to Mr. Cholodilow, a merchant. One of theſe veſſels anchored at Beering's iſle, and after hunting on this iſland, returned to Kamchatka. Her companion directed her courſe towards the eaſt, and, after viſiting ſeveral iſlands, brought back a very rich cargo of beavers and foxes ſkins.

The fifth was performed in the year 1750 by a company under an excluſive privilege. No great progreſs was made in this expedition; for the firſt iſlands having ſufficed to load the four ſhips, they returned to Kamchatka.

The ſixth expedition was that of Nikiphor Trapeſnikow, in the year 1750. The government ſent on board his veſſel a military officer, with twenty-five Coſſacks;

Digitized by Google

they viſited ſeveral of the Aleuthes iſlands, and on their return they falſely reported that they had ſubjected theſe iſlands to the power of Ruſſia. For in the year 1752 the governor of Kamchatka, having ſent a ſottnik with ſome Coſſacks, to receive the tribute, they were all cut off. The return of Trapeſnikow greatly increaſed the rage for fitting out veſſels, his ſingle veſſel having brought back a cargo worth one hundred and forty-two thouſand roubles.

The ſeventh voyage was undertaken by the ſame Trapeſnikow, in the year 1754, on board the brigantine St. Nicholas. This voyage produced the diſcovery of the iſland Atak.

The eighth was made by Srebernikow, who firſt diſcovered the iſlands of Foxes. He went as far as 29 deg. of longitude from Bolſha.

The ninth was undertaken by Tolſty in the year 1756, who proceeded as far as Ulanaxa, and returned with a cargo valued at two hundred thouſand roubles.

The tenth enterprize was made by Stadeneczow, in the year 1757, who ran aground on the iſland of Urumuſir, where moſt of the people on board were cut off.

The eleventh was undertaken by Trapeſnikow, who departed from Kamchatka in the year 1758, and after having viſited ſeveral iſlands, came at laſt to Urumuſir, where he was repeatedly attacked by the natives, who ſlew twenty-ſix of his people.

The twelfth was undertaken by Boſcarew in the year 1760, who went as far as the iſland Alaxa, which is very near the continent of America. Moſt of his crew were cut off by the natives of that place.

The

Digitized by Google

The thirteenth expedition was made in the year 1762, at the expence of an aſſociation, who fitted out and armed five veſſels, with the intention of examining the commerce, hunting, and fiſhery of the Aleuthes iſlands, where they were to form a colony; but the ignorance of the commanders of theſe veſſels cauſed the loſs of four, and the fifth returned, after three years abſence. The murders and robberies perpetrated by this armament on the inhabitants are incredible.

The fourteenth was undertaken by Soloniow, in the year 1764. This veſſel moored on the coaſt of the main land of America, which the commander miſtaking for the iſland of Unalakſa, he had continual combats with the natives, and at laſt, after a conſiderable loſs, was compelled to retire to a ſmall iſland, on whoſe inhabitants he inhumanly revenged his loſs. Two thirds of his people died of the ſcurvy before his return to Kamchatka.

The fifteenth voyage was made by Oczederin, in the year 1765. This navigator confined his views to fiſhing and the chace in the ſmall iſlands, and did not venture to approach the coaſt of Unalakſa.

The ſixteenth expedition was made by captain Peter Kreniczin, who quitted Kamchatka in the year 1768, and inſtead of endeavouring to carry his diſcoveries as far as the continent, he remained two whole years on a ſmall iſland, from which he ſent his armed ſailors, his canoes, and ſhallop, to hunt and fiſh, and to trade with the natives; ſo that government received no other benefit than that of paying out the charges of the expedition. Captain Kreniczin likewiſe derived no advantage from his voyage; for he was drowned in the river of Kamchatka, by his

Digitized by Google

crew, on his return, in the year 1770. Mr. Levaſchieff, therefore, was the only gainer, for he had all the profit without receiving any blame, as he, in quality of ſubordinate to Mr. Kreniezin, was not reſponſible for the behaviour of his commander.

The ſeventeenth expedition was that of the corvette St. Peter and St. Paul, in which I had the good fortune to quit Kamchatka on the 12th of May 1771, and arrived at Macao on the 22d of September in the ſame year. *

* Here ends the firſt Volume, according to the diviſion made by the Count, whoſe ſignature is affixed to the manuſcript in this place.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XXXI.

MINUTES DRAWN UP, FOR THE PURPOSE OF FORMING A CHART, TOGETHER WITH DETAILS RESPECTING SIBERIA AND THE SEA COAST OF KAMCHATKA; AND A DESCRIPTION OF THE KURELLES AND ALEUTHES ISLANDS.

A Wiſh to profit by the leiſure time I enjoyed, and to divert diſagreeable reflections, led me to form this chart, and to add ſuch information as I could obtain reſpecting the eaſtern parts of the northern continent, in order that they might ſerve for the inſtruction and aſſiſtance of enterprizing navigators. *

A deſcription of the town of Jakutzk, the remoteſt town in Siberia, ſituated in northern Tartary. This town lies † in the ſixty-third degree of north latitude, at the diſtance of one hundred and twenty-five french leagues from Ochoczk, a town and port on the eaſtern coaſt of the frontier. Jakutzk is ſubject to the government of Irkuczk, and is under the command of a voivode. In the year 1764 it was reckoned that forty thouſand ſouls were ſubject to the government of this town, including the whole nation of the Jakutt Tartars, a wandering people, who occupy the immenſe deſarts which form this province. The town is inhabited by exiles and Coſſacks, who are always

* The chart here mentioned has not come to the hands of the editor: it is therefore ſuppoſed that the Count took it with him in his laſt expedition, where, in all probability, it was loſt.

† In lat. 62 deg. 1 min. 50 ſec. N. and long. 147 deg. E. from Ferro: both determined by obſervation. See Coxe's Ruſſian Diſcoveries, page 387.

Digitized by Google

always armed in readineſs to keep the Jakutt chiefs in dependence. On the banks of the river Lena ſtands a fortreſs built in wood; the garriſon of which conſiſts of one hundred and fifty ſoldiers. Several rich merchants are ſettled in this town, who carry on the fur trade. All the caravans that paſs from Ruſſia to Ochoczk or Kamchatka are obliged to winter in this town, on account of the great quantity of ſnow and the exceſſive cold, which prevents them from going forward during the whole winter, which laſts full eight months.

In the year 1770, a conſiderable quantity of cannon, anchors, cables, and other marine ſtores, arrived in this town deſtined for the port of Ochoczk, where it was intended to eſtabliſh a more conſiderable ſea force; but the impoſſibility of drawing theſe heavy articles by dogs, obliged government to give up the project. I found one hundred and twenty-five officers exiled in this province, who, ſince the reign of the preſent Empreſs, have been baniſhed into this barbarous country. The communication between this town and Ochoczk is kept up by the Jakutts, who are obliged annually, in the month of June, to provide ſix thouſand horſes. The caravan employs three months on the road from here to Ochoczk, and the horſes paſs no further than Judoma; from whence dogs and ſledges are made uſe of to carry their merchandize to Ochoczk.

When I came myſelf along this road, on which I was detained ninety-five days, I ſaw no more than eighty horſes, with which we were ſupplied, and all theſe, except ſeventeen, died on the road. It is impoſſible for government to remedy this inconvenience, which, in proceſs

Digitized by Google

ceſs of time, muſt cut off all communication by land with Ochoczk. The proſpect of this event has engaged the Ruſſian government to make preparations for ſecuring the navigation of the river Amour, which falls into the ſea to the ſouthward of the iſland Sachalin, and runs through the ſouthern parts of Siberia.

The town of Uda is ſituated on the banks of a river of the ſame name in 55 deg. 24 min. N. lat. and 341 deg. 30 min. long. from Kamchatka. This ſmall town is inhabited by one hundred families of exiles, who have thrown off their ſubjection to the Ruſſian government, and eſtabliſhed regulations among themſelves. The inhabitants of this town have opened a trade with Korea, and can live without the aſſiſtance of Ruſſia. Inſtead of oxen and cows, this new colony maintains a flock of elks, the fleſh of which is good; the females afford a conſiderable quantity of milk, which they make into butter and cheeſe. I have eaten of both at Jakutzk. This province affords the moſt beautiful ſables, and rivals the commerce of Ruſſia, to the no ſmall prejudice of the latter.

In the year 1770, the government of Ochoczk detached a ſerjeant, named Lohner, with twenty-four ſoldiers and eighty Coſſacks, to reduce the town of Uda; but this troop, inſtead of executing the orders intruſted to them, deſerted, and fixed their abode in Korea.

The river Uda would be navigable, if its entrance were not ſtopped by quickſands. From Uda to Ochoczk the coaſt runs N. E. and may be ſailed along with ſafety every where, at the diſtance of three leagues; the depth of water being from fourteen to fifteen fathoms. The whole extent of this coaſt is inhabited by the Tunguſi, who ſub-

ſiſt

ſiſt on their flocks of elks, and the whales, which ſometimes get aground. It has been obſerved that the current ſets from N. to S. on this coaſt the whole year round, and the tide riſes ſix feet four inches.

The port of Ochoczk * in the lat. of 59 deg. 19 min. N. and 348 deg. 10 min. long. from the meridian of Kamchatka, is formed by a river of the ſame name. The entrance of this harbour is due north. The town is built on the banks of the river, and a pretended fortreſs commands the harbour. The exiles are employed in ſea affairs, and there is no year which is not ſignalized by ſome revolt. This diſpoſition which is maintained by deſpair, will open the entrance of Siberia to the firſt comer, and I can confidently affirm, that the arrival of the firſt foreign veſſel will produce a revolution in Siberia: for from Ochoczk to Tobolczk there are at leaſt one hundred and ſixty thouſand exiles, or their deſcendants, all bearing arms. The different hords of Tartars would join the common cauſe to overthrow the Ruſſian dominion. This event cannot be far diſtant, and Ruſſia will find herſelf, by a ſtroke of this nature, deprived of all that ſupport which alone enables her to play a principal part in Europe, by virtue of the conſiderable augmentation of her revenue.

Several veſſels are diſpatched yearly from this port: one to Idziga; one to Tigil; three to Kamchatka, and eight or ten to the Aleuthes iſlands. The cargoes of theſe veſſels conſiſt in tobacco, a ſmall quantity of flour, brandy, gunpowder, and ſome toys. On their return they bring back the ſkins of ſables, martins, beavers, foxes, roſtomaks,

* Lies in 59 deg. 22 min. N. lat. and 160 deg. 7 min. E. long. from Ferro, both by obſervation. See Coxe's Ruſſian Diſcoveries, page 387.

Digitized by Google

maks, bears, ermins, elks and copper, which they have for ſome years paſt brought from Beerings iſle. The Ruſſians have hitherto carried on this trade without interruption; but ſince the deſertion of ſeveral exiles, who have fixed their abode in the Aleuthes iſlands, and entered into alliance with the ſavages, ſeveral veſſels have been taken, and their crews cut off. Several others likewiſe have ſurrendered their veſſels, and have eſtabliſhed themſelves in theſe iſlands, inſtead of returning to Siberia. The ſpirit of deſertion being thus excited among the common people, veſſels are no longer fitted out but with apprehenſion; and the parties concerned petition government to put troops on board each veſſel, to keep their crews in ſubjection. But who can anſwer for the ideas of the ſoldiers: they likewiſe are men, and the love of liberty may have its influence on them as well as on others.

Ruſſia is indebted, for the peaceable poſſeſſion of this trade, only to the diſtance and the ſecrecy it preſerves reſpecting its advantages, and the indolence of the other ſtates of Europe, which have not made ſufficient enquiries into the ſources of the power of this vaſt monarchy. The immenſity and extent of its poſſeſſions appears incredible to them, and prevents them from adopting the opinion, that, with the ſlighteſt ſacrifice and exertions, its force may be overthrown, and deſtroyed at pleaſure.

The province of Ochoczk is in all reſpects the moſt diſagreeable ſpot on the face of the earth; covered with perpetual ſnow and ice, it produces neither vegetable food, nor even paſture for cattle: all the ſubſiſtence which is

Digitized by Google

found there, conſiſts in fiſh and rein deer. Theſe laſt animals are fed with moſs, which grows on the rocks. In the province of Ochoczk grows cedar wood of prodigious thickneſs and height, very proper for ſhipping; the coaſt from Ochoczk to Taoui runs from E. to E. N. E; and at the diſtance of three leagues off ſhore The depth of water is from fourteen to fifteen fathom ſandy ground. The current ſets from north to the eaſtward.

Taoui is a ſmall town and fortreſs, built on the banks of a river of the ſame name, in which reſides a hettman of Coſſacks, with twenty exiled families, to keep the Coſſacks in dependence. It is ſituated in 60 deg. 15 min. N. lat. and 353 deg. 50 min. long. from the meridian of Kamchatka. The river of Taoui forms a harbour of ſmall depth, and the communication between Taoui and Ochoczk by ſea, is carried on by the boats called Bajdara.

Idziga is a town and fortreſs, built on the banks of the river of the ſame name, in which reſides a voivode with a garriſon of one hundred ſoldiers, three or four hundred Coſſacks, and about two hundred families of exiles. This town reckons ſix thouſand tributary Coſſacks, who are continually at war with the people Cſuckſi. It is ſituated in the 63d degree of north latitude, and 4 deg. 20 min. E. long. from Bolſha.

Cape Penſina lies in 62 deg. 28 min. N. lat. and 4 deg. 28 min. long. from Bolſha. This cape divides the gulph of Penſina into two arms; the northernmoſt receives the river of Penſina, on the banks of which ſtands the town and fortreſs of Anadir.

The

Digitized by Google

The river Penſina is ſituated in 63 deg. 30 min. N. lat. and 8 deg. 15 min. long. from Bolſha. The entrance of the river is hardly practicable, on account of the ſunken rocks and ice which continually float in it.

The town and fortreſs of Tigille is ſituated on the banks of the river of the ſame name, which forms a very beautiful harbour, though ſhallow, in which ſmall veſſels only can enter. The entrance of this harbour lies in 58 deg. 42 min. N. lat. and 2 deg. 50 min. long. from Bolſha. The town is commanded by a voivode, and the garriſon compoſed of eighty ſoldiers, one hundred Coſſacks, and two hundred exiles. The Cſuckſi often inſult the outer gates, and kill travellers. The limits of the province of Kamchatka are eſtabliſhed at two verſtes, to the ſouthward of this town. I ſhall proceed to give a more ample account of this province.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XXXII.

A DESCRIPTION OF KAMCHATKA.

KAmchatka is a conſiderable peninſula, extending to 58 deg. 41 min. N. lat. and terminated to the ſouthward by a cape ſituated in 51 deg. 15 min. N. lat. Its form on the map reſembles a dog's tongue. Many rivers abounding with fiſh run through this peninſula, but none of them are navigable, excepting the river of Kamchatka and the river of Bolſha. The river of Kamchatka is named Santal by the natives. It falls into the ſea on the eaſtern coaſt of the peninſula in 56 deg. 15 min. N. lat. and its courſe before it falls into the ſea is from N. to S. On the banks of this river is built a town called Niſney Oſtrogg, commanded by a lieutenant immediately dependant on the governor of Kamchatka, who reſides in the town of Bolſha, the capital of the province.

The town of Niſney Oſtrogg is compoſed of three hundred houſes, inhabited by a mixture of Coſſacks and exiles, with a ſmall proportion of natives: the town has two churches where divine ſervice is performed by a protopope and ſix other prieſts. The diſtrict ſubjected to this town contains about three thouſand Kamchadales, who are conſtantly employed in the chace and fiſhing.

The ſecond town of this peninſula is Bolſhoreczkoy Oſtrogg, which, as I have obſerved, is the capital. It is compoſed of five hundred houſes regularly built, which form one ſingle ſtreet inhabited by Coſſacks. It is ſituated

Digitized by Google

ated in 53 deg. 30 min. N. lat. and takes its name from the river on whoſe banks it ſtands. For the name Bolſhoretzkoy denotes a great river, and Bolſhoretzkoy Oſtrogg is as much as to ſay the town of a great river.

To the ſouthward of the town, within cannon-ſhot, is built a fortreſs, tolerably regular, having a ditch, five baſtions, and twenty battering cannon. In this fortreſs the governor reſides, with a garriſon of two hundred and eighty ſoldiers under his command. At a ſmall diſtance from the fortreſs ſtands the metropolitan church, which is a wooden edifice, at a diſtance from all other buildings. The place of the exiles is to the Weſt of the town, near a wood, at the diſtance of half a league. It was in the vicinity of this town that my place of exile was appointed, and in which, by the ſpecial grace of her Majeſty the reigning empreſs and autocratrix of all the Ruſſias, a ſufficient ſpace of ground was to be aſſigned for the burial of my body. Happily, however, the order of predeſtination did not agree with the orders of this ſovereign power. For, after my arrival in a ſtate of ſlavery at the end of the year 1770, I found myſelf maſter of the entire province, the town and fortreſs, in April, 1771.

The town of Bolſha is five leagues diſtant to the eaſtward of the ſea coaſt, and from the mouth of the river. In a ſtrait direction from Bolſha, on the eaſtern coaſt of the peninſula, is ſituated, the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, which has ſufficient depth of water to receive the largeſt veſſels, though its entrance is difficult.

This port is perfectly well adapted for building ſhipping; but, as there is no wood proper for that purpoſe

to

Digitized by Google

to be found throughout all Kamchatka, it is reaſonable to think that Ruſſia will derive no advantage from this circumſtance. To the northward of the peninſula is a volcano, which was in the ſtrongeſt ſtate of irruption during my ſtay. I viſited it, and, as I have already mentioned, narrowly eſcaped becoming the victim of my curioſity.

The ground of this peninſula exhibits one ſingle tract of ſnow, interſperſed with mountains, many of which throw out burning matter, and from which a number of mineral ſprings iſſue forth. No vegetable has thriven in this ungrateful climate; for every experiment hitherto made has tended to corroborate this aſſertion. The greateſt advantage which Ruſſia might derive from Kamchatka, beſides its furrs, would be to eſtabliſh ſmelting works for iron and copper. Unfortunately, however, the cruelty with which the Ruſſians have treated the natives has diminiſhed the number. For, at the arrival of the Ruſſians, their number was reckoned at ſeventy thouſand, and during my ſtay it ſcarcely amounted to eleven thouſand, a number which muſt in future be ſtill more diminiſhed by the oppreſſion they ſuffer. They are forced to contribute annually a number of ſlaves for the ſervice of the ſoldiers and Coſſacks, and are beſides compelled to the ſea ſervice. From the moſt authentic examination I am aſſured that the population of the whole peninſula, in the year 1771, conſiſted of

364 Soldiers.
29 Land officers.
422 Ruſſian hunters.
1500 Coſſacks and their officers.
26 Civil officers.

82 Ruſſian

82	Ruſſian merchants.
700	Deſcendants of liberated exiles.
1600	Exiles of different conditions.
8000	Male Kamchadales.
2 or 3000	Female Kamchadales.
40	Ruſſian women.
200	Women, deſcendants of the exiles.
15963	Total.

CHAP. XXXIII.

REMARKS ON THE COAST OF KAMCHATKA.

1. ON the eaſtern coaſt the depth of water is unfathomable, and a conſtant current ſets from north to ſouth.

2. On the weſtern coaſt the depth of water is regular, being ten fathoms at the diſtance of one league from ſhore, twenty at the diſtance of two leagues, and ſo proceeding to one hundred fathom, beyond which diſtance no ſoundings have been taken. The current is from north to ſouth.

The communication inland is continually kept up by ſledges drawn by dogs: but the travellers are often buried in whirlwinds of ſnow. The coaſting trade is carried on by Bajdou, which are the boats of the country made of planks ſewn together with whalebone. The north eaſt coaſt of Kamchatka is inhabited by two nations, Coſſacks and Cſuckſies, enemies of the Ruſſians.

The

Digitized by Google

The different capes of this continent are

Cape Illim, ſituated in 58 deg. 36 min. N. lat. and 5 deg. 45 min. long. from Bolſha.

Cape Olata, 59 deg. 30 min. N. lat. and 11 deg. 0 min. long. from Bolſha.

Cape Suatoi 62 deg. N. lat. and 22 deg. 9 min. long. from Bolſha.

CHAP. XXXIV.

A DESCRIPTION OF THE ALEUTHES ISLANDS DISCOVERED TO THE EASTWARD OF KAMCHATKA.

AS all theſe iſlands which lie further north than 60 deg. N. lat. are uninhabited, I ſhall wave the deſcription of them, and only inſert them in my chart, though the Ruſſians pretend that the Cſukeſies often land on theſe iſlands in their paſſage from one continent to the other. This aſſertion appears to me to be ſo much the better founded, as having myſelf ſeen both the capes at one time, I have no doubt but that theſe emigrations are continually made. The cape * of the weſtern coaſt of America, lies in 63 deg. 15 min. N. lat. and 26 deg. long. from Bolſha. To the north-eaſt of this cape lie two iſlands, which it is affirmed were formerly inhabited, but as they were found without inhabitants in the laſt expedition of captain Levaſcheff in the year 1768, I ſhall paſs them

* This muſt have been Clerke's iſland. See Cooke's laſt voyage, vol. iii. Auguſt 1, 1779.

Digitized by Google

them without further notice, and proceed to more intereſting details.

1. The iſland of Barou is ſituated in 59 deg. N lat. and 23 deg. 13 min. long. from Bolſha. No wood grows on this iſland, but it abounds with beavers and ſea wolves.

2. Ala Gifcha Homin, a cape of the continent of America, is ſituated in 58 deg. N. lat. and 25 deg. 33 min. long. from Bolſha. The coaſt from this cape runs to the north-weſt as far as 59 deg. 45 min. N. lat. The bottom is very irregular, and full of ſand-banks and rocks.

3. The iſland of Kadick, ſituated in 54 deg. 30 min. N. lat. and 33 deg. 16 min. long. from Bolſha, is very well peopled, and abounds with beavers and foxes; it is full of ſulphur, and the inhabitants have wrought iron, which they receive in exchange from the continent. * This iſland is but moderately wooded, and has a river, the entrance of which lies from north to ſouth, and its depth between eight and ten feet. During the ſummer, a large quantity of wild geeſe and ducks come to this iſland, of which the inhabitants collect great ſtore. Their navigation is performed in canoes made of ſkin. Nine other iſlands, all inhabited, are reckoned in the neighbourhood of the iſland Kadick, from which they lie to ſouthward, and ſouth-ſouth-weſt. Theſe iſlands are frequented by the armed veſſels of the hunters from Ochoczk and Bolſha: but the account received by a veſſel which returned from thence in 1769, and brought home ſeveral arrows with heads of ſilver, is entirely falſe, as it has been ſince diſ-

* *La Grande Terre*, America, I ſuppoſe, the natives of which may receive it by the progreſs of exchange from Hudſon's Bay, and other parts of the eaſtern ſides of that continent. T.

Digitized by Google

covered, that the commander of that expedition cauſed theſe ſilver heads to be made himſelf, with the view of obtaining a recompence from government. The truth is that theſe iſlands abound with foxes and beavers, and that in the year 1770, on the 28th of October, a veſſel returned, which had been fitted out by Arſenic Kuzneczow with nine thouſand beaver ſkins, and three thouſand foxes ſkins. It muſt be obſerved that the beavers of theſe iſlands are preferable to thoſe of Canada, and that each of theſe beaver ſkins ſell in China at the price of eighty, one hundred, or one hundred and twenty roubles, and for near twice that ſum in Japan.

4. The iſland of Foxes is ſituate in 53 deg. 45 min N. lat. and 31 deg. 28 min. long. from Bolſha: it abounds in foxes, and is well peopled. The inhabitants know how to work in iron and copper. They obtain the iron from the Ruſſians, and the copper is the produce of their own country. This iſland has a very good harbour on the north-eaſt ſide; but the inhabitants, who have received amongſt them many Ruſſian deſerters, have made preparations for defending the landing. However, they are very willing to trade; and the Ruſſians in this pacific way obtain, in return for brandy, glaſs ware and iron, and an immenſe quantities of furs.

At a ſmall diſtance to the north-weſt lie four other iſlands, and three to the ſouthward. Theſe laſt are ſteep too, and are compoſed of a maſs of rocks. The channel among them is very dangerous; its direction is ſouth-eaſt and north-weſt, but the ſea is often ſo agitated, and the ſurf is ſo dangerous as to threaten the diſmaſting or overſetting of veſſels which may venture through.

5. The

Digitized by Google

5. The iſland Armſchud, ſituated in 53 deg. 0 min. north latitude, and 29 deg. 14 min. longitude from Bolſha, is likewiſe well peopled, and contains a regular town governed by a tajon or chief. In the year 1768 the crew of an armed veſſel of hunters having found a large quantity of marcaſite and copper ore on this iſland, took thoſe minerals for gold, and fixed their abode there, to amaſs a quantity of riches. Some miſunderſtanding occaſioned a war between them and the natives, the event of which was unfortunate for the Ruſſians. Since that time Mr. Ochotyn, an exile, who deſerted from Kamchatka, fixed his abode in this iſland, and made himſelf their chief by having contracted alliances with the natives of the country.

6. The iſland of Urumuſir is ſituated in 52 deg. 35 min. North latitude, and 28 deg. 15 min. longitude from Bolſha: It is very populous, and governed by ſeveral tajons, who are all ſubject to a chief, whom I ſhall have more particular occaſion to mention in my journal. Two other iſlands lie north-eaſt of this iſland, and three others to the north-north-weſt.

7. The iſlands of Beavers are three iſlands called by the Ruſſians Jaſſacznie-oſtrova, or tributary iſlands. The largeſt lies in 58 deg. 0 min. north latitude, and 26 deg. 45 min. longitude, from Bolſha. This iſland has two good harbours; the firſt on the eaſtern coaſt, the entrance of which is ſouth-eaſt; the ſecond the weſtern coaſt, and its entrance north-north-weſt. The inhabitants have been numbered at ſix hundred, who pay one thouſand beaver ſkins as a tribute to the Ruſſians.

Digitized by Google

8. The isle of Cows is in 51 deg. 35 min. north latitude, and 24 deg. 45 min. longitude from Bolsha. This island was thus named from the great quantity of sea-cows which are here found. The flesh of this animal serves for provisions to all the vessels of the hunters. Their teeth are of great value in the commerce with China. There are many bays on the coasts of this island, but the water is shallow, and wood is scarce. Besides these islands there are likewise a great number of others whose situation cannot be determined, and are besides of little consequence, for which reason I shall only mention further,

9. Beering's Island, situated in 55 deg. 45 min. north latitude, and 8 deg. 30 min. longitude, from Bolsha. This island bears the name of the captain who first landed upon it, and ended his life here.

10. The copper island situated in 54 deg. 45 min. N. lat. and 9 deg 50 min. long. from Bolsha. This island is so denominated from the abundance of this * metal, which the vessels take in as ballast, and unload it at Ochoczk, where I have seen large quantities heaped together from which no advantage is derived. Having verified the situation of some of these islands myself, and being assured of their situation by different journals; I have set down nothing by guess; but the following discovery has hitherto remained unknown.

A captain of a vessel named Cusma Koroftilow, who made a voyage and returned to Kamchatka, being attacked with the scurvy, begged me to make a chart from his journal, which he put into my hands, and concerning the truth

* Mostly in a metallic or malleable state. Coxe, page 206.

Digitized by Google

truth of which I ſatisfied myſelf by enquiries of ſeveral perſons who went the voyage with him.

11. The iſland of Cuſma in 48 deg. 45 min. N. lat. and 23 deg. long. from Bolſha, is very well peopled and wooded; the inhabitants are cloathed in the Chineſe manner, with cloth made of a plant reſembling hemp. On the eaſtern ſide of this iſland is a mountain, from which Cuſma and others of his people ſaw land at the diſtance of eight or nine leagues to the eaſtward.

12. The iſland of Pearls, in 47 deg. 32 min. N. lat. and 24 deg. 18 min. long. from Bolſha, is likewiſe well peopled, and the inhabitants live together in ſociety. They are armed with iron inſtruments and bows. As ſeveral large ſailing veſſels were ſeen on the coaſt, it may be preſumed, that there is a communication between this iſland and that of Cuſma. Beſides theſe two iſlands, the journal of Cuſma mentions the diſcovery of a great country, compoſed of ſeveral iſlands, which, according to his eſtimate, lie under the 44th deg. of north latitude. He moored at one of theſe iſlands, which he imagined to be about fifty leagues round. His account induced me to ſeek for theſe iſlands, and I actually found them in the parallel of 46 deg. 12 min. N. lat. and 10 deg. 8 min. long. from Bolſha. Circumſtances unfortunately prevented me from purſuing the diſcovery, ſo that I can do no more than wiſh better ſucceſs to future navigators.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XXXIV.

A DESCRIPTION OF THE KURELLES ISLANDS.

THESE iſlands are twenty-eight in number: their ſituation is between 51 deg. 30 min. and 45 deg. N. lat. The three moſt northerly depend on Kamchatka; but all the others are independent.

The preſent is the moſt exact and moſt poſitive deſcription of theſe iſlands; for I have written nothing but what is real. The relation of captain Spanberg, and ſeveral others, which I found in the archives of Kamchatka, ſuch as that of the Sieur Walton, lieutenant of a veſſel, captain Irtiſchew, captain Chmitewſkoi, lieutenant Sind. But the manuduction of the Sieur Cſorni, who frequented theſe iſlands for twenty-five years paſt, and carried on an excluſive commerce, has afforded me every neceſſary information. *

1. Amphigonon or Alayd, in lat. 51 deg. 30 min. N. and 359 deg. 30 min. long. from Bolſha, is nothing but a rocky mountain ſurrounded with very dangerous reefs.

2. Sumeſu, in 51 deg. 3 min. N. lat. and 30 min. long. from Bolſha. This iſland is likewiſe rocky: it has an harbour on its north ſide, in which ſmall veſſels may winter. Some beavers, and a quantity of the fiſh called Koſattka, are found here. Here is plenty of water, and in winter, the melting of the ſnow forms ſeveral rivulets. From

* This paragraph is tranſlated verbatim.

Digitized by Google

From the ſouthern point of land we ſee the third iſland.

3. Poromuſir, in 50 deg. 52 min. N. lat. and 15 min. long. from Bolſha: it is inacceſſible on account of the rocks and ſunken reefs which ſurrounded it: no wood grows here; the natives land in their boats of ſkin.

4. Cirinky, in N. lat. 50 deg. 7 min. and 10 min. long. from Bolſha. On the weſtern coaſt of this iſland is a very ſpacious and commodious harbour, in which veſſels may anchor at all ſeaſons. This iſland is very thinly inhabited. Cedar and birch grow here, and there is no want of fiſh, beavers, and eſpecially ſea-wolves: ſeveral freſh ſprings are found in the ſouthern part of this iſland.

5. Launath, in lat. 49 deg, 43 min. N. and long. 359 deg. 52 min. from Bolſha. This iſland runs from N. to S. being five leagues long and three broad. It is only occaſionally inhabited by the Kurelles, who come from the more ſoutherly iſlands for the purpoſe of catching beavers. Wood grows on this iſland, but it affords no water, and has no harbour.

6. Trinity in 49 deg. 30 min. N. lat. and 359 deg. 21 min. long. from Bolſha, is merely a heap of rocks.

7. Galanth, in 49 deg. 26 min N. lat. and 23 min. long. from Bolſha. On the weſt ſide of this iſland is a very good harbour. It is well wooded, but water is ſcarce; there are abundance of beavers on this iſland, but it is not inhabited.

8. Colloſſe, in 49 deg. 9 min. N. lat. and 359 deg. 33 min. long. from Bolſha, is nothing more than a heap of rocks and ſand-banks.

9. Rouge

Digitized by Google

9. Rouge is a rock in 49 deg. 7 min. N. lat. and 20 min. long. from Bolſha.

10. Sommeil in 48 deg. 50 min. N. lat. and 359 deg. long. from Bolſha; it is well wooded and produces a quantity of poppies, the ſeed of which being imprudently eaten by three perſons, whom Cſorni had ſent a hunting, threw them into a ſleep, which terminated in death.

11. Volcan, in 48 deg. 40 min. N lat. and 50 min. long. from Bolſha. The volcano was extinguiſhed in the year 1767, after a great earthquake. The principal environs of the mountain are covered with pumice ſtones, together with large lumps of ſulphur, and a quantity of very heavy metal, which has undergone fuſion. This iſland is known by its black appearance.

12. Courbé, in 47 deg. 49 min. N. lat. and 37 min. long. from Bolſha, is nothing more than a heap of rocks.

13. Exile, in lat. 48 deg. 40 min. N. and long. 1 deg. 4 min. from Bolſha. In the year 1757 the Kamchadales found on this iſland five Kurelles, driven out of their own country, which cauſed them to give this name to the iſland. It has few inhabitants, and is little better than a maſs of rocks.

14. L'Agneau, in 48 deg. 27 min. N. lat. and 359 deg. 17 min. long. from Bolſha, is very thinly peopled, but well wooded. The inhabitants of this iſland are very well acquainted with trade, and are always provided with the produce and manufactures of Japan, ſuch as cloths, knives, &c. Theſe iſlanders ſometimes arrive at Kamchatka. On the ſouth weſt ſide of the iſland there is a ſmall harbour.

14. Chien

Digitized by Google

14. Chien (Dog iſland) is ſituated in 48 deg. 22 min. N. lat. and 359 deg. 43 min. long. from Bolſha. It has neither harbour nor freſh water. In the year 1768, Cſorni took ſix thouſand eight hundred ſea-dogs in the ſpace of four months, from which he gave it its name.

16. Vajvoda, in 47 deg. 30 min. N. lat. and 358 deg. 30 min. long. from Bolſha. This iſland was ſo called in honour of Vajvoda Demetri Nedozilow, who, in the year 1762, ſecretly ſent a pilot with 12 ſoldiers to this iſland, with a view to collect a large quantity of gold, which common report affirmed to abound in this place. But as no information had been received in the year 1769 concerning the expedition, Ivan Cſorni viſited it, and found no inhabitants. On the ſouthern ſhore he found a croſs with an inſcription, from which he learned, that this detachment departed for the iſlands Jedzo. This iſland has no port, and produces no gold, but it abounds with beavers and ſea-cows.

17. Uſigak, in 47 deg. 16 min. N. lat. and 1 deg. 13 min. long. from Bolſha. On the ſouth-weſt ſide of this iſland there is an excellent harbour, capable ofreceiving large veſſels. The iſland is wooded all over, and well peopled by the Kurelles, who have built a ſmall town. Ivan Cſorni carried on a very advantageous trade at this place, and aſſured me, that he had at different times bargained with them for at leaſt eighteen pounds of gold duſt, with many pieces of gold from Japan and Jedzo. He ſhewed me theſe different kinds of gold. That of Jedzo differs from the Japaneſe gold by its very pale colour. Cſorni was of opinion that the Japaneſe

Digitized by Google

never come to this island, unless forced by stress of weather.

18. Bouc, in 47 deg. 20 min. N. lat. and 359 deg. 53 min. long. from Bolsha. This island was visited in the year 1740 by the first expedition. They found very fine pearls; but if there were no finer than those I have seen, they are not worth going for.

19. Chevre, in 46 deg. 50 min. N. lat. and 1 deg. 34 min. long. from Bolsha. This island has few inhabitants and no harbour, neither does it possess any other advantage.

20. Marikan lies in 46 deg. 40 min. N. lat. and 359 deg. long. from Bolsha. Its length is thirteen leagues from N. to S. and its breadth is six. On the south-east coast of this island is a very fine harbour. It is inhabited by bearded Kurelles, whom the Russians call Machnati; An ore of red copper, containing a large proportion of gold, was found here in the year 1765. A vessel belonging to the company of a merchant, named Lapin, brought home more than one hundred quintals of this copper, but it was confiscated, on pretence that the permission of the governor extended no further than to the commerce of furs. The inhabitants of this island live together in society. They have cattle, hogs, poultry, &c. All these islanders are cloathed in the Chinese manner; their skin is of a bronze colour, and their food is rice and beef.

21. Bereza lies in 45 deg. 35 min. north latitude, and 358 deg. 20 min. longitude from Bolsha. It is of a triangular form, and has an excellent harbour on its north side. It is very thinly peopled, and its inhabitants employ themselves in the fishery of beavers and other sea animals, particularly the whale, with the oil of which they carry on

a

Digitized by Google

a very advantageous trade with the islands of Jedzo, receiving in return gold, cloth, iron, and differnt utensils. The inhabitants cultivate rice on this island. Six other islands lie to the west-north-west of this, but they are merely rocks.

22. Good Hope, in 45 deg. 0 min. north latitude, and 356 deg. 30 min. longitude from Bolsha: Its length is 30 leagues from north to south, and it has two fine harbours, one on the north-east, and the other on the south-west side. In the southern part of the island there are two towns regularly built. In the the year 1764 some inhabitants of this island arrived at Kamchatka, to conclude a treaty with the Russians. The acts of the chancery mention that these envoys presented three small sacks of leather or skin (cuir) filled with gold, and a garment made of birds feathers. These envoys were put on board the ship Elizabeth, in order to go to Petersburg; but this ship foundered at sea. The island abounds in cattle, rice, and other vegetable productions. Ivan Cfoma intended to have fixed his residence in this island. He estimated its population at 4000 males, capable of bearing arms, which are a kind of sabre, a lance and a bow. Several Russian deserters live amongst them, and are greatly esteemed. The climate is very temperate, and the air wholesome. At the distance of two leagues to the westward of this island the depth of water is thirty-three fathom.

The foregoing is the true situation of the Kurelles islands, in which I do not comprehend the islands of Jedzo, as the Russians usually do. For these last mentioned islands are inhabited by a civilized people, who have an established government. I shall therefore speak of them

Digitized by Google

ſeparately, and ſhall ſhew that every thing which has been written concerning the pretended land or continent of Jedzo, company's land, &c. ought to be underſtood of theſe iſlands of Jedzo.

CHAP. XXXVI.

A DESCRIPTION OF THE ISLANDS OF JEDZO.

EVery navigator, at a diſtance from theſe iſlands, would ſuppoſe them to be one continued tract of land. This circumſtance has led the Hollanders into the greateſt miſtakes; and the miſſionaries of China have given us ſo many fabulous relations concerning them, that it is ſcarcely poſſible to draw any concluſion. As my enquiries concerning them produced information grounded upon real diſcoveries, I ſhall proceed to give a deſcription of them.

1. Kawith Jdzon, in 45 deg. 5 min. north latitude, and 353 deg. 0 min. longitude from Bolſha. This iſland is very populous, and has three very excellent harbours on its ſouthern ſide. It is every where very well wooded, and in its ſouthern part ſtands the town of Matza, which is built of wood. In this town reſides a chief, ſubordinate to Kunaſchir Jdzo, the ſovereign of all the iſlands, who reſides in the iſland Kunaſchiran. The town conſiſts of more than 2000 houſes, and is defended by ſeveral ſmall forts, conſtructed of wood, and ſurrounded

Digitized by Google

ſurrounded by ditches. Silver and copper mines are wrought in this iſland, and here it is that the red pearls are fiſhed, and are regularly, in the months of May and October, exchanged with the Japaneſe merchants, who arrive at thoſe periods, for cloth, and other ſtuffs of ſilk, as well as for iron tools and arms.

The Japaneſe were formerly at war with the inhabitants of Jdzon, but, ſince the year 1762, peace ſeems to be well eſtabliſhed between them. Theſe iſlanders have large barks, in which they ſail to Korea, China, and Japan. In the year 1758, a Ruſſian pilot, named Maſtlow, who was ſhipwrecked on the Kurelles iſlands, was ſold by the inhabitants to Kawith, and knew ſo well how to recommend himſelf to the favor of their chief, that he was promoted to the rank of Beſales, or commander of the troops. This Maſtlow, in the year 1768, wrote a letter to the governor of Kamchatka, in which he adviſed him to open a trade with this country. His letter came to hand by the way of the Kurelles, but the governor, being perſuaded that it was a forged buſineſs of ſome of the Ruſſian merchants, deſpiſed the invitation, and the coſſack who brought the letter from the Kurelles was thrown into priſon, and beat with the batogh as a reward for his zeal.

2. Cſulgan Jdzon is ſituated in 43 deg. 27 min. north latitude, and 352 deg. 58 min. longitude from Bolſha. This iſland is twenty leagues in length from eaſt to weſt, and ſix leagues in breadth from north to ſouth. Captain Spanneberg, in the year 1741, was in ſight of this iſland, but did not approach it. It is equal in fertility to Kawith, and its name is derived from a word denoting copper,

Digitized by Google

copper, with which it abounds. For Cſulgu denotes copper. On the northern ſide of this iſland there is a town and harbour. The name of the town is Tchouppou Jdzon, which denotes the town of the Sun.

3. Maànas Jdzon lies in 44 deg. 0 min. north latitude, and 351 deg. 0 min. longitude from Bolſha. Its length from north-eaſt to ſouth-weſt is thirty-eight leagues, and its breadth is from twelve to ſeventeen leagues. In the year 1743, a pilot, named Novodzikow, who is ſtill living at Kamchatka, landed on this iſland in a Bajdara. He informed me, that he had received, in exchange for an old hat, two pieces of gold ſtruck with a mark, which weighed together two ounces and a half. I verified this fact by conſulting the regiſters of the chancery. The two pieces were ſent to Peterſburg. This Novodzikow was very civilly received, and diſmiſſed by by the inhabitants; but a ſhort time afterwards lieutenant Walton came to the iſland, with a double ſhallop, and ſome exceſſes, committed by his crew, occaſioned them all to be cut off. There is likewiſe a very good harbour and town on the ſouth-ſide of the iſland; this laſt is called Ouratilkiva Jdzon, or red town; it is well peopled, carries on a briſk trade, and is ſubject to Kunaſchir.

4. Kunaſchir Jdzon, called by the Ruſſians Zelenoi-oſtrow, or green iſland, is ſituated in 42 deg. 30. min. north latitude, and 350 deg. 35 min. longitude from Bolſha. It extends from north-eaſt to ſouth-weſt ſixty-five leagues in length, and its breadth varies from twenty-eight to twelve leagues. On the northern part of the iſland is a very excellent harbour; into the bottom of which runs a fine river, though ſhallow. Several bays on the

Digitized by Google

the western coast afford a very good pearl fishery. The principal town on this island is called Kunashiran, in which the king of the country resides. There are several other towns of less magnitude on this island: Kunashir Matza, on the south west side of the island; Kunashiraapi in the centre, and Kunashir Orgutt on the eastern coast. The relations of Spanneberg affirm, that he saw more than two hundred vessels or boats off the island.

In the year 1769 the court of Petersburgh sent to the islands Jedzo two young men, named Antippe, Tartarino and Ottlasow, who had learned a few Japanese words at Irkuczk; but no news was heard of them during the whole time of my stay in these parts. The best founded notion that I could obtain of this island is, that it is regularly governed by a king; that strangers on their arrival are obliged to establish themselves there by marriage, and are carefully watched. It is evident that their riches must be immense, and their force, consisting of armed men, considerable; since this island proved able to resist the emperor of Japan for a series of years.

5. Fiassi Kamoni Jdzon, or health of God, is situated in 41 deg. 10 min. north latitude, and 348 deg. 0 min. longitude from Bolsha. This island is very populous, and its government is regularly administered, subject to Kunaschir. Horses have been seen on this island. The inhabitants are always in arms on account of their differences with the Koreans, notwithstanding which the commerce between these two nations is carried on without interruption, though the medium of the island of Matzumay. There are two towns on this island, one to the south and the other to the west.

6. Matzumay;

Digitized by Google

6. Matzumay is ſituated in 41 deg. 30 min. north latitude, and 347 deg. longitude, from Bolſha. Its length from north-eaſt to ſouth-weſt is forty leagues, and its breadth from eaſt to weſt is twenty-ſeven leagues. This iſland has two good harbours, one on the north and the other on the ſouth ſide. It is interſected by ſeveral fine rivers. The capital town is on the weſt part of the iſland, and likewiſe bears the name of Matzumay. This iſland has been conquered by the Japaneſe, who maintain a garriſon of three thouſand men here, beſides which there are more than fourteen hundred Japaneſe exiles, condemned to the works. Moſt of the natives of the iſland retired to Kunaſhir after the conqueſt.

The Dutch company, in the year 1754, propoſed to the Emperor of Japan to make a voyage to the northward of his country, under his good pleaſure, and to conquer the iſlands of Jedzo: but the Emperor was ſo far from accepting their propoſal, that he forbad the Hollanders to think of it, on pain of being excluded from their commerce.

The foregoing ſhort detail contains all that can be ſaid or written, conſiſtently with truth, concerning the pretended land of Jedzo or company's land.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XXXVII.

A SUPPLEMENT TO THE DESCRIPTION OF THE COAST OF TARTARY AND THE ISLAND SAGHALIN.

THE gulph of Uda, formed by cape Allangaddi, is ſituated in 54 deg. 10 min. north latitude, and 345 deg. 15 min. longitude from Bolſha; and extending to the northward of the entrance of the river Amour, is filled with ſmall iſlands, which ſhut up its entrance.

The mouth of the river Amour lies in 52 deg. 50 min. north latitude, and 346 deg. 0 min. longitude, from Bolſha. The Koreans call this river Saghalin, and its courſe extends near five hundred leagues into the country. It is capable of receiving veſſels of the greateſt burden. Its entrance is due ſouth, in which are fifteen ſmall iſlands forming a bay, which abounds in pearls. The ſouthern part of this bay is Cape Vaſitua, in 52 deg. 20 min. north latitude, and 347 deg. 5. min. longitude, from Bolſha. The importance of this river to Ruſſia is of the higheſt magnitude; for by means of one of its branches a communication may be had with Mandſchou, and by the ſecond as far as Teiſſou, ſituated on the gulph of Pekin.

Saghalin iſland lies to the eaſtward of the entrance of the river Amour: the center of the iſland is in 52 deg. 0 min. north latitude, and 349 deg. 0 min. longitude, from Bolſha. Its length from north to ſouth is ſixty-nine leagues, and its breadth from eaſt to weſt from fifteen to

Digitized by Google

twenty leagues. It is interſected by ſeveral rivers, and has excellent bays and harbours. In the year 1761 there were reckoned four ſmall towns inhabited by the Gilakes, an independant people, who trade with the Ruſſians and Koreans. This iſland produces the moſt beautiful furs, which are ſables and foxes ſkins. The northern part is mountainous and wild, but the country to the ſouthward is beautiful. To the northward of this iſland is another ſmall iſland called the glaſs iſland, (du Verre) in 54 deg. 30 min. north latitude, and 350 deg. 0 min. longitude from Bolſha It abounds with talc, but is a deſert.

Digitized by Google

A

CONTINUATION

OF THE

MEMOIRS of the COUNT DE BENYOWSKY:

Being a JOURNAL of his Voyage by Sea, from the Peninſula of Kamchatka to Canton in China.

ON the 11th of May, 1771, I went on board the corvette St. Peter and St. Paul, in the port of Bolſha, where I made the following diſtributions for the ſea-ſervice, and cauſed twenty ports to be cut in the ſide of the veſſel for cannon, twelve of which were of wood.

Digitized by Google

Myſelf, Count de Benyowſky, Commander in Chief,

Count Cruſtiew ſecond.

QUARTERS.

After Guard.	Forecastle.
Mr. Panow,	Mr. Wynbladth,
Mr. Kuzneczow,	Mr. Stephanow,
Mr. Zablikow,	Mr. Meder,
Mr. Popow,	Mr. Iſmailow,
Mr. Loginow,	Mr. Boſcarew,
Mr. Cſurin,	Mr. Koſtromin,
Mr. Urbanowſky,	Mr. Gurcſinin,
Mr. Contrathimaitre,	Mr. Baturin,
29 Hunters, fore maſt men.	28 Private men, ſerving before the maſt.
37 perſons.	36 perſons.

Total, 75 doing duty.

9 Women, and 12 Paſſengers, } 21

On the whole, 96.

Armament of the Corvette.

96 Perſons, including 9 women.
8 Pieces of cannon.
2 Howitzers.
2 Mortars for bombs.
120 Muſkets with bayonets.
80 Sabres.
60 Piſtols.

1,600

Digitized by Google

1,600 lb. of gunpowder.
200 lb. Weight of bullets.
800 lb. Salted fleſh.
1,200 lb. Salted fiſh.
3,000 lb. Dried fiſh.
1,400 lb. Whale oil.
200 lb. Sugar.
500 lb. Tea.
4,000 lb. Damaged flour.
40 lb. Butter.
113 lb. Cheeſe.
6,000 lb. Different pieces of iron work.
120 Grenades.
900 Cannon ball.
50 lb. Sulphur.
200 lb. Saltpetre.
1,200 lb. —— (the word wanting in the manuſcript.)
36 Butts of water.
126 Cheſts of furs.
14 Anchors, and ſundry cordage, with change of ſails.
One ſhallop and one canoe.

The corvette drawing eight feet eleven inches and eight feet five inches of water.

At eleven in the forenoon I cauſed divine ſervice to be celebrated, according to the rites of the Greek church. Te Deum was chaunted, and afterwards the whole company renewed their oath of obedience to my orders: at five in the evening dropped down the river and moored at the entrance.

Plate V. figure 1. contains a plan of the river's mouth.

Thurſday

Thurſday the 12th of May, weighed anchor, and after ſetting the hoſtages at liberty, ſailed out of the harbour on a ſouthern courſe. A very light breeze from north-north-weſt.

The day being hazy, and almoſt calm, anchored on the bank: depth of water from three fathoms and a quarter to three and a half; coarſe greeniſh ſand. At four o'clock a breeze ſpringing up, ſet ſail, and paſſed between the two banks. The veſſel ſtuck in a floating piece of ice, which we broke by firing a cannon ball againſt it. From the quarter-maſter's report, all well, ſix inches water in the hold, at two hours and a half. Latitude ſailed from, 52 degrees, 32 minutes; longitude ſailed from, 359 degrees, 0 minutes; latitude in, 51 degrees, 34 minutes; longitude in, 358 degrees, 36 minutes from Bolſha; wind north-north-weſt; current from ſouth to north; courſe ſouth.

Friday May the 13th, cloſe cloudy weather, with a ſtrong breeze from north-north-weſt, ſoundings from 16 to 24 fathom; fine greeniſh ſand. A heavy ſea from the north-weſt. We held on our courſe to the ſouthward, in the evening reefed our top-ſails. At day-break we diſcovered the rock Alayd to the weſtward, of which figure 2, plate V, is a view. At nine A. M. a conſultation was held reſpecting the courſe to be ſailed. I propoſed to moor near one of the Kurelles iſlands, to collect ſome proviſions and bake bread; and the company declared their readineſs to acquieſce in whatever I might judge proper.

According to the quarter-maſter's report, every one on board in good health. Latitude ſailed from, 51 degrees

34

Digitized by Google

34 minutes; longitude ſailed from, 358 degrees, 36 minutes; latitude in, 59 degrees, 27 minutes; longitude in, 359 degrees, 15 minutes, from Bolſha. Wind north-north-weſt; current from north to ſouth; courſe ſouth-ſouth-eaſt.

Saturday May the 14th, among the Kurelles iſlands, cloſe hazy weather, with ſnow, and a conſiderable irregular ſwell. Saw ſeveral whales purſued by the ſword-fiſh. A very ſtrong current obſerved from north to ſouth; kept on a ſouth-ſouth-eaſt courſe, having two iſlands in ſight: that on the larboard bearing ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, and on the ſtarboard ſouth-weſt one quarter ſouth. (See plate 6. N° 2.) The ſight of theſe iſlands occaſioned ſome diſturbance; for ſeveral of the company requeſted me to come to an anchor; and as they thought proper to threaten me upon my not attending to their demand, I put two under confinement, and determined not to come to anchor at the Kurelles iſlands, for fear of ſome mutinous conſequences. In the middle of the channel between theſe two iſlands our ſoundings were 23 fathom, fine ſand, and greeniſh coral. About ſix in the evening the wind increaſed; ſhortened ſail during the night, and at day-break diſcovered a bajdara or boat of the country, which made for the ſhore at ſight of us. Many birds in ſight, flying from ſouth to north. Latitude ſailed from, 50 degrees, 27 minutes north; longitude ſailed from, 359 degrees, 15 minutes; latitude in, 50 degrees, 15 minutes; longitude in, 0 degrees, 30 minutes, from Bolſha. Wind weſt; current from north to ſouth; courſe ſouth-eaſt, 19 degrees, 37 minutes.

Sunday,

Digitized by Google

Sunday May the 15th, close foggy weather; a strong steady breeze, with a great swell of the sea in the evening; carried away the end of the main-yard. People employed making okum and small cordage. Observed some floating weed and some whales.

According to the quarter-master's report, the whole company in good health. One butt of water started. Latitude sailed from, 50 degrees 15 minutes; longitude sailed from, 0 degrees 30 minutes; latitude in, 51 degrees 21 minutes; longitude in, 3 degrees 54 minutes, from Bolsha. Wind west; current from south-west to north-east; course north-east, 57 degrees 39 minutes.

Monday, May the 16th, close cloudy weather with much snow; variable winds. This day Ismailow was accused of having made a seditious proposal to the two Kamchadales: he was ordered into confinement upon bread and water.

According to the report, six men and one woman sick; latitude sailed from, 51 degrees 21 minutes; longitude sailed from, 3 degrees 54 minutes; latitude in, 52 degrees 34 minutes; longitude in, 5 degrees 30 minutes, from Bolsha. Wind west; current from south to north; course north-east one quarter north.

Tuesday, May the 17th, weather somewhat clear, with uncertain winds, the sun appearing at intervals. Towards evening rain and snow; took several cod-fish; saw whales swimming from south to north, with several flights of birds from east to west. In the night the wind freshened with a considerable swell of the sea.

According to the report, four persons sick; latitude sailed from, 52 degrees 34 minutes; longitude sailed from,

Digitized by Google

from, 5 degrees 30 minutes; latitude in, 54 degrees 15 minutes north; longitude in, 6 degrees 58 minutes, from Bolsha. Wind west one quarter north; current from south to north; course north-east.

Wednesday, May the 18th, close foggy weather, with snow and rain; great quantities of floating weed round the ship, of which we collected a quantity, to serve in case of necessity; saw several black eagles; employed this day in repairing the shallop and small boat, and cleaning our arms.

According to the report, four persons sick; latitude sailed from, 54 degrees 15 minutes; longitude sailed from, 6 degrees 58 minutes; latitude in, 55 degrees 19 minutes north; longitude in, 7 degrees 54 minutes from Bolsha. Wind west; current from south-east to north-west; course north, one quarter east.

Thursday, May the 19th, the isle Beering in sight; hazy weather. By a good observation I determined the latitude of this island to be 55 degrees 15 minutes north, and its longitude 8 degrees 0 minutes, from Bolsha. I came to an anchor, at the distance of half a league from the western coast, in 28 fathom water, coarse sand and shells. As soon as we had brought to, I sent the small boat with Mr. Panow and ten armed associates, to examine the island, with orders, that when they had found a place of shelter, to let me know by three fires, and send the canoe immediately for me; but in case they found any vessel in the harbour or road, they were directed to come back without landing. After his departure I hove up the anchor, and suffered the vessel to drive towards the island. At the distance of a quarter of a league the wind

Digitized by Google

ſlackened, and forced me to come to. We ſoon obſerved the ſignal, and approached a bay, in which I found a very good bottom at 50 fathom; the ſmall boat having come back, was ſent to take the ſoundings after which we moored in 8 fathom water.

According to the report, two ſick; latitude ſailed from, 55 degrees, 19 minutes; longitude ſailed from, 7 degrees, 54 minutes; latitude in, 55 degrees, 19 minutes north; longitude in, 8 degrees, 0 minutes, from Bolſha. Wind ſouth and calm; current from ſouth to north; courſe north and eaſt.

Friday, May the 20th, at anchor in a bay on the coaſt of the iſland of Beering; the weather fine and calm. Although Mr. Panow had aſſured me that he found no perſon upon the iſland, I nevertheleſs ſent a party to make diſcoveries, and ſent another party on ſhore to conſtruct a cabin and ovens, to bake our bread. Having determined to go on ſhore myſelf, I gave orders for cleaning the tiers, and airing our proviſions; after which I embarked in the ſmall boat with ſix of the aſſociates, and made a ſketch of the bay as exhibited in plate V. figure 3.

When I came on ſhore I had a tent ſet up, and about five in the evening the party who had been ſent upon diſcovery, returned, and related, that at the diſtance of a league from the bay they had diſcovered a cabin in which they found a dog, and underneath a tub a letter, which they brought me. Mr. Kuzneczow, the commander of the party, aſſured me. that he had likewiſe found four barrels of whale oil in the cabin, with ten or twelve quintals of ſalted fiſh. He added, that, in his opinion, there were certainly people upon the iſland, becauſe he had

Digitized by Google

had obſerved recent traces on the ſnow, and a bath newly conſtructed. To clear up my doubts I read the letter, which is as follows:

" Health to all thoſe who may arrive on this iſland. " I inform them that the ſhip Elizabeth, which left the " port of Ochoczk in the year 1769, under my command, " remained at this iſland a whole year, after having re- " ceived much damage by tempeſts. After this long ſtay, " being aſſured that all our attempts to put her into a " ſituation to carry us home were uſeleſs, we broke her " up, and built boats out of her materials, in which I " am about to proceed on a voyage towards the iſland, " which lies to the eaſtward, in hopes of finding ſome " veſſel, in which myſelf and crew may return. Written " January 24, 1771.

" IVAN OCHOTYN, Captain.
" BALTASA BALAKIROW, Pilot."

On the ſouthern part of the iſland Mr. Kuzneczow found likewiſe five croſſes erected, one of which bore the following inſcription:

" To the honour of God and St. Nicholas, in the year " 1769, on the 28th of April, this croſs was erected by " Peter Kreniczin, commander of the expedition ſent for " the diſcovery of California."

This laſt diſcovery was not of any conſequsnce, but the diſcovery of a ſpecies of turnips and very good garlick was extremely uſeful to us, as well as the proviſion of ſalted fiſh and whale oil. With reſpect to the letter, after mature examination, I was convinced that the writing was freſh: ſeveral reflections led me to recollect, that I had often heard ſpeak of this Ochotyn, who was reported

Digitized by Google

at Ochoczk to have become a pirate. To clear up my doubts, I enquired of my companions whether any of them knew Ochotyn, and ſeveral of them immediately informed me, that Ochotyn was not a Ruſſian, and that having ſeized the ſhip he commanded, and perſuaded his crew to follow his fortune, he had ſettled in the Aleuthes iſlands, where during the laſt two years he had taken other Ruſſian ſhips, whoſe crews had placed themſelves under his command: ſo that the number of Europeans under him muſt amount to more than one hundred, beſides that a number of the iſlanders had nominated him their chief. Upon this information I concluded, that Ochotyn, or at leaſt ſome of his party were on the iſland; in conſequence of which I choſe five of our company, whom I ſent out ſeparately, well armed and ſupplied with proviſion, and likewiſe a letter of invitation addreſſed to Ochotyn or the people of his party: to prevent any unlucky miſchance, I gave orders for a ſtrict look out both on ſhore and on board.

According to the report, the whole company in good health.

Saturday the 21ſt, at Beering's iſland, in the bay St. Maurice, ſo named by my companions; fine weather, and the ſnow melting. This day the flour was brought on ſhore, and we began to bake bread in five ovens we had built. My companions built me a commodious cabin. This day I diſpatched twenty-two of the people to carry the ſalted fiſh and whale oil on board: ſix men were ſent to cut wood, and the carpenter Nikita repaired the main yard. In the evening ſent on board twenty-four barrels of freſh water, four cords of fire-wood, and part of the

ſalted

Digitized by Google

ſalted fiſh, with a caſk of garlick, and a quantity of roots. The night paſſed without diſturbance, but at five in the morning I was awakened by Mr. Cruſtiew, who informed me that he had heard ſeveral ſhot fired to the ſouthward of the iſland. I immediately went out of my cabin, and heard ſeveral other ſucceſſive reports; on which I gave immediate orders to beat an alarm, and was joined by twenty of the people from on board. To diſcover what had happened, as well as to aſſiſt thoſe who had been diſpatched the evening before, I gave orders to Mr. Wynbladth to embark with ſixteen men in the ſhallop, and proceed to the ſouthern point of the bay, in order to obſerve more eaſily from whence the noiſe might proceed. After having diſpatched him, I left the command to Mr. Cruſtiew, and embarked in the ſmall boat myſelf with eight of our people. We ſoon paſſed the ſhallop, and on our arrival at the ſouth point I perceived a bajdara, which rowed towards us, with five people on board. On their approach we perceived they were Ruſſians, and one of them hallowed, and told us that he had a letter for the commander of the corvette St. Peter. They ſoon came up with us, and gave me the letter which I read, and propoſed to them to come on board my veſſel. They agreed to this, and declared that their general had ordered them to come on board, which we accordingly did at ten o'clock preciſely.

On my arrival I found my people in the greateſt confuſion. Mr. Stephanow informed me that he had diſcovered a mutiny, by means of Alexi Andreanow. Upon examination I heard that Mr. Iſmailow, with his friend Zablikow and fifteen others, had entered into an oath to

ſeize

ſeize the firſt opportunity, when the greateſt part of the people ſhould be on ſhore and myſelf on board, to ſecure my perſon, and afterwards return to Kamchatka; but, in caſe they could not carry this project into effect, that they ſhould aſſaſſinate me, ſet fire to the veſſel, and quit the iſland in the ſhallop. The depoſition of Andreanow was confirmed by Popow and Rabalow. I therefore immediately armed thoſe perſons on whom I could place the moſt dependence, and afterwards muſtered the whole company, to whom I expoſed the authors of the plot. Theſe were immediately put in irons, and carried on ſhore to be tried by a council which I nominated, and over which Mr. Cruſtiew was appointed to preſide. After this buſineſs was finiſhed, I directed my attention to ſhew every civility to the perſons who brought Mr. Ochotyn's letter.

According to the report, one perſon ſick and nineteen priſoners.

Sunday, May the 22d, in the bay of St. Maurice, at Beerings iſle; weather ſqaally, with rain; wind ſouth-weſt. At three o'clock my adjutant preſented to me a memorial in the name of the whole company, requeſting that Mr. Iſmailow and the Kamchadale Parenczin, with his wife, ſhould be ſet on ſhore and abandoned in the iſland, and that the others, who had been ſeduced by them, ſhould be puniſhed with fifty laſhes, and afterwards reſtored to their functions, firſt renewing their oath of obedience. I complied with this general requeſt the more willingly, as it was an object of great conſequence to give an example and eſtabliſh my authority by this proceeding. After I had ſent my orders on ſhore in writing to

Digitized by Google

to Mr. Cruſtiew, I communicated the contents of the letter I had received to the whole company; it was as follows:

" Health to the brave and intrepid commander of the " veſſel St. Peter and all his company.

" Dear friends and companions, we heard with much " joy of your happy arrival on this iſland. The men " whom you ſent to find us have informed us of your " whole intentions, and we have detained them leſs " as hoſtages than as friends, whom we are deſirous of " ſending back with proviſions, which you muſt be in " want of. Permit our companions who bring this letter " to go on board your ſhip; it is probable they may " meet with ſome acquaintance, which would be very " agreeable to us. We entreat the commander to inform " us, whether he thinks proper to conſent to a conference " with us, and for this purpoſe we pray that he will " ſend back our companions, and inform us of the place " of rendezvous. We wiſh you all proſperity, and re- " commend ourſelves to your friendſhip. Adieu.

" JEAN OCHOTYN,
" in the name of the company."

After having heard the different opinions reſpecting what was the moſt proper to be done, I determined to ſend back one of the five with my anſwer, and to keep the other four until the return of my own people. My letter was conceived in the following terms:

" I cannot expreſs the ſatisfaction which I received " from the information of your reſidence on this iſland. " The conduct and behaviour of the famous Ochotyn have " ſecured him my eſteem for this year paſt, and nothing prevents

Digitized by Google

"prevents my ſeeing him and aſſuring him of my "friendſhip.

"Do not attribute the precautions which I require "for our interview to miſtruſt; but perſuade yourſelf that "an exceſs of prudence is hurtful only to men who are "deſtitute of courage. I require therefore, that to-mor- "row, at ſix o'clock, Mr. Ochotyn ſhall repair with four "of his people to the ſouthern point of the bay, where I "will come at the ſame hour, with an equal number; "as ſoon as we come in ſight of each other, we will lay "down our arms and join company.

"Maurice Auguſt."

This day was employed in carrying on board the biſcuit which our people had made out of the damaged flour. Towards the evening, I permitted ſix of our aſſociates to go on a hunting expedition, with orders to return at ſix in the morning. Mr. Meder returned on board, and brought with him ſeveral nuts and ſome pieces of camphor wood, which had been wrought; he found theſe on the ſhore. About eleven o'clock we found the cable was cut, and weighed the anchor with great difficulty. At five in the morning I fired three guns, and leaving the command of the veſſel in the hands of Mr. Panow, I embarked in the ſhallop with four aſſociates. At three quarters after five I arrived at the point, where I found Mr. Ochotyn on ſhore, by whom I was very politely received. He was a handſome figure, thirty-ſix years of age, and ſpoke very good German and French. After the firſt civilities he related his hiſtory and adventures, which deſerve a particular narration. I ſhall confine myſelf, however, to the ſubſtance, which is as follows:

Mr.

Digitized by Google

Mr. Ochotyn was a man of family in Saxony, and ſerved under the Empreſs Elizabeth, in the rank of Captain, in the regiment of Smolenſkoi, which he left for the employment of Adjutant to General Apraxin. When that General was arreſted, by order of the Empreſs, he was himſelf likewiſe ſent to priſon, with Mr. Baron Kluſewſky, who is ſtill an exile at Jakutzk, under the name of Fiſkin. Mr. Ochotyn was not delivered from priſon until he was ſent as an exile into Siberia. On his arrival at Jakutzk, he obtained the favour of being ſent to Ochoczk, where he engaged himſelf on board a ſhip fitted out for catching beavers. He made two voyages in this veſſel, but, during the third, having ſecured the attachment of fifty of the crew, he ſeized the veſſel at the Aleuthes iſlands, with which he made prize of two others, whoſe crews joined his fortune. His party at firſt conſiſted of one hundred and thirty-four determined men, able to contend with the maritime force of Ochoczk. Eighteen months afterwards he had the good fortune to eſtabliſh himſelf on one of the largeſt of the Aleuthes iſlands, where he formed connections, by means of the marriages of his companions with the girls of the country. The dependence he could place on the friendſhip of the natives of theſe iſlands had determined him to form colonies; but, as he was without the neceſſary arms and utenſils, he had determined to viſit Kamchatka and Ochoczk, with the intention of utterly deſtroying theſe two eſtabliſhments, and carrying off every thing which he might find ſuitable to his purpoſes.

After he had finiſhed his explanation, he propoſed to me to join forces in the execution of this project of eminent vengeance, which we had both equal reaſons for

Digitized by Google

being desirous of. In answer to this direct proposal, I replied, that I was highly mortified that it was not in my power to comply with his intentions, because my situation required a speedy return to Europe; besides which, I represented to him that his present force was sufficient to insure the success of his enterprize. But as he was determined to form colonies in the islands, I advised him to address himself to some European power, to obtain their support; for which purpose I offered him my services. These reflections appeared reasonable to him, and he accepted my offers, as I shall notice more amply in its place. On my part, I gave him a faithful account of my adventures, and we swore friendship to each other. After which, we separated; he to join his companions, and myself to return on board, where I found every thing in perfect order.

N. B. The family of Mr. Ochotyn is known in Saxony by the name of Leuchtenfeld, and he referred, in proof of his assertion, to Baron Laffert, a Prussian officer, who was exiled to Kolima, and returned to Europe in 1760, in consequence of the pressing reclamation which was made by his Majesty the King of Prussia.

Monday May the 23d, 1771, in the bay St. Maurice, in Beering's Island, clear weather, wind S. W. the whole day was employed in repairing the vessel. At three o'clock a canoe arrived from Mr. Ochotyn, with a present of one hundred and fifty fine beaver skins, in return for which I sent him two hundred pounds of gunpowder, one hundred pounds of lead, and a considerable quantity of iron work, &c. but the most acceptable present to Mr. Ochotyn's

Digitized by Google

Ochotyn's people was, two hundred and forty ells of cloth and twenty-five ſacks of flour.

In the evening I ſent on board twenty-two ſacks of biſcuit and two caſks of ſalt fiſh. In the night I viſited Mr. Ochotyn, in company with Mr. Panow; we found ſix cabins well built, and defended by a palliſade, flanked with four ſmall cannon. He was ſeated near a fire, with thirty-five aſſociates. Tea was firſt ſerved up, and afterwards we employed the whole night in converſation, and in drawing up letters, which he gave me, with a view to determine ſome European power to aſſiſt his projects. At day break I took my leave, and returned on board at eight o'clock. At ten, I aſſembled the whole company, and propoſed quitting the iſland to continue our voyage to China, from which place we might moſt conveniently return to Europe. Upon this propoſal, the company requeſted time to conſider, and their reſolution was poſtponed till the following day.

According to the report, the whole company in good health.

Tueſday May 24th, in the bay of St. Maurice, at the iſle of Beering, foggy weather, wind diſpoſed to ſqualls from the ſouthward. At two in the afternoon my adjutant preſented three deputies from the company, who informed me, that the reſolution of the ſociety was taken, and that they were determined to ſeek a paſſage to the northward of Kamchatka, as the ſeaſon, being ſummer, aſſured our ſucceſs, and even ſuppoſing we ſhould find inſurmountable obſtacles, we ſhould be always able to reach the continent of America. To this repreſentation, as I had underſtood from my intimate friends that the company

Digitized by Google

was reſolved to follow their plan in ſpite of me, I conſented, becauſe unwilling openly to oppoſe their deciſion. For a great part of the company, after having reflected on what had happened at Kamchatka, might probably have repented, and have been diſpoſed to act treacherouſly towards me, as the neighbourhood of Kamchatka would facilitate all their attempts.

In the evening I received advice from Mr. Ochotyn, that Mr. Stephanow had written to him, acquainting him, that he himſelf, together with a party of our aſſociates, were reſolved to enter into his troop; in conſequence of which Mr. Ochotyn adviſed me to quit the iſland as ſoon as poſſible, and aſſured me, that in caſe of a revolt, he would aſſiſt me in puniſhing the guilty. In conſequence of this advice, I muſtered the whole company, and declared to them that I ſhould not follow their plan but with regret, as I was perſuaded, that it would lead us into misfortunes, which it was now in our power to avoid. I aſſured them that I did not think it poſſible to double the cape Tſukcſi, and that, when the eaſterly monſoon failed, we might find it impoſſible to reach the coaſt of America; but that as I was determined to ſacrifice my private opinions to the wiſh of the company, which ſhould at all times be my law, I would ſatisfy their expectation, though at the ſame time I thought it neceſſary to warn the ſociety, that I had well-founded reaſons to ſuſpect that ſome among them were engaged in a deſign prejudicial to our common intereſts, and that I forebore mentioning the leaders, merely with the hope that it would cauſe them to return to their duty, and that they ought to attribute my lenity to this motive.

Being

Digitized by Google

Being thus determined to quit the iſland with the firſt wind, I ſent a party on ſhore to erect a croſs with the following inſcription:

"May the 24th, 1771. Maurice Auguſt Aladar de "Benyowſzky, after his happy deliverance from exile at "Kamchatka, cauſed this croſs to be erected during his "ſtay at this iſland."

At ten o'clock Mr. Stephanow aſked leave to ſpeak with me in private. When I had admitted him into my cabin, he informed me that he had diſcovered a plot againſt me, and that he was reſolved to quit me no more, but look to my preſervation. I expreſſed my ſurprize at this, and freely declared, that if I had apprehended any thing, I ſhould have arreſted him the firſt, as I had ſufficient proofs againſt him; but that as I was not of a timid diſpoſition, he was indebted, for his ſafety, to my contempt. After this anſwer I communicated the letter of Mr. Ochotyn to him, and informed him, that I ſhould be diſpoſed to forget every thing, and would not aſk him even to name his accomplices, provided he ſhewed a proper repentance, and gave me no occaſion to recollect his criminal diſpoſition, and, as a proof how far my delicacy to him proceeded, I would promiſe to keep his behaviour a profound ſecret, leſt he ſhould be univerſally deſpiſed, upon its being known. The firmneſs with which I ſpoke to him overcame him, and he threw himſelf at my feet, acknowledging himſelf guilty, and imploring my forgiveneſs, which I granted.

According to the report, all well.

Wedneſday, May the 25th, cloſe cloudy weather; the iſland covered with fogs; wind variable, between ſouth and

Digitized by Google

and weſt; A ſouth-ſouth-weſt wind in the offing. Set ſail. At three hoiſted in the ſhallop and ſmall boat, and directed our courſe to the northward. In the evening the wind changed from ſouth to eaſt. In the morning the northernmoſt point of the iſland bore from eaſt to eaſt, one quarter ſouth.

According to the report, all well; latitude in, 55 degrees, 58 minutes; longitude from Bolſha, 7 degrees, 56 minutes. Wind ſouth, ſouth-ſouth-weſt and ſouth-ſouth-eaſt; current ſouth-eaſt; courſe north.

Thurſday, May the 26th, clear weather, with ſnow at intervals, but freezing. A heavy ſwell from ſouth-weſt. In the evening ſaw ſome pieces of floating wood with ice upon them. At the cloſe of the night ſaw ſeveral flights of birds, directing their courſe from north to ſouth. During the whole night the ſky was clear, and the ſtars ſhone bright, but the cold increaſed and began to freeze our rigging. At day-break we were ſurrounded with floating wood and pieces of ice. About ten o'clock a whale, of a very large ſize, came ſo near us, that I was obliged to fire at it. The ſecond ball cauſed it to dive.

According to the report, all in good health; latitude in, 57 degrees, 45 minutes, north; longitude from Bolſha, 7 degrees, 54 minutes. Wind ſouth-weſt; current from ſouth to north; courſe north.

Friday, May the 27th, under ſail. Clear weather and exceſſive cold, wind ſtrong and irregular, with a very heavy ſea. Our veſſel ſtruck ſeveral times againſt ice-drifts, of enormous magnitude, the ſurface of which was covered with wood. In the evening we were ſet faſt between

Digitized by Google

tween two ice-drifts, which floated in the direction of the veſſel; the pitching of the ſhip cauſed a conſiderable damage to her fore parts againſt the ice; during the night we had a ſudden ſquall, which threatened us with inſtant deſtruction. The violent preſſure of the ice againſt the veſſel, (the creaking noiſe of whoſe timbers greatly added to our apprehenſions) produced a conſiderable leak, which occaſioned us to pump without ceaſing. In the morning we found our ſails damaged and entirely frozen, for which reaſon I gave orders to keep a fire conſtantly at the foot of each maſt upon the deck, which was likewiſe covered with ice, two inches thick. By this means I ſucceeded in thawing the ſails. About ten o'clock, the ice-drift on the ſtarboard ſide broke away, and we diſengaged ourſelves from that on the larboard.

According to the report, all in good health; cleared the well of thirteen inches of water; latitude in, 58 degrees, 0 minutes; longitude in, 9 degrees, 59 minutes; wind ſouth-weſt; current from ſouth-weſt to north-eaſt; courſe eaſt-north-eaſt.

Saturday, May the 28th, clear weather without ſnow, but inſupportably cold. A ſtrong irregular wind, with a heavy ſwell from north-north-eaſt; got down the damaged yards and replaced them by others. At three o'clock obſerved a veſſel to the northward, at three leagues diſtant. In the evening hove the lead, and found no bottom. In the night the weather was exceedingly clear and cold. The wind freſhened, and the ſhip made good way. At day-break ſaw land; at eleven o'clock I gave directions to make a ſketch of its appearance, and, though I was embarraſſed by the diſagreement of the

Digitized by Google

the Ruſſian charts, I took it for cape Apachazana. (See Plate 7. No. 1.) Latitude in 59 degrees, 0 minutes; longitude in 13 degrees, 20 minutes; wind weſt-ſouth-weſt; current from north to ſouth; courſe eaſt-north-eaſt.

Sunday, May the 29th, a ſtrong breeze and cloſe cloudy weather, with a heavy ſwell from north-weſt, which frequently endangered us by driving large pieces of ice againſt the veſſel. The conſiderable maſſes of theſe ice drifts formed whole mountains around us, and threatened us with inevitable deſtruction, for the veſſel being ſtruck every inſtant by them was ſtrongly agitated, and large maſſes of ice freezing to the ſhip's ſides, and occaſionally lifted out of the water by her motion, damaged her on all ſides. Every roll was followed by an aſtoniſhing noiſe, occaſioned by the rupture of theſe icy appendages. Our fears were greatly augmented by the increaſe of the water in the hold, and during the night, the whole company were alarmed even to ſtupefaction. About four in the morning the wind increaſed, and carried away our ſprit-ſail-yard; and about five we loſt our foretop-maſt. At ſix o'clock the veſſel lay down on the larboard ſide, and the tiller could not be moved. Luckily for us, however, the arrival of day-light enabled us to ſee that part of the ice was jammed in between the rudder and the ſtern-poſt. I ſent two of the company to beat it away, and afterwards we righted the veſſel. It was very fortunate that this accident did not happen in the night, as in that caſe we ſhould have been loſt without remedy. About noon the wind abated, and we perceived ourſelves at the diſtance of two leagues and a half off ſhore, of which I took a view. See plate VII. No. 2.

At

Digitized by Google

At ſeven hours and a half we had twenty-two inches water in the hold, which we cleared.

According to the report three ſick. Latitude in, 59 degrees 10 minutes; longitude in, 14 degrees 34 minutes; wind weſt-north-weſt; current from north-eaſt to ſouth-weſt; courſe eaſt, one quarter north.

Monday, May the 30th, cloſe cloudy weather. The wind veered round to the ſouth-eaſt, with louring weather in the north-eaſt quarter; hove the lead occaſionally, and at five got ground at eighty-five fathom; grey ſand, and broken ſhells. The ſea covered with ice-drifts.

At nine Mr. Cruſtiew requeſted the meeting of a committee, in the name of the company, which I immediately complied with. As ſoon as the aſſociates were aſſembled they requeſted me to continue our courſe no longer towards the north, as they were convinced that it would be attended with our deſtruction. This occaſion gave me ample matter to reproach them for the little confidence they had ſhewn me, in compelling me to hold this courſe. I thought it neceſſary to repreſent to them the many unhappy conſequences which would reſult from my being expoſed a ſecond time to ſubmit to their pleaſure. The dreadful objects which had alarmed them the preceding day, were ſtill preſent around us, and gave every degree of efficacy to my diſcourſe: I therefore found no difficulty in obtaining from the whole company a promiſe, that in future they would leave me at liberty to do whatever I might think proper and advantageous. As a mark of my ſatisfaction, I gave orders for an extraordinary allowance of brandy to be given them. At ten o'clock Mr. Panow informed me, that ſeveral of our aſ-

Digitized by Google

ſociates were reſolved to quit us at the firſt place where we might anchor. This diſcovery was immediately verified by the appearance of four of them, who demanded, in the name of a party, the number of which they refuſed to declare, to go on ſhore, under pretence of making a proviſion of beavers, whoſe ſkins might be of ſervice to them on future occaſions. The reſolute manner in which theſe deputies made their demand, gave me reaſon to fear a mutiny, which threatened to be ſo much more dangerous, as we were in ſight of land adjoining to Kamchatka. For this reaſon, after having requeſted they would wait a moment for my reſolution, I ordered Mr. Wynbladth to collect a party of ſuch aſſociates as we could moſt depend on, and come with them into my cabin, while Mr. Panow might overlook the movements of all thoſe, whom we had reaſon to ſuſpect. This order was immediately put in execution, and, directly afterwards, I cauſed the mutineers to be ſeized, and gave orders for a council to be held in the afternoon for their examination.

According to the report, five ſick, four priſoners. At ſix we had eighteen inches water in the well, which we cleared. Latitude in, 59 degrees, 40 minutes; longitude in, 16 degrees, 45 minutes; wind ſouth-ſouth-weſt; current from north to ſouth; courſe north-eaſt, one quarter eaſt.

Tueſday, May the 31ſt, clear weather and a ſtrong wind, which permitted us to uſe only our lower ſails: the ſea covered with ice-drifts. At two P. M. aſſembled the council, to examine the priſoners. Andreanow declared that their number was twenty-two, and that Mr. Stephanow was probably at their head, though he could not poſitively

Digitized by Google

positively affirm it, as he had not heard him mentioned, except by Sacharinow, which the latter denied. The council advised calling all hands, after which I stated the fact, and requested their advice on this occasion. Their resolution was unanimous to punish the criminals severely, and, if the author could be discovered, to throw him into the sea. In consequence of their resolution, those whom I had reason to suspect as chiefs of the plot, were condemned to receive each twenty-five lashes; and the others, upon expressing their sorrow, were discharged, after asking pardon of the company. But, as I had just cause to fear the consequences of this mutiny, I took away their arms. Mr. Panow, irritated against his relation, whom he found always busied in caballing, declared to him, that he was determined to put him to death himself, on the first similar occasion, This declaration, made in the presence of the whole company, produced an admirable effect.

In the evening I was alarmed by an outcry and tumult upon deck, occasioned by Sacharinow, the friend of Stephanow, who threatened to kill Sibeaw; but as Mr. Crustiew was present he caused Sacharinow to be seized and put in irons.

The night was clear, but the cold was so intense that all the water in the hold was frozen. Happily for us the wind had driven away the ice. At ten we saw several whales swimming from north to south. At eleven punished Sacharinow with 50 lashes.

According to report, eleven sick; three water-casks burst. Cleared the well of sixteen inches of water, at six A. M. Latitude in, 61 degrees, 37 minutes; longitude

Digitized by Google

in, 19 degrees, 3 minutes; wind ſouth-eaſt; current from the north; courſe north-north-eaſt.

Wedneſday, June the 1ſt, cloudy weather and foggy, with cold. Few drifts, but the ſhip ſurrounded with floating wood. Saw ſeveral flight of birds called Urille. Theſe are all over white except the head, the extremities of the wings and the tail, which are black. The beak and feet are of a deep yellow. They came ſo near us that I ſhot two, and found them as large as ducks, and their fleſh of a tolerably good taſte. Towards night the wind freſhened, and veered to the ſouthward; it was ſo ſtrong that I could ſet only the lower ſails. At day-break ſounded, and got ground at forty-eight fathoms, ſand and ſhells. At ten, land in ſight, bearing eaſt, one quarter ſouth, which we ſoon after perceived to be an iſland. As we ſaw another cape bearing north-eaſt one quarter north, I determined to paſs between them, heaving the lead. The depth of water was from twenty-four to thirty-ſix fathoms. At noon the cape bore north, one quarter weſt, and the iſland ſouth. (Plate VIII. No. 2. is a view of the land.)

According to report thirteen ſick, the ſhip making no water. Latitude in, 62 degrees, 0 minutes; longitude in, 22 degrees, 36 minutes. Wind ſouth-ſouth-eaſt; current from north-weſt to ſouth-eaſt; courſe north-eaſt.

Thurſday, June the 2d, variable weather, with ſnow. A freſh breeze from ſouth to ſouth-ſouth-weſt, with a heavy ſea. Handed the courſes, and kept only the mizen and the top-ſails ſet all the night. Saw ſeveral ſea-wolves and whales. At day-break we were ſurrounded with ice-drifts, upon which we ſaw a very great number of

Digitized by Google

of land birds. The ſounding line was ſeveral times cut aſunder by the ice. Weather colder than before.

According to report thirteen ſick. Cleared the well from nine to four inches of water. Latitude in, 63 degrees, 30 minutes; longitude in, 25 degrees, 4 minutes. Wind ſouth-ſouth-weſt; current from north to ſouth; courſe north-eaſt.

Friday, June the 3d, at three P. M. ſaw a very thick field of ice, to which a large maſs of ice of earth was attached, with ſhrubs growing on it. I immediately gave orders to ſound, and had ground at ſeventy-four fathoms, coarſe ſand and ſhells. The wind freſhened at intervals, and it ſnowed almoſt continually. Towards evening the wind ſlackened a little, but ſoon after came on with redoubled fury and impetuoſity. A hurricane aroſe in the ſouth-weſt quarter, and blew with ſuch violence that we had ſmall hopes of beholding the break of day. The daſhing of the ice againſt the veſſel was ſo frequent that I expected every moment her ſides would have been bulged. Happily I had the precaution to lower our yards and the top-maſts; the mizen-maſt was carried away. At the break of day the hurricane greatly increaſed, when on a ſudden we perceived, at the diſtance of a league, a reef upon which the ſea broke in a moſt dreadful manner. The return of day ſhewed us more clearly the danger we had paſſed, by the diſcovery of maſſes of ice of a prodigious height piled one upon another. Our ſoundings were twenty-ſix fathom, and at ten o'clock we ſaw land.

According to the report fifteen ſick; the ſhip making much water. Latitude in, 64 degrees, 45 minutes; longitude

Digitized by Google

longitude in, 26 degrees, 30 minutes. Wind ſouth-weſt; current from north to ſouth; courſe north-north-eaſt and north-eaſt one quarter north.

Saturday, June the 4th, being reſolved to hold on my courſe until I had determined the diſtance between the two capes, which the Ruſſians affirm to be very near each other. I ſtood to the north-weſt along ſhore, and about four P. M. obſerving that the northern part of the land of the cape of America drew to the eaſtward, and ſtood off. At five ſaw land bearing weſt-ſouth-weſt, which we ſoon perceived to be iſlands; the ice which the current brought upon us carried us ſo near that we ſaw them in the night, and diſtinguiſhed three in number at day break. To avoid the direction of the ice-drifts I made the beſt of my way by ſetting ſail, and at ten A. M. we diſcovered land, and two veſſels ſtanding towards us. Our ſoundings were thirty-four fathom. At eleven, moored at the diſtance of three leagues, in twenty-two fathom, and took a view of the land; for which ſee plate IX. Latitude in, 65 degrees, 20 minutes; longitude in, 25 degrees, 30 minutes. Wind ſouth-weſt; current from the north-eaſt; courſe north-north-weſt.

Sunday, June the 5th, at anchor, ſurrounded with ice; the wind irregular, and increaſing, with a heavy ſea, At three P. M. the boats reached us, and appeared to be Tſukcſi. I invited them on board by a Koreack, who was with us: They came without fear. It was by their means that I learned poſitively, that we were no further diſtant from Tſukotzkoy noſs than about fourteen leagues; that the iſlands we had ſeen were four in number, the moſt ſoutherly being the largeſt; and that the cape we had quitted

Digitized by Google

quitted in the evening, was that of the great land Alakſina, the name by which the Tſukcſi denote America. At four, finding myſelf in danger from the ice, and being informed that it was impoſſible to paſs further, I determined to return to the coaſt of America, for which the wind was favourable; at this inſtant the cable was cut by the ice-drifts, and I had only time to re-embark the Tſukcſi, to whom I made a preſent of ſome knives and brandy. At five P. M. ſet ſail under the courſes, the ſhip making much water. About ten we perceived an appearance of blackneſs to the ſouthward, which indicated the vicinity of the laſt mentioned iſlands. The ice incommoded us leſs, as the direction of the veſſel was with the current. About ſix P. M. doubled the cape of Alakſina, and at eleven diſcovered an entrance between the breakers and the ſhore. The cape ſheltered us from the ice-drifts, and left us at liberty to work the ſhip; I therefore determined, at all events, to ſeek for anchorage.

According to the report, twelve ſick, the ſhip making at the rate of thirty-eight inches of water per day. Latitude in, 64 degrees 50 minutes; longitude in, 26 degrees, 4 minutes; wind ſouth-weſt, current north; courſe ſouth-ſouth-eaſt.

Monday, June the 6th, having approached the land, I diſcovered a bay in which I moored. Soundings from eight fathoms to * and I ſurveyed this harbour, into which run two brooks. Plate exhibits the plan.

As ſoon as we had moored, I ordered twenty-eight aſſociates on ſhore, to ſet up tents made of our ſails, and at

* Blank in the manuſcript.

Digitized by Google

at two and a half P. M. I went on ſhore myſelf with Mr. Cſurin, who having obſerved a place which promiſed to give us an opportunity of careening the ſhip, propoſed to viſit the ſpot. I therefore gave the neceſſary orders for unloading her cargo, and Mr. Cſurin was charged to overlook and make the neceſſary preparations. Thirty-ſix of the aſſociates, under the command of Mr. Panow, were directed to undertake this, while the reſt employed themſelves in hunting, fiſhing and cutting of wood.

Tueſday June the 7th, all the people being buſied at work, I requeſted Mr. Kuzneczow, as the moſt alert, to take ſome of the aſſociates with him, and go in queſt of diſcoveries. This day Mr. Cſurin informed me, that though the ſhip's timbers were ſtrained, yet it would be capable of ſailing in the ſouthern ſeas, and that the leaks were occaſioned only by the looſening of the ſeams, which he hoped to remedy by caulking, in a few hours. This account was very agreeable to me, and I was aſſured of its truth by actual inſpection.. Mr Kuzneczow did not return till eight in the evening, when he informed me, that he had aſcended the neighbouring mountain to the northward, and had diſcovered land to the north-eaſt, but that to the eaſtward there lay an immenſe country with few mountains, and in many places without ſnow, and interſected by rivers. The approach of night not having permitted him to diſtinguiſh remote objects, he aſked permiſſion to take others of the aſſociates with him to purſue his diſcoveries to the eaſtward; for he aſſured me, that he had obſerved ſigns of its being inhabited. Seing him ſo well diſpoſed, and being deſirous of obtaining a poſitive knowledge of this country, I permitted him to complete

Digitized by Google

complete his diſcovery. I paſſed the night with ſeveral of my friends, in watching our aſſociates, as there was reaſon to fear ſome plot, but happily they were quiet.

Wedneſday, June the 8th, the veſſel being caulked, was loaded again, and the water-caſks filled. Our fiſhery produced one caſk and a half of fiſh, which we ſalted, and our hunting party brought only twenty beavers, with ſome ſea-wolves; but they likewiſe brought us a great proviſion of garlick, and 740 roots of a very agreeable taſte: They were nearly of the ſize of a child's head, and weighed from three to five pounds. At eleven A. M. all the people were on board, and we waited only the return of Mr. Kuzneczow.

According to the report, thirteen ſick, the ſhip making from ſeven to eleven inches of water per day.

Thurſday, June the 9th. At one P. M. Mr. Kuzneczow arrived at the ſhore: I ſent the ſmall boat for him, and when he came on board he informed me, that he had diſcovered, at the diſtance of four leagues, an habitation compoſed of fourteen huts, but that the inhabitants had fled, and he had found only an old woman and ſome children in their huts. The old woman was of a very dark complection, with many figures painted on her forehead, and her noſtrils bored; but as he could not make himſelf underſtood by any word of the Koriac or Tſukcſi language, he could derive no information from her: he found ſeveral bows and arrows, with the heads very well made, of iron, in the huts, and brought them away, as he knew that they would be acceptable to me, as well as an habit almoſt complete made of birds feathers. As he found nothing more which was remarkable, he re-

Digitized by Google

tired, after leaving ſeveral knives and ſmall mirrors, in the room of the things he had carried away, which part of his conduct, I very ſtrongly approved. This diſcovery * at laſt convinced me, that I had been ſufficiently fortunate to verify the diſtance between the two capes, concerning which ſo many conjectures have been made, and of which the Ruſſians have ſpoken ſo falſely; for it is not true, that any veſſel has paſſed this ſtrait, though the people employed on this voyage went as far as Anadir, where their veſſel was caſt away in 15 degrees of longitude from Bolſha, and 73 degrees of latitude. They finiſhed their journey by land to Anadir, and thence to Kamchatka, but not by ſea as they have publiſhed. At three P. M. weighed, and made ſail out of the bay of Aladar; our courſe was ſouth-eaſt, one quarter eaſt, and we were favoured by a ſtrong tide. At day-break I diſcovered that we had paſſed berween the continent and an iſland named Aladar, at the ſame time that I ſaw another cape on the main land, which formed a bay, I obſerved that the middle of this bay lay north. About ten A. M. ſaw another cape, the extremity of which is diſtinguiſhed by a mountain in the form of a ſugar-loaf, ſee plate X.

Latitude in, 63 degrees, 10 minutes; longitude in, 28 degrees, 25 minutes; wind weſt-ſouth-weſt; current from north-weſt; courſe ſouth-eaſt, one quarter ſouth.

Friday June the 10th, having obſerved that the coaſt inclined to the eaſtward, I determined to ſail along it, as we were no longer incommoded by the ice-drifts, and the wind was favourable. We paſſed an agreeable day, which was the firſt ſince our departure from Kamchatka. The wind

* The Count was miſtaken in ſuppoſing he ever reached America. See the editor's preface.

Digitized by Google

wind was freſh, though not too ſtrong, the ſea moderate, and the ground from forty-five to twenty-ſix fathom; the night was no leſs beautiful than the day. At five in the morning we ſaw a prodigious quantity of birds, whoſe flight was directed from ſouth-eaſt to north-weſt, but we loſt ſight of the land, and did not again come in ſight 'till near ten hours, when we ſaw it at a very great diſtance in the north-eaſt quarter. Our courſe brought us nearer and nearer, and at three quarters after eleven I took the view, ſee plate XI.

According to the report, nine ſick; the pump clear; latitude in, 63 degrees, 0 minutes; longitude in, 31 degrees, 4 minutes; wind weſt-ſouth-weſt; current from the ſouth; courſe eaſt, one quarter ſouth.

Saturday June the 11th, fine clear weather with a ſtrong ſteady breeze, the land conſtantly in ſight; many flights of birds ſeen in the direction of yeſterday; the people on board uncommonly quiet. At ten I obſerved a headland, and the direction of the coaſt was to the eaſtward.

According to the report, ſeven ſick, the pump clear; latitude in, 61 degrees, 42 minutes; longitude in, 33 degrees, 40 minutes; wind weſt; no current; courſe ſouth-eaſt, one quarter ſouth.

Sounded, and got ground thirty-eight fathom.

Sunday, June the 12th, fine clear weather, and wind as yeſterday. At eight P. M. the land being in ſight from eaſt to north, ſounded, and got ground at twenty-two fathom; ſhortened ſail, and as the blackneſs of the horizon indicated the proximity of the land, came to anchor in fourteen fathom. At day-break found our-

ſelves at the diſtance of a league and a half from a head-land to the eaſtward, and another cape lay north one quarter north *, diſtant five leagues; near the entrance of a bay, which ſtrongly tempted me to come to; but the aſſociates inſiſted that we ſhould make the ſhorteſt courſe to ſome European eſtabliſhment, as they repreſented that they had not entered into any engagement to run over the ocean in ſearch of diſcoveries; I thought proper, therefore, to ſatisfy their deſires, and abandoning my project, I weighed, and continued to ſail along the coaſt.

According to the report, five ſick, the pump clear; latitude in, 60 degrees, 40 minutes; longitude in, 35 degrees, 52 minutes; wind weſt; current ſouth-weſt; courſe ſouth-ſouth-eaſt.

Depth of water twenty-ſix fathom.

Monday, June the 13th, the weather began to change and became ſqually; handed the top-ſails, and continued our courſe under the lower ſails. To conform to the reſolution of the company, I kept as near the wind as poſſible. In the night it was a dead calm, and the ſhip rolled in a dangerous manner. At day-break, no land being in ſight, we were ſurrounded by floating herbage. The companions expreſſed their ſatisfaction at the mildneſs of the climate we had ſailed into; at ten ſaw there elevated rocks, and ſailed round the ſouthernmoſt.

According to the report, five ſick, the pump clear; latitude in, 59 degrees, 10 minutes; longitude in, 34 degrees, 0 minutes; wind weſt, and weſt-north-weſt; no current; courſe ſouth-weſt, one quarter ſouth.

Very

* So in the manuſcript.

Digitized by Google

Very high land in ſight to the eaſtward, diſtant nine or ten leagues.

Tueſday, June the 14th, cloſe weather, inclining to ſtormy, the clouds becoming heavier and in heaps one above the other. The wind veered to the north-weſt, and increaſed its force, but as at the ſame it became ſteadier, I ventured to ſet the top-ſails. The ſmoothneſs of the water encouraged me to take this advantage. The weather in the night was ſimilar to that in the day, no land being in ſight, but we obſerved its ſituation by the blackneſs which covered the eaſtern part of the horizon; ſounded ſeveral times, but got no bottom.

According to the report, five ſick, the pump clear.

N. B. Saw the land which I ſketched, ſee plate XI. latitude in, 57 degrees, 25 minutes; longitude in, 32 degrees, 0 minutes; wind north-weſt; no current; courſe ſouth-weſt, one quarter ſouth.

Wedneſday, June the 15th, having obſerved ſigns of an approaching gale of wind during the whole morning, I handed the top-ſails, and got down the mizen top-maſt; it came on by degrees, and its greateſt force continued only three hours, but its violence was exceſſive; kept only the lower ſails ſet for the reſt of the day. At ſix we were between the cape and the iſland, which we doubled, but a ſecond iſland being in ſight, I lay too under the mizen, with the ſhip's head to the eaſtward; but the force of the wind at laſt obliged me in the morning to lay to under her bare poles. The violence of the rolling of the ſhip ſtretched our ſhrouds and back-ſtays in ſuch a manner, that in the morning the maſts were almoſt entirely without ſupport; we remedied this as well as poſſible, by ſeizing them together with ropes.

Thurſday,

Digitized by Google

Thurſday, June the 16th, we were in danger of running aground on an iſland, which I avoided by little leſs than a miracle. This was a day of extreme danger, as every ſea went over the ſhip, and the pumps being unable to keep her clear endangered our foundering. In this affliction I ſaw the loſs we ſhould undergo of the rich furs we had on board, which promiſed to be worth near a million of piaſtres at China.

Friday, June the 17th, the wind inſenſibly ſlackened, and the company laboured hard to clear the ſhip out of her ſtate of confuſion. At day-dreak it was almoſt calm, we therefore ſet up the ſhrouds and back ſtays, and got up the yards and top-maſts. At nine the wind entirely died away, and the ſun appearing, gave us an opportunity to make an obſervation.

According to the report, 19 ſick; pumps conſtantly going without being able to clear the well. Latitude in, 55 degrees, 35 minutes; longitude in, 31 degrees, 30 minutes.

Saturday, June the 18th, variable winds from north to north-eaſt; heavy weather, with an irregular ſwell. As I had determined to anchor at the iſland mentioned to me by Mr. Ochotyn, I reſolved to ſtand well to the eaſtward, upon its parallel of latitude, for fear of miſſing it: For this reaſon I ſailed on a ſouth-eaſt courſe. At two P. M. being deſirous of inſpecting the cargo, I cauſed the hold to be opened, out of which iſſued putrid vapours, doubtleſs from the corruption of the ſkins. The women and ſick, who were ſhut up below during the ſtorm, were carried upon deck: They at firſt found themſelves faint, but afterwards grew better. In the night the ſwell became leſs, and the wind fixed at north-eaſt, one quarter north.

The

Digitized by Google

The pumps were conſtantly kept at work without being able to clear the well, and the courſe of the veſſel was greatly impeded. At day-break ſaw land from the maſt head, right a head; uſed every effort to come near it; about noon we ſaw it was an iſland; ſounded ſeveral times, but got no bottom.

According to the report, 18 ſick; the veſſel making 18 inches of water per hour. Latitude in, 54 degrees, 28 minutes, north; longitude, 32 degrees, 46 minutes; wind north-eaſt, one quarter north; current from north-eaſt; courſe ſouth-eaſt, one quarter ſouth.

Sunday, June the 19th, at one P. M. the weather being fine, the wind moderate, and very little ſwell, I handed all the ſails, and ſent ſixteen men, under the command of Meſſrs. Wynbladth and Kuzneczow, on ſhore in the ſhallop, to make diſcoveries, while the ſhip drove to the ſouthward along ſhore. All this day was employed in repairing the damages ſuſtained by the late gale of wind. At ſeven Mr. Kuzneczow returned with two boats, conducted by the iſlanders, having two Ruſſian ſtrangers at their head. He informed me, that the iſland was named the greater Kadik, and that there was another iſland to the ſouth-eaſt, which the inhabitants called the iſland of black foxes. On his landing he was ſurrounded by the iſlanders, armed with lances and arrows, who appeared inclined to diſpute the paſſage with him. He called out, that if they were of the party of Mr. Ochotyn they ſhould acknowledge his friends; upon which exclamation two Ruſſians came forward for a more particular explanation, and when they were at laſt convinced that we were really connected with Mr. Ochotyn, from the account Mr. Kuzneczow gave of his ſtay at Bering's iſland, they

Digitized by Google

they appeaſed the natives, who laid down their arms, and came haſtily to give marks of their ſatisfaction. They propoſed to conduct Mr. Kuzneczow to their habitations; but his deſire of ſpeedily returning prevented his accepting their invitation. Two Ruſſians, therefore, determined to accompany him, and as a proof of their good intentions, they had loaded the boats with different roots and a quantity of beavers and foxes ſkins.

From this account I gave orders for receiving the iſlanders, and entertaining them in the beſt manner in our power; while I loſt no time in receiving the friends of Ochotyn. They informed me, that their number amounted to twenty-two upon the iſland, and that the tajons of the place had ſubmitted to the command of Mr. Ochotyn; by whoſe orders they were at that time buſied in conſtructing ſeveral veſſels. They then requeſted that I would give them ſome proof of my having had an interview with Mr. Ochotyn. I thought proper to ſatisfy them, by exhibiting his letter to the tajon of Urumuſir; after peruſal of which, having no further miſtruſt, they offered their ſervices as pilots, to conduct the ſhip to Urumuſir. I accepted their offer with great pleaſure, but I repreſented to them that one would be ſufficient. They therefore drew lots, and the chance fell upon Gregoir Salaſiow. We put ourſelves under his charge till morning, and then having made up a preſent for the tajon, which I entruſted to the companion of Salaſiow, I diſtributed knives and looking glaſſes to all the iſlanders on board, and diſmiſſing them we purſued our voyage with our two boats aſtern.

At nine in the morning we found ourſelves at the mouth of a bay, where Salaſiow requeſted leave to go on ſhore to procure

Digitized by Google

procure a Bajdara, to pilot us; I conſented, and he returned before noon with a boat and men. The agility with which this ſmall boat was managed, and the velocity of its courſe, though it had no other ſail than a ſmall piece of cloth, faſtened to a ſtick in the centre of the veſſel, aſtoniſhed me very much.

According to the report, eighteen ſick; the pumps conſtantly going. Latitude in 54 degrees, 00 minutes; longitude 32 degrees, 30 minutes. Wind north-eaſt; current north-eaſt; courſe ſouth-weſt, one quarter ſouth. Land in ſight all day.

Monday, June 20th. Fine warm weather, moderate wind, and no ſwell: many flights of birds in ſight, which Salaſiow obſerving me to notice, informed me, that at this ſeaſon, the geeſe and ducks retired towards Alakſina. From the account he gave me, I was confirmed in my opinion, that the land of Alakſina was the main continent of America. He aſſured me that the diſtance to the great land, did not exceed thirty-five or forty leagues; and that the iſlanders often made voyages thither, to viſit their friends and relations; the Tajon of Kadik, being married to one of the daughters of the Tajor of Alakſina Homin. About three o'clock, having the boats a-head, conducted by the iſlanders, we ſaw an iſland, which Salaſiow affirmed to be the iſland of Foxes; and he informed me, that there were three others to the ſouthward of that iſland. About five we ſaw another iſland, on the ſtarboard; and Salaſiow informed me, that there were four together, whoſe poſition I have marked from his information. The ſituation of theſe iſlands occaſioning a very irregular ſea, I determined to come too; for which purpoſe I conſulted my pilot, who

Digitized by Google

informed me, that the depth of water where we then were, was twenty fathom. In fact we found it eighteen, on ſounding. I anchored in the mid-channel, and immediately afterwards Salaſiow went on ſhore in his boat, having firſt informed me, that I might continue my courſe through the ſame channel, and that he would rejoin me before I got out of the ſtreights; for which purpoſe he begged I would hoiſt a blue flag, and fire ſeveral guns. In the night we obſerved ſeveral fires upon the great iſland, on our ſtarboard hand, and one on the ſmall iſland. At five in the morning, weighed, and made ſail, having a beautiful view of the iſland along which we coaſted. At ten we ſaw a ſecond iſland, on the larboard bow, and its poſition agreed with the information of Salaſiow.

According to the report, ſixteen ſick, pumps conſtantly at work. Latitude in 53 degrees, 49 minutes; longitude in 30 degrees, 41 minutes. Wind north-eaſt; current north-eaſt; courſe ſouth-weſt, one quarter weſt.

Tueſday, June 21. Wind and weather as yeſterday. Continued our courſe at a good rate. This day Mr. Panow aſſured me, that we were indebted for the good behaviour of the company, to our friendſhip with Mr. Ochotyn; and that he was well aſſured, that if it had not been for the fear of Mr. Ochotyn, a party of the companions would have run the ſhip on ſhore. In fact, the perfect tranquillity of the whole company, though worn out with hard work at the pumps, led me to give credit to Mr. Panow's conjecture; but I was contented to enjoy the advantage of this tranquillity, without minutely enquiring into the cauſes which produced it.

At

Digitized by Google

At five, Mr. Salaſiow returned, with three other veſſels, which brought a quantity of dried fiſh, roots, and one hundred and ſixty beaver ſkins. On his arrival on board, Mr. Salaſiow preſented me with the proviſions and furs, in the name of the Tajon of the iſland, whoſe ſon he brought with him, with a requeſt to convey him to the iſland Urumuſir, where he propoſed to viſit his relations. I conſented to this with pleaſure, and returned his father an aſſortment of toys, with a handſome gun, as a preſent; and after having diſtributed ſome trifles among the iſlanders, I diſmiſſed them. At ſeven we paſſed the ſouth-weſt point of the iſland, and came in ſight of another, right a-head, which Salaſiow told me was named Amſchud. We doubled the cape, and reſumed a direct courſe, at about two o'clock. At ſix we ſaw an iſland on the larboard ſide, which Salaſiow informed me belonged to Urumuſir; and that there lay another beyond it, which, in fact, was ſeen by the men at the maſt head. At eleven we obſerved three other iſlands, on the ſtarboard ſide, which Salaſiow called the Beavers; and we were in full ſight of the iſland Urumuſir, at the diſtance of two leagues. Salaſiow undertook to conduct us into the harbour.

According to the report, ten ſick, the pumps conſtantly at work. Latitude in 52 degrees, 25 minutes; longitude in 28 degrees, 15 minutes. Wind north-eaſt, quarter eaſt; current north-eaſt; courſe ſouth-weſt, one quarter ſouth.

Wedneſday, June 22. The wind being calm, hoiſted out the ſhallop and ſmall boat, and towed the veſſel. At two o'clock found ourſelves at the mouth of a bay, into

Digitized by Google

which we entered, and moored at one cable's length, distance from the ſhore, in four and one-half fathoms water.

As ſoon as we came too, Salaſiow requeſted to go on ſhore, to inform the inhabitants and aſſociates of Mr. Ochotyn of our arrival, in order to prevent any diſturbance. I ſent Mr. Kuzneczow with him, and he returned about three, P. M. with two other Ruſſians, who invited me to come on ſhore, and offered me the uſe of a commodious lodging, and a ſtore houſe, large enough to contain our whole lading. Mr. Kuzneczow informed me that the Ruſſians had promiſed him every aſſiſtance on the part of the iſlanders; but that I could not ſee the chief of the iſland till the following day, on account of the diſtance of his habitation. Before I left the veſſel I gave the command to Mr. Cſurin, and left with him twenty-eight aſſociates, whom I could moſt depend upon. All the reſt of the company, including the women and the ſick, I took on ſhore with me. When I landed I was taken to a very convenient habitation, near which ſtood a ſpacious building fit for a ſtore-houſe. As ſoon as I had appointed the lodgings of the ſick, and the women, I eſtabliſhed a camp for my people, and ſent immediate orders to unload the veſſel. This buſineſs was particularly intruſted to Meſſrs. Panow and Wynbladth, and I was content to have Mr. Kuzneczow and Sibaew with twelve aſſociates near me.

The two Ruſſians who conducted me to my habitation left me for the purpoſe, as they ſaid, to aſſemble their Aſſociates and the iſlanders in order to viſit me in ceremony.

At

Digitized by Google

At eight o'clock Salaſiow returned to inform me that the chief of the iſland was coming to pay me a viſit, with the wife of Ochotyn, and a great number of the iſlanders, and conſequently that it would be proper to make ſome ſmall preſents to the principal perſons, of whom he named eleven. After he had left me to join his companions, I paſſed the whole night in ſuperintending the landing of our effects, among which our guns were not the ſmalleſt concern. Our aſſiduity was ſuch that with no other aſſiſtance than the ſhallop and the ſmall boat the ſhip was unladen by five in the morning, and I had the ſatisfaction to ſee the veſſel cleared.

At nine in the morning an old man was announced to me, who ſpoke the Ruſſian language. He was admitted and came in with a boy of twelve years of age, whom he offered me as a preſent, which I accepted on condition that he would permit me to make him a preſent in return. His phyſiognomy convinced me that he was not a Ruſſian, but as he ſpoke the Ruſſian language very well, I was curious to enquire into this prodigy. There is no doubt but he perceived my embarraſſment, for he burſt into a laugh, and ſaid, Mr. European, you will be ſurprized that I call you by that name, but I muſt inform you that I know more than all the Aleuthes. I was taken by the Coſſacks in my youth, who carried me into their own country, where I was conveyed from one town to another, till at laſt I fell into the hands of a merchant, who ſent me with ſome Coſſacks in ſearch of my country, which we at laſt found, and the Coſſacks ſent me on ſhore, that I might invite my countrymen to trade with them. But for my part finding myſelf reſtored

Digitized by Google

ſtored to my country, I returned no more to the Coſſacks, but remained in my own iſland; where the Tajon having taken an attachment to me, gave me his daughter Kalki in marriage: and as I knew every thing, the Aleuthes made me their Tajon after the death of my father-in-law; and I am now the ſtrongeſt, the moſt knowing, and the richeſt Tajon of the Aleuthes. As I am now in years I have given up the government to my ſon, and content myſelf with being his friend and adviſer. My ſon need no longer fear the Coſſacks, for an European Tajon has married his daughter, and this Tajon is a god. For this reaſon it is that I laughed, and ſhall laugh on.

From this laſt expreſſion, underſtanding that he ſpoke of Ochotyn, I informed him that I knew him well, and that he was one of my friends, and had intruſted me with a letter for his father-in-law.

On this aſſurance the good old man embraced me, called me his ſon, his dear ſon, and afterwards begged leave to depart, to carry this news to his family. After the departure of this good man, I gave orders to inſpect the cheſts of furs. We did not find one undamaged. I gave orders, therefore, that they ſhould be expoſed to the air to dry, and the good ones ſeparated from the reſt. The women took charge of this buſineſs.

Thurſday, June 23. On ſhore at the bay of Urumuſir. At one o'clock I was informed of the arrival of the Tajon, eſcorted by the Ruſſians of Ochotyn's party, and a very conſiderable number of attendants. The good old man preceded them all, and preſented his wife to me, as did likewiſe the Tajon his children, with the wife of Mr. Ochotyn and ſome of the chief iſlanders. After this ceremony, the

Digitized by Google

the company formed a circle, in the midſt of which the Tajon ſeated himſelf with all his family. I then cauſed the letter of Mr. Ochotyn to be brought, which I put into the hands of the Tajon. Its contents were as follow:

Health to my father, the Tajon Tuachta, chief of the Aleuthes iſlands.

In the hope, that God will conduct my friend to you, I have given him the preſent letter, to inform you of our union, and to beg that you will give him every aſſiſtance he may want.

I wait the arrival of the veſſel to proceed to Kamchatka, whence I hope to return, before the next ſnow, to embrace my wife, and convince you of my tenderneſs. All that I ſhall take from the Coſſacks will be for you and your ſubjects. I recommend likewiſe, by this preſent letter, to my companions, to ſhew every ſubmiſſion to my friend who brings this letter, and to obey him as they would myſelf. I wiſh all happineſs to my father, our family, my aſſociates, and my wife.

Signed OCHOTYN.

Bering's Iſland, May 24, 1771.

This letter was read by a Ruſſian, and interpreted in a loud voice by the father of the Tajon. The wife of Mr. Ochotyn wept, and her tears convinced me that the people, whom we are in the habit of calling ſavages, might ſerve as models to us for friendſhip and attachment. After the letter was read, one of the Ruſſians advanced and informed me, that he was nominated commanding officer on the iſland during the abſence of Mr. Ochotyn; and that in

Digitized by Google

conſequence of his orders, he begged me to diſpoſe of him and forty other aſſociates. I thanked him for his offer, and replied, that if ſome of them were willing to aſſiſt us in our works, I ſhould gratefully acknowledge their ſervices. The Tajon, on his part, requeſted his father to propoſe to me to enter into friendſhip with him. For this purpoſe, he ordered ſeven veſſels made of ſkin and filled with water to be brought to waſh our faces. The Tajon took one, and diſtributed five others to five other chiefs. The ſeventh he preſented to me. After this ceremony, fire was brought, and every one took a coal, and ſaid, with fire like this we will burn the Coſſacks. The oath finiſhed by the diſtribution of ſeven arrows, which were broken by the poſſeſſors reſpectively, with the words, Amongſt us arms are uſeleſs. The attendants then brought ſtones, and raiſed a pile in remembrance of our oath. After which I regaled the Tajons with brandy, and diſtributed at leaſt two hundred pounds of tobacco among the iſlanders. I likewiſe diſtributed my preſents, in return for which Tajon promiſed me ſome valuable ſkins.

At the cloſe of day the iſlanders retired to an eminence near us, and eſtabliſhed their camp. Being informed by the aſſociates of Ochotyn, that they were about to make a feſtival of rejoicing, I determined to go and ſee them. I accordingly went, and the Tajon, as ſoon as he ſaw me, came to meet me, and introduced me into the circle, that I might have a better opportunity of beholding their dance. In reality it was very ſingular; for at the ſound of the drum the whole company became agitated, as if in the higheſt rage; and the Ruſſians informed me, that I ſhould ſoon ſee the whole company fall aſleep, which was the

Digitized by Google

uſual effect of an infuſion of muchomor, which the iſlanders drink on ſuch occaſions. This incident did not fail to happen ſoon after, and the Tajon himſelf fell aſleep among the reſt. The old man his father was, however, an exception; he accompanied me home, and I embraced the opportunity of inquiring, what reaſon had induced him to part with the boy he had given me? He replied, that when he was laſt year at Kadik, the Tajon of that iſland had given him the boy, who was born on the great land of Alexina, where he had doubtleſs been made priſoner by the Aleuthes, againſt whom they had ſworn a declared emnity; and that being apprehenſive of the conſequences on the part of the young man, he had determined to get rid of him the firſt opportunity.

As I had promiſed, when I accepted his preſent, that I would make another in exchange, I gave him a handſome gun, one pound of powder, fifty balls, and five pounds of tobacco, with a bottle of brandy. Having thus ſatisfied him we parted, and I went to reſt: Mr. Kuzneczow undertook to keep watch. When I aroſe, I learned that twenty-two aſſociates of Mr. Ochotyn's party had undertaken to aſſiſt in repairing the ſhip; and two of them being coopers, were employed in ſetting up our caſks, which we were in great want of for water, as the heat of the climate to which we were going would prevent our availing ourſelves of the freſh water from the ice iſlands, as we had hitherto done.

At nine o'clock, I was informed that a number of young women were come to offer their ſervices, but the report came too late to put it in my power to make any deciſion, for my aſſociates had every one choſen companions from

Digitized by Google

amongſt them. As I was deſirous of inſpecting the progreſs of the repairs of the veſſel, I accordingly went on board, and had the ſatisfaction to ſee that every thing would be compleated in the courſe of twenty-four hours, and conſequently that I might quit the iſland in two or three days. I was deſirous of profiting by this interval, and therefore determined to examine the interior parts of the iſland, and more eſpecially to viſit the iſlands we had diſcovered on our approach to Urumuſir.

According to the report ſix ſick; a quantity of roots and fiſh were brought me on the part of the Tajon.

Friday, June 24. I made an excurſion, accompanied by Mr. Kuzneczow, towards the eaſtern part of the iſland. I paſſed over the beautiful plains which are certainly ſuſceptible of good cultivation, but I diſcovered no veſtige which rendered it probable that theſe iſlanders cultivate the earth. Their food intirely conſiſts in certain roots, fiſh, and the fleſh of beavers and ſea cows. The wood which grows on this iſland is good, and proper for every kind of building.

The habitations of the iſlanders, ſeveral of which we ſaw and viſited, perfectly reſembled the balagans of the Kamchadals. After I returned from this excurſion, I determined, from the ſmall proſpect of meeting with any thing worthy of notice, to make no more, but double my attention, to get the veſſel ready for departure.

According to the report ſix ſick. Saturday, June 25. Mr. Cſurin informed me, that the veſſel was ready to receive her cargo. I therefore gave orders to this effect to Mr. Chruſtiew. The aſſociates of Mr. Ochotyn were of great aſſiſtance to us in this buſineſs.

Digitized by Google

About two o'clock, the father of the Tajon came with a preſent of ſixty ſkins, and a canoe made of ſkin; the lightneſs of which ſurprized me, for two men could eaſily carry it, though it had eight oars. The keel only was made of wood, and the reſt was whale-bone, covered with the ſkins of ſea wolves, with the hair outwards, ſewed together with twine made of the guts of beavers. At five o'clock, the Tajon likewiſe arrived with preſents, and I regaled him and his company with brandy. When he was informed of my approaching departure, he requeſted a letter for Mr. Ochotyn, and I delivered him one to the following purport:

HONOURABLE FRIEND,

AFTER a painful and diſagreeable navigation, in which I was compelled, by the obſtinacy of my companions, to ſail as far to the northward as 66 degrees, I have at laſt returned to the ſouth, and have taken advantage of the winds to viſit your iſland. I have received much advantage from the ſervices of Salaſiow, one of your aſſociates, whom I particularly recommend to you. On my arrival, your friends and companions have given me every aſſiſtance to put my veſſel into proper repair for a long voyage; and the iſlanders, from their example, have behaved with the utmoſt cordiality to us. The Tajon Tuachta, more eſpecially, has been moſt friendly and attentive. I could have wiſhed, that the preſents I have diſtributed among the iſlanders had been of greater value: but alas! you know that Kamchatka is not a place from which any one eſcapes overloaded with riches; beſides which, all my poſſeſſions conſiſted in furs, which

Digitized by Google

are plentiful among the iſlanders. During the time of my ſtay, I have obſerved, with ſatisfaction, that the iſlanders are ſincerely attached to you. I therefore recommend to you to avail yourſelf, as much as poſſible, of their affection; and for that purpoſe, I would adviſe you always to have a truſty party of theſe people near you; for among the Ruſſians, who are with you, there will be ſome who will ſhew the diſpoſition of the country. To place yourſelf out of danger of plots, you muſt keep your people in conſtant employment: and I take this occaſion once more to repeat, that if I were ſituated as you are, with two or three veſſels ſuitable to the undertaking, I would retire to the ſouthward, where, doubtleſs, you will find iſlands, and the climate will ſecond your attempts to eſtabliſh a flouriſhing colony. The knowledge you have of the commerce of China, and the conſtant reſource which you might have to your friends in the Aleuthes iſlands for furs, to ſupply this trade, could not fail to put it in your power to make an eſtabliſhment of the firſt importance. Adieu, my friend, I wiſh you every proſperity, and you may depend upon my beſt exertions to cauſe ſome European power to accept your propoſals.

Signed MAURICE AUGUSTUS.

After communicating this letter to the Tajon, I took my leave, being reſolved to embark the following day. At eight in the morning, I gave orders for every one to go on board; and after making preſents to Salaſiow, and the other aſſociates, I likewiſe went on board with the ſick and the women, where I found every thing in proper order.

According

Digitized by Google

According to the report, two ſick; the veſſel drawing ſeven feet eight inches water.

Sunday, June 26. Fine clear warm weather, and calm. At three o'clock weighed anchor, towed out the veſſel, and came too in the mid-channel. The aſſociates celebrated a feſtival on the occaſion of baptizing the young American on board, who was named Sacharie. In the morning, having been informed that there were upwards of fifty women on board, I gave orders for ſetting them on ſhore, after the diſtribution of preſents among them. At eleven, A. M. weighed and made ſail.

According to the report, two ſick; cleared the well, having made no more than eight inches water during the twenty-four hours.

Monday, June 27. At ſea; fine temperate weather; wind north-eaſt, rather freſh; courſe ſouth-weſt, one quarter ſouth, with all ſails ſet; the three iſlands in ſight till four, P. M. and the ſouth-weſt point in ſight till nine; clear ſtarry weather in the night. At ten in the morning ſaw land from the maſt-head, which, the wind being favourable, we approached within two leagues diſtance.

According to the report, two ſick; the well clear. Latitude in 51 degrees, 30 minutes; longitude in 25 degrees, 25 minutes. Wind north-eaſt; no current; courſe ſouth-weſt.

Tueſday, June 28. Altered our courſe to ſouth one quarter eaſt, to avoid the breakers in ſight near the ſhore. At ſeven, P. M. the wind freſhened from north-eaſt to eaſt, and the ſea aroſe very irregularly, which cauſed the veſſel to labour. At eight, the ſouthern extremity of the iſland being in ſight, bearing north one quarter weſt, we reſumed

our

Digitized by Google

our courſe, as I was deſirous of reconnoitring theſe iſlands, which had been deſcribed to me as ſituated in the 48th degree of north latitude. At ten the wind ſettled at eaſt, and blew with the utmoſt violence; I had only time to take in the ſmall ſails; the impetuoſity of the wind reduced the ſwell, and the ſea became as level as a pond; we ran at the rate of ten knots and an half by the log under the mizen. At ſeven, A. M. the wind began to ſlacken, and permitted me to ſet the top-ſails, under which we ſailed with undiminiſhed velocity. At ten, A. M. ſaw land right a-head, which at noon was only three leagues diſtant.

According to the report, one ſick; the well clear. Latitude in 49 degrees, 6 minutes; longitude in 22 degrees, 40 minutes. Wind eaſt; no current; courſe ſouth-weſt, one quarter ſouth.

Wedneſday, June 29. Strong gales of wind throughout; at three paſſed a cape of the iſland Cuſma; about five the horizon became clouded; and at ſix we had a ſhower, which did not laſt long. The wind returned to the north-eaſt, with ſuch violence as carried away the fore and mizen top-maſts. The cargo ſhifted with the ſhock, and ſix buts of water were ſtaved. I was chagrined at this loſs, more particularly becauſe I was convinced that our caſks would not hold tight in a hot climate.

According to the report, five ſick; the pump clear. Latitude in 48 degrees, 40 minutes; longitude in 18 degrees, 30 minutes. Wind north-eaſt; no current; courſe ſouth-weſt, one quarter weſt.

Thurſday, June 30. Hazy weather, with rain; wind from north-eaſt to north, with a heavy ſwell from north-weſt.

As

Digitized by Google

As I was desirous of taking every precaution to secure us against the inconvenience of the want of water, I gave orders for the regular distribution of an allowance. But Mr. Stephanow came and represented to me, in the name of the company, that the allowance of biscuit and water I had set was not enough, and that they required twice as much, as well as an allowance of brandy, which they were in need of to keep up their spirits. This proceeding of Mr. Stephanow irritated me to such a degree, that I threatened to throw him overboard if he continued his cabal. I recollected myself however, and was desirous of convincing him of the absurdity of his conduct. But he paid no attention to me, and left the cabin with the grossest invectives, without doubt with the intention of carrying his plot into execution. To prevent this, I assembled the chiefs of the company, in order to consult what was best to be done; for I was well convinced, from my knowledge of the individuals who composed Stephanow's party, that they were disposed to proceed to more serious consequences. We had scarcely met, before we received information that Stephanow had encouraged a party of the associates to broach a barrel of water to quench their thirst; and with a view to persuade them more effectually, he had declared that we were near the land, as he was certainly assured by my own observations and the charts I had composed from the information of Mr. Ochotyn, &c. He told them, that he knew very well the reason why I had determined not to anchor at this land, and promised to tell the reason in secret another time; but that it was highly necessary, at this moment, to compel me to obey their orders. This report determined us to go upon deck, to advise the associates

Digitized by Google

ciates to return to their duty; but we found them all armed, with Mr. Stephanow at their head, who ſpared no imprecation againſt me, and declared, that as the company had elected him chief, he would preſerve my life merely for the purpoſe of encreaſing my ſufferings. He then ordered his people to ſeize me; but luckily for me, Mr. Kuzneczow thought of awakening the aſſociates, who were aſleep in their hammocks. Theſe came up the fore-ſkuttle, to the number of nine, all armed, and prevented them from proceeding to violence. Being thus confined to the forecaſtle, we were ſpectators of the greateſt diſorders, which Mr. Stephanow himſelf could not remedy; for the aſſociates of his party having entered the cabin, brought up three caſks of brandy; and while this kind of proviſion laſted, it was partly drank by them, and partly thrown about the deck. In the midſt of this debauch the actors were interrupted by the night, and being all drunk, without knowing what they did, or paying the leaſt attention to the remonſtrances of Mr. Stephanow, they went down to reſt. Seeing himſelf thus deſtitute of all ſupport, the unhappy wretch followed them, to repreſent the dangers they expoſed themſelves to by ſuffering me to reſume the authority.

We took advantage of their confuſion to ſhut the main hatchway; and while I went to viſit my cabin, Mr. Panow, with two aſſociates, Sibaew and Loginow, ſeized Stephanow, whom they put in irons, and faſtened to the mizen-maſt.

At one in the morning Mr. Winbladth informed me, that the revolters, heated by the great quantity of brandy they had drank, and deſirous of water, and at the ſame time not knowing what they did, had ſtaved fourteen caſks of water,

Digitized by Google

which was entirely loſt, and there remained no more than two caſks and an half in all.

Such were the conſequences of the rage which Stephanow had excited. My friends adviſed me to ſeize the criminals and put them all in irons. But I was too much affected with the proſpect of our approaching miſery to think of adding to our preſent and future unhappy reflections by an open diſſention.

At five o'clock, having taken the precaution to ſeize the arms of all who had followed the party of Stephanow, I muſtered the whole company on deck, where I expoſed to them the conduct of Stephanow, and repreſented in ſtrong terms the ſufferings to which we were now expoſed, without the poſſibility of a remedy. The unhappy men, who had perpetrated the crime of loſing our water, were entirely ignorant of the circumſtance when informed of it. Their deſpair then burſt forth in accuſations of Stephanow, as the author of all that they had done. With one voice they demanded his death; they inſiſted on ſacrificing ſuch a monſter, and it was not without the greateſt difficulty that I prevailed on them to ſpare his life. But as it was neceſſary to ſhew him that I had power to puniſh crimes, I propoſed that he ſhould be declared unworthy of the ſociety, and condemned him to ſerve as aſſiſtant to the cook. The ſame ſentence was paſſed upon the Sieur Sudekin, ſecretary at Kamchatka, whom I had brought away priſoner, and who had ſince attached himſelf to Stephanow. Stephanow was then brought to the main-maſt to hear his ſentence, and as he ſuppoſed I ſhould condemn him to death, he was mean enough to implore my compaſſion, and ſtill meaner after he had heard his ſentence read. He thanked me for the pity

Digitized by Google

I had ſhewn on this occaſion. Mr. Panow, enraged at his puſilanimity, would have ſhot him through the head, if I had not prevented him.

According to the report, twenty-one ſick; the pump clear. Latitude in 47 degrees, 40 minutes; longitude in 15 degrees, 30 minutes. Wind from north to north-eaſt; no current; courſe ſouth-weſt.

Friday, July 1, 1771. The wind drawing round to the weſtward, and increaſing with rain. Saw a large quantity of floating weed; and the colour of the water appearing changed, ſounded ſeveral times, but got no bottom. The company employed in collecting rain water, of which we obtained two caſks. This ſupply was very acceptable; but as the water taſted of tar, the aſſociates engaged to drink no other, in order to preſerve the reſt of our ſtock for myſelf, the ſick, and our female companions. Mr. Kuzneczow informed me of this reſolution. At the cloſe of the evening it fell calm; but at two, A. M. the wind roſe, and blew freſh from north-weſt, one quarter weſt. At ſix, M. Le Surin informed me that there ſtill remained four caſks of water, which were covered with the planks that formed the cabin of his lady. This account was very agreeable; but I ordered him not to communicate his diſcovery to his aſſociates. This day we replaced the fore and mizen topmaſts.

According to the report, four ſick; the pumps clear. Latitude in 46 degrees, 30 minutes; longitude in 12 degrees, 35 minutes. Wind north north-weſt; no current; courſe ſouth-weſt.

Saturday, July 2. Cloſe cloudy weather. At one, P. M. a ſquall came on, with abundance of rain; after

Digitized by Google

which the wind ſlackened, and at three it became calm; but the rippling of the ſea gave me reaſon to apprehend that we were in a ſtrong current. At * the ſea was ſo agitated, that the veſſel rolled very much, and it was not without ſome apprehenſion, that I ſaw the main and mizen yards touch the ſurface of the water, At ſeven the weather became ſqually from the north-weſt quarter, from whence we had a ſtrong gale. I had already taken in all the reefs: the courſe of the veſſel through the water made a conſiderable noiſe, occaſioned by a current contrary to its direction, and to which, no doubt, we were indebted for our preſervation; for, in the obſcurity of the night, we ſhould not have been otherwiſe able to have avoided running aſhore. The break of day rendered our danger evident, as we ſaw breakers at the diſtance of three quarters of a league. I immediately ſounded, and got ground at thirty-ſix fathoms, the bottom conſiſting of mud and broken ſhells. At nine, A. M. we approached the ſhore, and anchored in twenty-eight fathoms; after which I immediately ſent the ſmall boat on ſhore, with Mr. Kuzneczow, to examine the coaſt, in order to diſcover ſome port or harbour. The ſtrength of the wind, however, parted our cable, and drove us out; I therefore fired ſeveral guns for the boat, as I had little hope of reaching the coaſt with ſo impetuous a wind. The fear of loſing our boat and people, obliged me to lay to; but the current carrying us rapidly towards the ſhore, I occaſionally ſet the mizen. This manœuvre fatigued the veſſel greatly, and was frequently attended with evident danger of deſtruction.

* A blank in the M. S.

Digitized by Google

According to the report, ſix ſick; the pump clear. Latitude in 45 degrees, 57 minutes; longitude in 11 degrees, 30 minutes. Wind from north-weſt, to north-weſt, one quarter weſt.

Sunday, July 3. A very heavy gale from north-weſt to weſt; ſhip laying to, and firing minute guns, to recal the boat. At four, P. M. we clued up the mizen, and the veſſel meeting the ſwell, ſhipped a conſiderable quantity of water, and it was with ſome difficulty that ſhe was righted. The aſſociates, at the cloſe of day, being apprehenſive of being expoſed to a repetition of the ſame danger, inſiſted, that I ſhould either continue my courſe, or run the veſſel aground on a ſand bank which they had obſerved. I repreſented to them, that it would be an act of the utmoſt barbarity to abandon nine of our moſt faithful companions, upon an unknown land, to the mercy of the ſavages; and that, therefore, I was determined rather to periſh than quit the ſhore; as I would not conſent to bear the reproach of having abandoned any of my companions. I told them, that I was aſhamed of their want of delicacy, in making ſuch a propoſal as that of deſerting their companions; and that, with regard to their ſecond requeſt, it was impoſſible to carry it into execution, becauſe the wind, having veered round to the eaſtward, did not permit us to reach the ſhore at any particular ſpot; and the only means of accompliſhing this, conſiſted in abandoning the veſſel to the current, which might probably throw us on the reef. For theſe reaſons, I informed them that I was firmly reſolved to conſent to no part of their propoſal. This determined anſwer enraged them, and ſeveral of them threatened me; among theſe, Baylakin cried out, that he would ſoon

Digitized by Google

ſoon put an end to the diſpute; and, ſnatching a knife out of the hands of one that ſtood by, he ran towards me. I prevented his purpoſe by firing a piſtol, which fortunately diſabled, without killing him. Upon this, ſeveral of the aſſociates prepared to enter into a conteſt by main force; but the ſight of Meſſrs. Panow, Cruſtiew, Baturin, Wynbladth, and ſeveral others, armed with piſtols, and ready to obey my commands, checked their impetuoſity. At length the night cloſed in, without ſight of our companions; for this reaſon I kept two fires on board, and fired cannon at regular intervals, About eight, the watch called out, that he heard a ſhouting. We all ran to verify the fact, and had the great ſatisfaction to behold ſeveral flaſhes, at a ſmall diſtance from us. Their ſhort duration convinced us that it was our companions, who fired their muſquets, in which circumſtance we were not deceived. At a quarter paſt eight they came on board, on the larboard ſide, not without ſome riſk of ſtaving the boat. Their happy return confounded the mutineers, who durſt not ſhew their faces.

Mr. Kuzneczow gave me an account of the difficulties and fatigue attending his return; and, indeed, it was a miracle that the boat had been able to reſiſt the forces of the ſea. His report was, that, an hour after he left the veſſel, he arrived near the ſhore, but finding it impoſſible to go on ſhore, he was obliged to row round a headland, which ſheltering him from the wind, preſented a favourable place of landing in an harbour, where he found ſeveral boats at anchor, and a very large two-maſted veſſel; that when he came on ſhore, he ſaw inhabitants, cloathed in the Chineſe manner, in blue, with paraſols. He accoſted them without heſitation, having left his ſix aſſociates in the boat.

The

Digitized by Google

The islanders invited him to go further up the country; which he should have complied with, if he had not heard the signal for his return. At this signal, he did every thing in his power, by signs and gestures, to convince the islanders that he was obliged to return. They shewed no desire to retain him; but all which he could understand, amounted to a wish, on their part, to explain to him that the weather was very unfavourable to go out to sea, and that he ought to stay on shore, and return the next day in the morning. But that, when they perceived he was determined to depart, one among the islanders laid his hand upon his breast, (a sign of friendship, as he understood) and then presented him with his parasol, and a pipe, with a little bag containing tobacco; that he himself, in return, having nothing about him to present to the islander, had given him his sabre, mounted with silver; and that the islander, charmed with his behaviour, had given him a knife. With respect to the country, he informed me, that he had seen a number of hogs, but no black cattle; and that the huts, or small houses, built near the shore, were regularly placed, and perfectly shaded by rows of trees, and the coast appeared well wooded.

This report, which was heard by all the company, excited a desire to go on shore; and they intreated me to use every exertion to continue in its neighbourhood. I was no less interested than themselves, and therefore determined to keep near the shore. But all our hopes vanished when we found the wind fix at the west, with redoubled force. I endeavoured to keep my position till two A. M. but then being no longer able to lay to, I set sail under the fore-stay-sail, and departed at the rate of eight or nine knots an hour.

At

Digitized by Google

At day-break, the veſſel was ſurrounded with porpoiſes and various ſea birds, and the wind continued to freſhen. Plate 12 contains a view of the ſhore, taken by Mr. Kuzneczow.

According to the report, four ſick, one wounded; pump clear. Latitude in 45 degrees, 20 minutes; longitude in 13 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind weſt; courſe ſouth-eaſt, one quarter eaſt.

Monday, July 4. A hard gale, with occaſional ſhowers, which gave me ſome hope of its ſlackening; but unfortunately it continued with the utmoſt violence, and deprived me of every hope of regaining the coaſt we had quitted; I therefore hauled wind, and held on my courſe. This day I examined the paraſol, which was brought by Mr. Kuzneczow. It was made of paper, ſoaked with oil, and painted with ſeveral Chineſe and Japaneſe characters. The pipe was of a compound metal, of a white colour; and the purſe, containing the tobacco, was embroidered ſatin. The knife was perfectly well tempered, and the handle was ivory, well finiſhed. Theſe circumſtances convinced me that the iſlanders traded with the Japaneſe. About ſun-ſet the wind abated, and permitted me to ſet the mizen and cloſe reefed topſails.

According to the report, three ſick, one wounded. Latitude in 44 degrees, 6 minutes; longitude in 12 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind weſt; courſe ſouth-ſouth-weſt.

Tueſday, July 5. Hot weather, and the wind veering round to the ſouthward. This day was employed in ſetting up our rigging, which the hot weather had ſlackened. I likewiſe changed our ſails, which were ſo rent and worn, that

Digitized by Google

that their effect was conſiderably diminiſhed. I diſtributed the old ſails among the company, to make trowſers.

This day a council was held to determine, whether we ought to ſail for Japan; for as I had no poſitive knowledge of any iſland, I thought it proper to take this courſe, to avoid the ſufferings which threatened us for the want of proviſions and water. Our proviſions conſiſted of ſix caſks of ſalt fiſh, and two caſks of dried fiſh; but the dried fiſh began to putrify by the heat, and convinced me that we could not uſe it much longer. All our biſcuit was conſumed, and our whole reſource conſiſted in theſe two caſks of dried fiſh, with two caſks of rain water, and four caſks of ſweet water. I could not, therefore, depend on more than ſix or eight days proviſion, and fourteen days drink. The council determined to hold our courſe towards Japan, but to put in at any iſland we might come in ſight of. This reſolution was communicated to the whole company, who were very ſubmiſſive, and conſented to the deciſion, from the fear of hunger. M. Meder, having inſpected our proviſion of ſalt fiſh, aſſured me, that in one or two days I ſhould be obliged to throw the whole overboard; and, in order to turn it to the beſt advantage, he adviſed me to boil the ſalted fiſh to the conſiſtence of a paſte, and afterwards dry the paſte into the form of bread, which might ſerve us in caſe of extreme need. I very much approved of this advice, and gave him charge to carry it into execution. The night was clear and ſtarry; at ſix, A. M. the wind became variable, and at ten it fixed at north-weſt. This day we prepared lines for catching fiſh, ſeveral of which we had ſeen.

Accord-

Digitized by Google

According to the report, five ſick, and one wounded; the pump clear. Latitude in 43 degrees, 20 minutes; longitude in 12 degrees, 8 minutes. Wind weſt-ſouth-weſt, and north; courſe ſouth-ſouth-eaſt.

Wedneſday, July 6. Cloſe cloudy weather to the north-weſt, but the rain having abated the force of the wind and the ſwell of the ſea, we ſet all our ſails, and directed our courſe to the weſtward. This day we ſaw a quantity of floating ſea-weed, and ſeveral birds, which directed their flight to the north-weſt. The fiſhermen took no more than two middling ſized fiſh, weighing together about three pounds. At ſun-ſet we heard thunder, for the firſt time; the ſhip's company thereupon entreated me to permit them to be bled, as, without that precaution, they apprehended bad conſequences from the heat, which they had already began to feel. I conſented to their requeſt with ſo much the more willingneſs, as the precaution could not be hurtful to their health. The night was dark, without any appearance of the moon; but the veſſel making great way, gave us ſpirits. At day-break the quartermaſter called out land. I went on deck, and likewiſe miſtook ſome low clouds for land; but ſun-riſe diſſipated the charm. In the morning Mr. Meder bled fifteen of the aſſociates.

According to the report, three ſick, one wounded; the pump clear. Latitude in 43 degrees, 20 minutes; longitude in 9 degrees, 4 minutes. Wind north one quarter weſt; courſe weſt one quarter ſouth.

Thurſday, July 7. Very fine weather, and ſmooth water. The heat of the ſun was ſuch, that it melted the pitch off the ſides of the veſſel. I gave orders to pay it afreſh, and to wet the decks and ſides every morning at

Digitized by Google

ſun-riſe. The heat of the ſun being very troubleſome, I cut up a ſail to make an awning. This day we fitted out the ſhallop, and the company was employed in cleaning their arms, and making ſmall cordage: the night was very fine. At nine, A. M. we ſaw ſomething floating on the water, and immediately lowered the boat, and rowed towards it. The boats crew, on their return, brought another boat, very much damaged, and overſet. When we had got it on board, I obſerved that it was a ſmall fiſhing boat, for I found ſome lines, made of twiſted ſilk, ſtill faſtened to it. The company, after examining the boat, undertook to repair it, to ſerve in caſe of need. This day fifteen other aſſociates were bled.

According to the report, three ſick; the wounded man able to come to work. Latitude in 42 degrees, 0 minutes; longitude in 6 degrees, 38 minutes. Wind north-north-weſt; courſe ſouth-weſt one quarter ſouth.

Friday, July 8. The wind gradually increaſing, with fine weather, and the ſun ſhining ſtrong. This day we made a trial of the fiſh-bread; we found it harſh, ſour, and very ſalt, but neceſſity obliged us to eat it. At ſun-ſet, ſaw a great number of porpoiſes, but could catch none. The night was fine and clear, throughout. At day-break, four of the aſſociates preſented themſelves, in the name of the company, to aſk forgiveneſs, in favour of Mr. Stephanow; and as I was aſſured of their fidelity to me, I promiſed to comply with their requeſt, with ſo much more ſatisfaction, as I deſired nothing more ardently than to convince the company how much I was devoted to their wiſhes. After their departure, I aſſembled a committee of the principal aſſociates, to whom I declared my intention

Digitized by Google

intention to receive Mr. Stephanow again into our ſociety. They all conſented to my reſolution, except Mr. Panow, who declared that I ſhould have more than one occaſion, hereafter, to complain of this infamous man, for whom, as a relation, he had ſo much cauſe to bluſh. This day Mr. Meder bled twenty of the aſſociates.

According to the report, three ſick; the pump clear. Latitude in 41 degrees, 28 minutes; longitude in 4 degrees, 26 minutes. Wind north-north-weſt; courſe ſouth-weſt one quarter weſt.

Saturday, July 9. Purſuant to my reſolution, I cauſed Mr. Stephanow to be called, and acquainted him that he was forgiven, and received into our ſociety; at the ſame time that I exhorted him to deſiſt, at length, from his enmity to me, and repreſented to him, that he ought not to doubt the ſincerity with which I offered my friendſhip, as it was entirely in my power to clear myſelf of him. He appeared extremely ſatisfied, and promiſed, on his faith and honour, to conduct himſelf with more delicacy in future: he ſpared no oaths to confirm his repentance; and, as a final confirmation, he entreated me to aſſemble the whole company, before whom he was deſirous of publickly acknowledging his fault, and demanding pardon. And though I excuſed myſelf, by obſerving, that I neither could nor ought to permit ſuch a proceeding on his part; yet he perſiſted, and intreated thoſe preſent to ſecond his propoſal; aſſuring them, that he ſhould not enjoy any peace, until he had convinced the whole company that his heart and his words agreed. As I ſaw it was not in my power to change his reſolution, I begged Mr. Cruſtiew to comply with Mr. Stephanow's demand.

Digitized by Google

After the departure of Mr. Cruſtiew with the penitent, I expreſſed my joy to Mr. Panow, to ſee his relation at length recalled to reaſon; but this gallant man aſſured me, that I ſhould find myſelf deceived in my hopes, as he knew him too well to hope for amendment. He added, that he believed him, at that moment, to be truly diſpoſed to keep his engagement; but that he would lay any wager, that, before eight days were expired, he would give new proofs of the wickedneſs of his diſpoſition; for which reaſon, he ſtrongly urged me never to place any confidence in ſuch a wretch.

At five P. M. word was brought, that the hoops of one of the water caſks had given way, and the water was entirely run out; and that another caſk was two-thirds empty; ſo that no more than three caſks and ſome pots of water remained, with about nine hundred pounds of fiſh dried, or in the form of bread. In a ſtate of extreme anxiety, and extenuated by continual fatigue, I paſſed a cruel night; and as it was neceſſary to conceal my uneaſineſs from the aſſociates, this reſtraint overcame me to ſuch a degree, that I was ſeveral times, during the night, ready to faint. There was no reaſon to hope for rain or dew, as the ſeaſon unfortunately was dry; and I had no knowledge of the poſition of the neighbouring lands, upon which I could place any well-grounded expectation. At day-break I aſſembled the whole company, to give them an account of our ſituation, and to propoſe that they ſhould be put to the allowance of half a pound of fiſh, and half a bottle of water a day; and in order to convince them of the truth of what I aſſerted, I cauſed the proviſion of fiſh to be brought upon deck, where, inſtead of nine hundred pounds, we unfortunately

Digitized by Google

tunately found only four hundred and ſixty pounds; and upon examination, the water proved to be much leſs than three caſks. This ſituation reduced them to deſpair, for they aſſured me that it would be impoſſible to ſupport life on ſuch an allowance of ſuch food as the fiſh, which likewiſe produced extreme thirſt. Their repreſentations were but too true, as I knew by my own experience; and to prevent every diſpute concerning the diſtribution, I divided our proviſion among all the aſſociates, and every one received his part, conſiſting of about four pounds and three quarters; and I reſerved the biſcuit, though damaged, for the uſe of the women. Several of the aſſociates received their proviſions, weeping bitterly; and others curſed thoſe who had led them to the revolution at Kamchatka.—Such was the ſcene which now preſented itſelf before my eyes.

According to the report, ſix ſick; the pump clear. Latitude in 39 degrees, 40 minutes; longitude in 5 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind ſouth-weſt one quarter weſt; courſe ſouth-ſouth-eaſt.

Sunday, July 10. Clear weather, and exceſſive hot; a ſtrong breeze, but unſteady. At ſun-ſet the wind freſhened, and the clouds drove along with great ſwiftneſs. At eleven, P. M. it thundered, and the clouds broke; very little rain fell on board. At four A. M. handed the ſmall ſails. The veſſel lying along, made a conſiderable quantity of water; for this reaſon, I gave orders for covering the upper works with tarred ſail cloth.

Latitude in 38 degrees, 0 minutes; longitude in 5 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind weſt-north-weſt; courſe ſouth-weſt one quarter ſouth.

Monday,

Digitized by Google

Monday, July 11. A ſtrong gale, and cloudy, with continual thunder and lightning. Prudence required us to lay to, but our ſituation did not admit of it; for this reaſon, I encouraged the aſſociates to continue the ſervice, but unfortunately they were all ſo diſheartened, that I deſpaired of keeping the ſhip by the wind. A dreadful night ſucceeded this day, with every horrid circumſtance that can be imagined at ſea; the fore and mizen topſails were at once blown from the yards, and the noiſe of the torn ſails encreaſed the fears of the company. The wind encreaſed by ſudden guſts, which threatened to diſmaſt us entirely; and as none of the aſſociates would go aloft, it was impoſſible to hand the topſails. At three, A. M. the mizen maſt was ſplit by the lightning, but it did not take fire. The deck was conſtantly filled with water; and if the wind had changed with that rapidity which I have ſo often experienced in my navigation, we had been loſt, without reſource; happily, however, it continued in the ſame quarter.

According to the report, twenty-three ſick; cleared the well from twenty-eight to ſix inches water. Latitude in 36 degrees, 25 minutes; longitude in 3 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind weſt-north-weſt; courſe ſouth-weſt one quarter ſouth.

Tueſday, July 12. Meſſrs. Cruſtiew and Panow repreſented to me, that ſeveral of the aſſociates, having conſumed their proviſions, were in danger of periſhing by hunger, if I did not find ſome expedient. They had already broke forth in exclamations of deſpair: being therefore obliged to apply my thoughts to the invention of an expedient, I fell upon that of boiling ſome ſkins of beavers, and

Digitized by Google

and ſeaſoning them with whale oil. I communicated this idea to my friends, who received it with gratitude. To make a trial, I gave orders to ſcald and clean a ſkin, and then boil it. At ſix, P. M. it was entirely prepared; and when I found that this ragout was capable of preſerving us from dying with hunger, I immediately diſtributed it to the aſſociates. The eagerneſs with which they ſet about preparing their meal, made them forget the danger we were in from the impetuoſity of the wind, and it was not poſſible to employ them in any other ſervice on board; ſo that the whole care of the veſſel fell upon me and the officers. Throughout the night the wind continued with unabated violence, and the ſwell of the ſea began to threaten us with the laſt extreme of danger; when all at once, about four, A. M. its force ſlackened, and I was not a little ſurprized to perceive that the ſea became ſmooth, almoſt immediately. This circumſtance indicated the vicinity of land, but in what direction to ſeek it, was a thing impoſſible to be determined. At day-break my companions thanked me for having employed my thoughts in procuring them ſome nouriſhment; and as there was no other proviſion on board, I cauſed ſome ſkins to be dreſſed for the ſick. Mr. Meder informed me, that ſeveral of the aſſociates had waſhed their ſhoes and half boots, and that, at the inſtant he was ſpeaking, there were more than twenty pair in the pot. In fact, this report was confirmed; and I could only groan at the ſcene of miſery, which, in the ſpace of twenty-four hours, could not but be greatly encreaſed by the want of water.

According to the report, twenty-nine ſick; the pump clear, as uſual. Latitude in 35 degrees, 4 minutes; lon-

Digitized by Google

gitude in 1 degree, 0 minutes. Wind weſt-north-weſt; courſe ſouth-weſt one quarter ſouth.

Wedneſday, July 13. The weather clearing up gradually, with ſome intervals of ſun-ſhine, I gave orders to open the hatches, to air the veſſel; after which we cleared the wreck of the mizen maſt, and bent another mizen ſtay ſail, which had been carried away. To replace the mizen maſt, I made uſe of a main topmaſt, which I had taken in exchange at Kamchatka; and, notwithſtanding our weakneſs, we ſucceeded in getting it ſtepped before dark. During the time we were employed in this work, the women were buſied in unpacking the ſkins. They conſiſted of ſeven hundred and eighty-two beavers, two hundred and ſixty-eight foxes, and one thouſand nine hundred ſables, all which were diſtributed to the company. At day-break we diſcovered a great quantity of floating weeds, and ſaw birds which reſembled eagles. This ſight renewed in my mind that glimpſe of hope, which alone enables us to ſurmount obſtacles that appear invincible. About noon we obſerved the clouds become black to the ſouthward, and we waited with impatience for a ſquall, to ſupply us with ſome proviſion of water. Our expectation, however, was deceived, for the wind remained ſteady.

According to the report, twenty ſick; the pump clear as uſual. Latitude in 33 degrees, 50 minutes; longitude in 358 degrees, 56 minutes. Wind weſt-north-weſt; courſe ſouth-weſt.

Thurſday, July 14. Clear hot weather; a ſtrong and ſteady breeze, with a following ſwell. Mr. Meder informed me, that there were no more than fifty pints of water on board, and that he thought it proper to keep at leaſt half

Digitized by Google

for the ſick. I gave him orders accordingly, to reſerve half, and the reſt was diſtributed among the aſſociates at day-break. For my own part, having no longer any expectation of means to remedy the want of water, I reſigned myſelf to that fate, which overwhelmed me by ſuch dreadful trials, and being no longer able to find any ground for hope, I paſſed the night in reſpiring the cool air. The break of day at laſt appeared, and the freſhneſs of the morning revived me a little. At ſeven I aſſiſted in the diſtribution of the water. My companions received it with avidity, and ſeveral among them drank it off at the inſtant; others, more careful, were attentive in preſerving it. After the diſtribution, as I concluded it to be impoſſible that I ſhould much longer ſupport life, and finding myſelf oppreſſed with weakneſs, occaſioned by hunger, I preſented my chart to the company, and pointed out to them, that we were ſtill two hundred and forty, or perhaps three hundred leagues from the coaſt of Japan; that I had no knowledge of any iſland near us, and that conſequently ſix or ſeven days would be required to reach it, even with a favourable wind, of which there was no probable appearance; and as I did not apprehend that I could ſupport life for ſuch a length of time, in our preſent circumſtances, I thought it proper to point out to them, the courſe they might hold, in caſe they ſhould be ſo happy as to ſurvive. This natural confidence with which I opened my ſentiments to them, affected them ſtrongly, and it was not without the moſt forcible emotions, that I beheld them all eager to offer me a part of their lots. On this occaſion, Sudiakow declared, that he ſtill had three ſalt fiſh in his cheſt, which he offered me, as well as a pitcher of water,

Digitized by Google

which he had ſaved out of his own allowance. This noble action was univerſally applauded, and he received the ſirname of Generous, which the company gave him. Being forced to accept this aſſiſtance, I conſented, on condition of his ſharing it with me. When I took the meridian altitude, the company requeſted me to direct my courſe to Japan.

According to the report, eighteen ſick; the pump clear, as uſual. Latitude in 32 degrees, 36 minutes; longitude in 357 degrees, 15 minutes. Wind from north-weſt to north-north-weſt; courſe ſouth-ſouth-weſt.

Friday, July 15. Fine weather, with the ſun ſhining ſtrongly; a current ſetting to the weſtward. Saw a number of birds, among which we ſuppoſed ſome to be land birds, which gave new hopes to the company. Several on board having drank the ſea water, were ſeized with a violent vomiting. Mr. Meder attempted to correct the ſea water, by infuſing tea in it; but this precaution did not deprive it of its bitterneſs. I made a trial of it myſelf.

At ſun-ſet, two of the company from the maſt-head cried out land. Every one immediately hurried aloft; but the ſun being ſet, they could ſee nothing. The men who thought they ſaw the land, informed me, that it lay a little to the ſouthward of weſt; I therefore ſet all the ſails, and ordered a ſtrong night watch; but having ſailed from the time they thought they ſaw the land, till four in the morning, over a ſpace of twenty-four leagues and three quarters, they were convinced that they had taken the clouds for the land. At five, A. M. nothing was ſeen from the maſt-head but very thick clouds before us. At this time my dog, Neſtor, ſtood on the forecaſtle, continually barking, and

Digitized by Google

and ſnuffing up the air. Mr. Meder obſerving this circumſtance, ran to me, and aſſured me, that he no longer doubted of the vicinity of the land, as he knew it to be uſual for dogs to ſmell it. Mr. Kuzneczow himſelf went to the top maſt-head, ſwearing that he would not come down until he ſaw the land. At eight he called out land, but a moment after, cried, that he had miſtaken clouds for the land. At nine, Saccharie, my American, looking out a-head with the reſt, called out, Alakſina, Alakſina, and pulled me towards the forecaſtle, ſaying in Ruſſian, of which he had learnt ſome few words, "Come along." When I came on the forecaſtle, he ſhewed me the place with his finger, continually repeating Alakſina, though none of us could diſcover any thing. I called out to Mr. Kuzneczow, informing him, that the American ſaw land; but Kuzneczow replied, that he ſaw nothing. I therefore ſent Saccharie to the maſt-head, to ſhew him the place, and ſent up my teleſcope. At half paſt nine, Mr. Kuzneczow at laſt called out land. On his aſſurance, I went up myſelf, and had the pleaſure to ſee, at laſt, the proſpect of our ſufferings being mitigated. At eleven, the land being evident before us, I ſounded, and got ground in twenty-eight fathoms; and after ſailing within a quarter of a league of the coaſt, we anchored in fourteen fathoms.

According to the report, twenty-ſix ſick; the pump clear. Latitude in 32 degrees, 47 minutes; longitude in 355 degrees, 8 minutes. Wind north one quarter weſt; courſe weſt 5 degrees north.

Saturday, July 16. At anchor, near an iſland, at one quarter of a league diſtance, in eighteen fathom water. Wind from north to north-north-weſt. At two, P. M.

Digitized by Google

ſent Mr. Panow and Kuzneczow aſhore, with twelve aſſociates in the canoe, to examine the coaſt, and endeavour to find ſome harbour, in which we might moor in ſafety. I ſent ſeveral caſks likewiſe, that they might bring ſome water. At nine we ſaw three fires on ſhore, which were the ſignal of the diſcovery of an harbour; but the fires appeared to us to be two leagues diſtant to the north-weſt of our anchorage. At eleven the boat returned with four men, and ſome water, which was eagerly conſumed. Sibaew informed me, that Kuzneczow had diſcovered a very commodious bay, on the northern ſide of the iſland, into which fell a rivulet of freſh water; and that he begged I would ſend back the boat, that he might return, at day-break, and conduct the veſſel to her moorings. This happy news was very comfortable to every one on board; but the continuation of his narrative was ſtill more ſatisfactory, when he aſſured me, that there was a quantity of hogs and and goats on the iſland. At this recital every one was deſirous of going on ſhore; and it was with the greateſt difficulty that I could retain a few of them on board to work the ſhip. The aſſociates, attending only to their own wants, ſeized the ſhallop, and departed, to the number of forty-nine. After the departure of the ſhallop, I ſent the ſmall boat likewiſe, armed with ſix men, to obey the orders of Mr. Kuzneczow.

At a quarter paſt five, A. M. weighed, and made ſail under the topſails. At ſix, ſaw the ſmall boat out at ſea, and continued my courſe along the coaſt, north-weſt one quarter north; the proſpect on ſhore was very agreeable. At eight it became calm, and I was obliged to anchor again in twelve fathoms. At the ſame time I gave orders to Mr.

Kuzneczow

Digitized by Google

Kuzneczow to go in ſearch of the ſhallop, that they might return, and tow the veſſel in. At half paſt nine the ſhallop and canoe arrived, and I entered the bay, in which I moored in ſix fathom water, and at the diſtance of ſixty fathoms from the ſhore. One of our cables was faſtened on the ſhore, and the ſheet anchor was down, at the diſtance of one hundred and twenty fathoms to ſeaward.

According to the report, eighteen ſick; the pump clear. Latitude in 32 degrees, 47 minutes; longitude in 355 degrees, eight minutes. Wind north the firſt part, afterwards calm; courſe weſt, 5 degrees north and north-weſt.

Sunday, July 17. Sent the ſick and the women on ſhore, leaving only four men and two officers on board, as a guard. Employed this day in cutting wood, and erecting huts and tents, as well as a ſtorehouſe, to land our whole cargo. Mr. Wynbladth undertook to raiſe a battery, in which he placed two three pounders. The aſſociates, who had gone on ſhore the day before, brought ſeveral pieces of game for the ſick, and a goat; others brought different fruits and plants, of a delicious taſte. I forbad them, however, to eat them raw; but when boiled or roaſted, they proved very good, and wholeſome. The abundance of water, and plenty of proviſions, ſoon made the company forget their paſt ſufferings; and their converſation ran entirely on the happy and comfortable ſituation before them. For my part, I rejoiced at the event, which had delivered me from the horrors of a cruel death, and the reproaches of my companions.

The night was fine, but the beauty of the ſky did not prevent me from employing the whole in ſleep; for my frame, exhauſted with fatigue and watching, had need of reſt.

Digitized by Google

reſt. At day-break, I aſſembled the whole company, to appoint the different ſervices. Some received orders to guard the veſſel; others were employed in the fiſhery, in the chace, or in ſetting up the water butts; repairing the ſails, &c. After this diſtribution of their labours, I declared my intention, that, as ſoon as we had made up our proviſions, I would ſet ſail for Manilla, on the Phillipine iſlands, from whence we might moſt eaſily return into Europe. My declaration was received with great coolneſs, and the company replied, that they had need of repoſe, in the firſt place; and afterwards, they would conſider what ſteps were the beſt to be taken.

According to the report, eighteen ſick.

Monday, July 18. On ſhore, on the iſland of Liquor; a name which my companions gave to this iſland, on account of the excellent water they found here. At two, P. M. Loginow, who had been ſent to diſcover the interior part of the iſland, with four aſſociates, returned, and brought pine apples and bananas, in great quantities, with ſeveral bundles of wood, with which, he aſſured me, the iſland abounded. But that which excited the greateſt aſtoniſhment, was ſome pieces of rock cryſtals, and ſtones, containing metallic particles, which were very heavy, and ſhone like gold. The ſight of the cryſtal inflamed the imagination of my aſſociates: they began to reaſon upon the circumſtances, and concluded, that as the ſurface of the earth produced cryſtal, it doubtleſs contained diamonds at a greater depth. The mineral they had found, could be nothing, in their opinion, but gold. It was to no purpoſe that I repreſented, that appearances were often fallacious; that rock cryſtal would not change into diamonds;

Digitized by Google

monds; and that the pretended ore of gold, might be nothing more than marcaſite. My repreſentations were not attended to; the illuſion had taken too ſtrong hold of their minds, to be diſſipated in as ſhort a time as it was formed; and the vivacity with which the aſſociates had made their reſolutions, gave me reaſon to apprehend ſerious conſequences. Five of them preſented themſelves to declare, that the aſſociates, being worn out with the fatigue and ſufferings they had experienced during their voyage, had determined to fix their abode upon the iſland for ſome months; and that with ſo much the greater readineſs, as they found ſufficient abundance of proviſions; and that, during this whole time, they meant to employ themſelves in digging into the earth, to collect a quantity of ore, and to blow up the rocks, with a view of coming at the baſis of the cryſtal, that they might collect a quantity of gold and diamonds, which would be uſeful to them on their return to Europe. They accompanied this declaration with oaths, that they were determined not to change their reſolution; and they demanded, that I would give them my promiſe to conform to their will; but as I did not think proper to give my word immediately, I diſmiſſed them with a promiſe, that I would conſider of their propoſitions, and give them my final anſwer the next morning.

After their departure, I aſſembled my friends, to deliberate upon the ſteps proper to be taken. They adviſed me to ſubmit to the pleaſure of the company, as the law of the ſtrongeſt; and repreſented to me, that the aſſociates, being on ſhore, would liſten to no reaſon: and as I was well acquainted with their obſtinacy, I had every reaſon to expect they would come to extremities. Their advice gave

Digitized by Google

gave me no conſolation; for, by yielding to the will of the company, I had nothing to expect but intrigues and cabals, the iſſue of which might be of fatal conſequences to my party. I therefore paſſed the night in contriving projects to bring them to their ſenſes.

At day-break I found my tent ſurrounded with the aſſociates, who demanded my reſolution. My friends kept at a diſtance, to aſſiſt me in caſe of need. In this ſituation, I thought it beſt to repreſent to them, that I had determined to have the ore examined, to be convinced whether it contained gold or not; for I thought it would be very abſurd to give ourſelves the trouble of collecting ſtones, without deriving any advantage from them. I therefore requeſted my companions to nominate two amongſt themſelves, who underſtood metallurgy, to make the aſſay; and at the ſame time declared to them, that in caſe the ore turned out productive, I would immediately determine to remain upon the iſland, as long as they thought proper: but that the diſcovery of the cryſtal would avail us nothing, as I was well aſſured that cryſtal was never found in diamond mines. The aſſociates were ſo firmly perſuaded that the ore could be nothing elſe but gold, that they were ſatisfied with my anſwer; and deputed Andreanow and Ribnikow, two goldſmiths, to make the aſſay. It was with the greateſt ſatisfaction that I gained ſo far on the minds of ſuch a number of headſtrong people. My friends complimented me upon my ſucceſs; and Mr. Panow aſſured me, that he would do every thing in his power to deſtroy the cabal, which he ſuppoſed to be the work of Mr. Stephanow.

According to the report, fourteen ſick.

Digitized by Google

Tueſday, July 19. Fine calm weather, but exceſſively hot. This day a large quantity of fiſh was brought, half of which I cauſed to be dried, for our proviſion, and the other half was diſtributed among the company. Mr. Baturin informing me, that our ſtock of ſalt was conſiderably diminiſhed, propoſed to make a boiling; I gave him three Kamchadales to aſſiſt him. About two I made an excurſion into the country, in company with Mr. Panow and Mr. Wynbladth: we found it very agreeable, and abounding with cocoa nuts, orange and banana trees, with a certain fruit which reſembled pears, but as they were too acid, we did not eat them. On one of the ſmall hills, we found ſeveral pieces of cryſtal, and of cinnabar; but the moſt agreeable diſcovery we made, conſiſted in the ſight of about fifty hogs. We followed them, with a view of killing ſome; when the young pilot, Potoſſiow, came to inform me, that Mr. Stephanow had aſſembled a party of the aſſociates, to whom he had ſpoken with emphaſis, and that they had all retired into the wood, to make an oath. Upon this information, we returned towards our camp, where we arrived at the beginning of the night, which was one of the moſt beautiful I ever beheld: the ſky was without a cloud, and the ſtars ſhone with a brilliancy and luſtre that was delightful to behold. I firſt directed my ſteps towards the tent of Mr. Cruſtiew, who was ſuprized to hear the relation of my diſcovery; and aſſured me, that throughout the whole day, he had not quitted Stephanow, except for half an hour, which appeared to him to be too ſhort a time to form a confederacy: but Mr. Panow aſſured him that Mr. Stephanow was capable of any thing; and that he believed him to be guilty. The former behaviour of the man, led me to adopt

Digitized by Google

the opinion of Mr. Panow; and I thought proper to take meaſures to prevent a plot. With this intention, I aſſembled thoſe friends to whom I could ſpeak with confidence; their number amounted to thirty-ſix perſons. I immediately detached ſix on board, to relieve thoſe in the veſſel; twelve others were diſpoſed to guard our ſmall pieces on ſhore, and the reſt remained under arms, to keep a regular guard, without affording any cauſe of ſuſpicion. Things being thus diſpoſed, I waited for day-break. At ſeven in the morning, the hunters were the firſt who preſented themſelves, to inform me that they had been unſucceſsful, and had ſeen nothing; though I was well aſſured that they had been with Stephanow, inſtead of following the chace. I concealed my diſpleaſure; but could hold no longer, when I heard that all thoſe whom I had appointed to repair our caſks and ſails, had refuſed to continue their work. I therefore gave orders for a general meeting to be held at noon.

According to the report, eight ſick.

Wedneſday, July 20. Weather as yeſterday. The company being aſſembled, I explained our ſituation, in ſtrong terms; and the pains which I had conſtantly taken to ſatisfy the deſires of the company. I complained of their ingratitude towards me, which was ſhewn in a new mutiny. I took notice of the obſtinacy of the people not to work, which would lead us to the moſt dreadful neceſſity; and I demanded the reaſons which had led them to a reſolution ſo unworthy of men of ſpirit and honour. Several of the aſſociates pointed out Mr. Stephanow, and cried out, "Speak, "and we will ſupport you." Upon this ſignal the wretch ſpoke, by loading me with invectives, and threatening both

Digitized by Google

both myſelf and Mr. Panow with ſpeedy death. I interrupted him in his imprecations, and made a ſpeech, in which I thanked the aſſociates for having hitherto ſhared my labours. I declared that I had preſerved the command over them for no other reaſon, than to preſerve their lives, in a voyage of great danger and difficulty; but that, at preſent, as the greateſt dangers were paſt, I ſhould entirely ſurrender the command; and that they had nothing to do, but chuſe a chief. With reſpect to myſelf, I informed them, that as I had nothing more to hope from men ſo deſtitute of honour and probity, I was determined to quit them, and live rather with the wild beaſts, than among a ſet of ungrateful men, whoſe future conduct could not fail to be made up of crimes and wickedneſs. After this diſcourſe, I retired; ſaying, "Let thoſe who have affection "and attachment follow me." I was followed by thoſe whoſe attachment I knew, and by twenty-two others, who had appeared, till then, doubtful. On my return into my tent, I found myſelf with fifty-two companions, beſides ſix on board. I had nothing, therefore, to fear from the conſpirators, and employed the night in deliberating what was beſt to be done. At day-break, I was informed of the arrival of deputies from Stephanow's party; who informed me, that having made themſelves maſter of the veſſel, they had it in their power to abandon me; but that their deſigns were more noble, as they aſſured me, that they would acknowledge me for their chief and king, provided I would promiſe to remain upon the iſland with them; and that, to convince me that they were not come to impoſe upon me, three of their party would remain with me; and the company, as ſoon as they ſhould be informed of my reſolution,

Digitized by Google

would put Mr. Stephanow into my hands, that I might have nothing to fear on his part. The ſurprize of the veſſel, filled me with conſternation; but I concealed it as well as I could. My diſgrace appeared inevitable; for what could I do upon a deſert iſland without a veſſel? For this reaſon, in order to recover ſome influence over theſe headſtrong people, I invited them to a meeting, at which I promiſed to diſcover the ſentiments of my mind. The company immediately aſſembled, excepting Mr. Stephanow with ten aſſociates, who were on board. I then repreſented to them, that no one among them could be more truly deſirous of fixing his reſidence on this happy iſland, than myſelf, but that various reflections prevented me from adopting this reſolution; and in order to ſhew them that they were well-founded, I declared to them, that our company conſiſting of a great number of men, and only eight women, the diſproportion would hinder our union; and that, in fact, it was merely this want of women which had prevented me from making the propoſal to them of fixing our reſidence upon the iſland: But at length, as I ſaw they had taken their reſolution, I would acquieſce in their wiſhes, upon one ſingle condition. Hereupon, they all cried out, "Hear, hear." I then declared, that my intention was to ſail for Japan, and there make a deſcent near a town, from which we would carry off as many women as we could ſeize, together with cattle and grain. I concluded, by proteſting, that if they would engage to ſecond me in this project, I would promiſe to ſettle with them upon the iſland, to which we might eaſily return, and that one month would be ſufficient for carrying the project into execution. I had ſcarcely finiſhed my declaration, before they all exclaimed,

Digitized by Google

"Long live our Chief, long live our General;" and they came one after the other to kiſs my hand.

Finding them brought to this point of ſubmiſſion, I required them to go on board, and bring Stephanow on ſhore; for I declared my apprehenſion, leſt that madman might end his exploits by ſetting fire to the veſſel. This fear took ſuch inſtantaneous hold of their minds, that they ran with the greateſt precipitation to the landing-place. Stephanow ſeeing his party run, ſuppoſed them to be attacked by my people, and came on ſhore to join them; but he was ſtrangely ſurprized, when his own party ſeized him, and brought him to me, where I confined him under the guard of Mr. Sibaew.

According to the report, four ſick, and one priſoner.

Thurſday, July 21. A light breeze from the eaſtward, and fine weather. I aſſembled the company, to renew their oath of fidelity and obedience towards me; at the ſame time that I made oath, that, after having carried our enterprize upon Japan into execution, I would return to the iſland of Liquor, to make the ſettlement of our company. After this ceremony, I gave orders for continuing the works, the chace, fiſhery, and collecting of fruits and vegetables, for our voyage. With regard to Mr. Stephanow, I releaſed him from confinement, on condition that he ſhould publickly beg pardon of all the company; but as it was no longer convenient that I ſhould entruſt him with any part of the ſervice, I contrived that the company ſhould declare him incapable of holding any employ. This unhappy man requeſted me to leave him upon the iſland, but I refuſed to comply with the ſuggeſtions of his deſpair, by repreſenting to him, that I hoped to mitigate his diſ-

grace,

Digitized by Google

grace, when we ſhould return again to the iſland, for I durſt not acquaint him with my real intentions. My clemency aſtoniſhed him, and he acknowledged himſelf guilty, &c. The aſſociates being delighted with the project of forming a new colony, which might hereafter become an empire, worked all night, and, as Mr. Panow informed me, entirely neglected the aſſay of the ore, with the firm intention of performing that part of their ſcheme upon their return. The night was clear and freſh, and the whole company in good health. The fiſh we caught were very good, and wholeſome, and our meals were diverſified with excellent fruits and game. Mr. Panow, having taken with him ſix good markſmen, went out to ſhoot hogs. At day-break I found the aſſociates ſtill at work; and our buſineſs went on with ſpirit.

At nine, I gave orders to carry all our proviſions on board, and eighteen caſks, which had been ſet up and filled with water. Mr. Baturin having taken an account of our proviſions, ſhewed that we were very well ſtored for one month. This day I gave orders to erect a croſs, with the following inſcription:—

"In the year 1771, on the 16th of July, the corvette "St. Peter and St. Paul, anchored in the harbour of this "iſland, commanded by Maurice Auguſte de Benyowſzky, "Magnate of Hungary and Poland, General of the Re-"publick of Poland; made priſoner of war by the Ruſſians, "and exiled, by order of the Czarina, to Kamchatka, from "whence he had the good fortune to make his eſcape, by "the force of his courage. This iſland is not inhabited: "it abounds with different wild fowl; the ſea affords excel-"lent fiſh, and its fruits and water are wholeſome. It is

ſituated

Digitized by Google

" ſituated in 32 degrees, 47 minutes latitude, and 355 de-
" grees, 8 minutes longitude, from Bolſha, in Kam-
" chatka."

According to the report, one ſick.

Friday, July 22. Mr. Panow, on his return from the chace, brought us two boars, and ſeveral pintado birds. We ſalted the fleſh, and carried it on board. At four, our effects being on board, and the wind freſhening from the eaſtward, I determined to raiſe our camp, and give orders for our embarkation: at nine in the evening all the people were on board; we were employed till eleven in unmooring, and exactly at midnight I ſet ſail, the weather being very clear, and the wind blowing freſh from the eaſtward. We got out of the harbour with difficulty; but when once we had doubled the point, we had a calm ſea, and as fine a wind as we could wiſh, with which we ſailed pleaſantly along. Finding myſelf at length under ſail, and having nothing more to fear, I had a quiet ſleep. At day-break the land was out of ſight, and gaiety prevailed among the aſſociates, who did not ſeem diſpoſed to make any complaints on the want of proviſions or water.

According to the report, one ſick. Latitude in 32 degrees, 56 minutes north; longitude in 353 degrees, 57 minutes. Wind eaſt; no current; courſe weſt 5 degrees north.

Saturday, July 23. Fine hot weather, with a freſh breeze from eaſt-north-eaſt, and a long ſwell; the ſea yellowiſh, and entirely changed in colour, which induced me to ſound, but we found no bottom. At five, ſaw a double rainbow. The aſſociates complaining of exceſſive thirſt, I cauſed them to put nitre in their drink, which they had compoſed of fruits boiled in water.

Digitized by Google

According to the report, one ſick; the pump cleared. Latitude in 33 degrees, 13 minutes north; longitude in 352 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind eaſt-north-eaſt; current from the ſouthward; courſe weſt-north-weſt 5 degrees weſt.

Sunday, July 24. Exceſſive hot weather, inclined to ſqually, the wind becoming irregular, and by ſudden puffs changing from eaſt to north; a ſwell from north-weſt. At ſix, ſaw land, which we perceived to be an iſland, and ſailed round it, to the northward. In the night the wind fixed at the north-eaſt, and continued freſh. This day, perceiving that all our rigging was ſlack, I cauſed it to be ſet up.

According to the report, all well; the pump clear. Latitude in 33 degrees, 27 minutes north; longitude in 349 degrees, 34 minutes. Wind north-eaſt; current from ſouth to north; courſe weſt one quarter north.

Monday, July 25. The heat increaſing, and the wind continuing with the ſame force. Saw a number of black ſerpents along-ſide. At four, P. M. ſaw ſeveral buſhes floating along-ſide, ſeveral of which we hooked in; a piece of ſilk was faſtened to one of them. This diſcovery convinced me that we were near Japan; but as I found no bottom, I inferred that we were in the Archipelago of iſlands, which ſurrounds Japan. I therefore kept a good look out in the night; luckily, however, we met with no obſtacle. At day-break, the men at the maſt-head called out land, but we could not perceive it from the deck till between nine and ten; and afterwards, as our courſe led us right towards it, we ſaw it very diſtinctly at noon,

According

Digitized by Google

According to the report, all well; the pump clear. Latitude in 33 degrees, 28 minutes north; longitude 347 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind east-north-east; current south; course west.

Tuesday, July 26th. Very fine weather, with a hot sun. Made sail for the north cape of the island, which we soon passed. The associates requested me to permit them to land, the first opportunity, in order to examine those islands, which might probably be inhabited. I promised to satisfy their desire, and that with so much the more readiness, as it was of essential consequence to examine the neighbouring coasts, of which I had no positive chart with me, except a few positions of head-lands, which I procured out of different collections, at Kamchatka. At half past three, P. M. Mr. Kuzneczow, being at the mast-head, called out a sail, and soon after four; and, in a short time, he declared that a great number were in sight. I immediately went aloft, with a perspective glass, and saw that it was a fleet; among which I perceived three large vessels, and that the whole were standing to the north-west. The approach of night prevented my reaching this fleet. We handed the lower sails, to be in readiness to come to; and in the night I advanced, with the lead constantly out; but at three, A. M. we set all our sails, and at six low land appeared in sight, a-head. At nine, being at the distance of no more than two leagues, I stood off and on, and sent the small boat, with Mr. Kuzneczow and six associates, to make discoveries upon the island.

According to the report, all in good health; the ship near an island. Latitude in 33 degrees, 41 minutes; longitude 345 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind north-

Digitized by Google

east; current from the ſouthward; courſe weſt one quarter north.

Wedneſday, July 27. Upon approaching the iſland, the current drove us to the weſtward, near ſeven leagues in five hours. I fired ſeveral guns, as a ſignal for the ſmall boat to return, but not ſeeing her, I came to anchor, at three, P. M. in forty-eight fathoms. The boat did not return till eight. Mr. Kuzneczow informed me, that the iſland was not inhabited, but that he had found ſeveral huts, built of planks, round which he ſaw a quantity of fiſh bones, whence he inferred that the Japaneſe frequented this iſland only for the purpoſe of fiſhing. The night being clear and ſtar-light, weighed anchor preciſely at midnight, with a light breeze, and ſmooth water. At four A. M. ſaw an iſland on the larboard hand, and at ſix another land on the ſtarboard. I directed my courſe through the channel, and about eleven was in the midſt of the channel. At noon I cauſed a ſketch * to be taken of the northern extremity of the iſland, which bore ſouth-eaſt, and the land on the ſtarboard, which bore from north to north-weſt.

According to the report, all well; the ſhip in good condition. Latitude in 33 degrees, 44 minutes north; longitude in 343 degrees, 12 minutes. Wind north-eaſt one quarter eaſt; current from the ſouth, courſe weſt by north; depth of water thirty-eight fathoms.

Thurſday, July 28. Very fine weather, but hot; an irregular ſea, with a ſtrong current from ſouth-eaſt to north-weſt. At one, P. M. ſaw another land to the ſouth-

* Theſe have not come to the hand of the editor.

weſt,

Digitized by Google

weſt, and I reſolved to continue my courſe through the channel, with the boat a-head, and the lead conſtantly going. At five, ſaw three veſſels, at the diſtance of four leagues a-head, ſtanding acroſs the ſtreights, from ſouth to north. In the night we ſaw fires on all the coaſts. A. M. made ſail, and at day-break we entered a bay; and as the lead ſhewed that the bottom was regular, I ſtood in for the ſhore, with ſo much the greater ſafety, as the current was againſt us. At eight our ſoundings were ſixteen fathoms, coral rock, and ſand. Our veſſel appeared to be in the midſt of a foreſt, for there were near one thouſand veſſels around us, who were buſied in the fiſhery, without giving themſelves any trouble at ſight of us. Several of them paſſing near us, cried out, *Fiaſſi to Holland*, *Fiaſſi to Sindzi*; and the others cried out, *Namandabuz*. At eleven, a veſſel, very neatly built, approached and hailed us: her maſts were ornamented with ſtreamers, and ſeveral colours, upon which I perceived ſome inſcriptions; but as we were at a loſs to reply to the captain in the Japaneſe language, he at laſt ſent us his yawl, with cordage, and by the geſticulations of his ſailors, we comprehended that he meant to aſſiſt in towing us. I immediately paſſed the ends of two hawſers on board the yawl which carried them on board their own veſſel; they immediately lowered their ſails, and by means of upwards of eighty rowers, they towed us along with incredible ſwiftneſs. When we came near the ſhore, I anchored in twelve fathoms, at the ſame time caſting off the hawſers, which were brought back by the Japaneſe yawl, none of whoſe people would conſent to come on board; and when I was deſirous of making them ſome return, they refuſed, at the ſame time pointing to their

Digitized by Google

necks, doubtleſs by way of letting me know that they durſt not accept any thing, under pain of death.

According to the report, all well; at anchor in a bay at Japan. By eſtimate, latitude in 33 degrees, 56 minutes north; longitude in 342 degrees, 20 minutes. Wind north-eaſt one quarter eaſt; no current; at anchor in twelve fathoms; off ſhore three quarters of a league.

Friday, July 29. In a bay on the coaſt of Japan; fine weather, but exceſſive hot. Wind variable from north-eaſt to ſouth-eaſt, and a ſtrong tide. Gave orders for immediately preparing our arms for ſervice, and loading our cannon with grape-ſhot, to be ready in caſe we ſhould be attacked, as my companions pretended. At two, P. M. ordered Meſſrs. Wynbladth and Kuzneczow on ſhore, with twelve armed men. Mr. Wynbladth was charged with a letter, written in Dutch, containing a declaration reſpecting my voyage, and a requeſt for a ſupply of proviſions. With the letter I ſent three beaver ſkins, and ſix martens, as a preſent to the chief of the place; but as I did not think proper to expoſe my people to the mercy of the inhabitants, I weighed, and towed the veſſel, by means of the ſhallop, to the diſtance of two hundred fathoms from the ſhore, where I anchored in five and one-half fathoms, fine ſand. Soon after we ſaw three ſmall boats row towards ours, and afterwards followed them on ſhore. The interpoſition of a rock, prevented us from ſeeing their landing, which gave me great uneaſineſs. My uneaſineſs increaſed every hour, as I ſaw no one return till nine at night, when the centinel called out, that he obſerved three fires approaching the veſſel. Having ſeen the appearance myſelf, I armed the ſhallop with ſixteen men, and ſent them

Digitized by Google

them upon diſcovery. They ſoon returned, and Mr. Panow, who was commanding officer, called out, that our boat was on its return, attended by two boats of the country, and that our people appeared joyful. Soon after, we heard Mr. Kuzneczow, who called out to us to throw them three ropes; which being immediately done, Mr. Wynbladth came on board, with a Japaneſe, very well cloathed, and armed with a ſabre. He came on board with confidence, and made a long harangue, every word of which was perfectly unintelligible to me. In order, however, that I might comprehend ſome part of it, I ſent for Bocſarew, who had learned this language during the ſpace of three years, at Irkuczk, in Siberia, from a Japaneſe, who had eſcaped ſhipwreck at Kamchatka, and after being taught the Ruſſian language, at Moſcow, was maintained by the ſenate to teach Japaneſe to the Siberians. Unfortunately it turned out that Bocſarew had forgotten moſt part, and remembered only a few compliments, with which he regaled the Japaneſe. But as I was anxious to know the report of Meſſrs. Wynbladth and Kuzneczow, I conſigned the Japaneſe to Meſſrs. Panow and Bocſarew, who introduced him into my cabbin. The following was the report of Mr. Wynbladth :—

" As ſoon as we were joined by the Japaneſe boats, " who came to meet us, they made a ſign by placing " each his left hand on his breaſt; we did the ſame; and " after this ceremony, the Japaneſe made a thouſand other " ſigns, none of which we underſtood, excepting that they " wiſhed us to go on ſhore. I went on ſhore, with eight " aſſociates, leaving four in the boat, to keep her afloat. We " there found two hundred men on horſe-back, and an equal " number

Digitized by Google

" number on foot, armed with bows and lances, who like-
" wiſe ſaluted us politely; but perceiving that we were
" deſirous of repairing to the town or village we ſaw before
" us, they offered us horſes; we mounted, and were thus
" conducted, in ceremony, to a caſtle at the extremity of
" a village, which is about one quarter of a league diſtant
" from the landing place. Here we diſmounted, and were
" introduced into the court, in which we were very polite-
" ly received by a perſon of diſtinction, who conducted us
" into an extenſive hall, built on columns. Here we
" found another great man, ſeated on a ſopha, who ſaid to
" us, *Fiaſſi guzarimas*, which we did not underſtand, and
" therefore we only ſaluted him, and made a ſign that we
" did not comprehend him. The ſecond words he ſpoke
" were, *To Golland*, which I underſtood, and made a ſign
" that we were not Hollanders. Afterwards he ſaid, *To*
" *Sindzi*, to which, upon my making a ſign that I did
" not underſtand him, he continued his queſtions, *To Pi-*
" *lipine*, *To Braki*, *To Maſui*, *To Tunguſi*; and as I had
" always anſwered in the negative, he beat a drum which
" was near him. Upon this ſignal ſeveral ſervants entered,
" to whom he gave orders, and immediately afterwards
" they returned with books and rolls of papers; he unrol-
" led them, one after the other, and having at laſt found
" what he wanted, he made ſigns for me to approach,
" which I did. He then ſhewed me a chart, in which I
" diſtinguiſhed Japan, China, the Philipine Iſlands, the
" Indies, and a tract of unknown land, nearly occupying
" the ſpace and poſition of Europe. He took my finger,
" and directed me to place it on the map. I comprehended
" that he ſought for the country from which we came. I

ſhewed

Digitized by Google

" ſhewed him Europe, which aſtoniſhed him very much. " He ſhewed his ſurprize, by crying out, *Namandabez* " ſeveral times; and afterwards, as he ſeemed to doubt " what he had learned, I availed myſelf of the aſſiſtance of the " chart, and made ſigns to inform him, that the duration " of our voyage, and the hard weather we had experienced, " had exhauſted us, and that we were in want of proviſions. " He ſeemed to comprehend me, and made a ſign, by " pointing to his mouth and his belly; after which he " called his ſervants, and ſpoke with them a conſiderable " time. For my part, being deſirous of haſtening my re- " turn, I preſented to him the beaver ſkins, and the mar- " tens, making a ſign that they came from you, and that " I was only the bearer, at the ſame time that I preſented " the letter, which he accepted, but he would not receive " the preſents; and as I recollected that the Japaneſe in " the boats had refuſed our offers, by making the ſign of " pointing to their necks, I imitated them. This great " man then conducted me into a neighbouring chamber, " where I found a woman, to whom I gave the preſent, and " ſhe gave me a baſket filled with flowers, which I have " brought with me.

" After coming out of this chamber, we found a gen- " tleman in the hall, to whom the chief of the caſtle like- " wiſe ſpoke a long time, and then diſmiſſed us. This " gentleman became our conductor, and led us back, with " the ſame eſcort, to the landing place, where we found " two boats filled with proviſions, which we have brought " on board. The gentleman came in our boat, and is the " ſame who is now on board."

Digitized by Google

After having heard this account, I entered into my cabin, to ſhew civilities to the Japaneſe officer, and to gain his favour, I preſented him with two pair of ſables. The preſent appeared to him to be conſiderable, for he made us underſtand that he ſhould be contented with one; but, at laſt, finding himſelf preſſed to accept the whole, he ſhewed by ſigns, that it was of conſequence, that the preſent ſhould be kept a ſecret, and he concealed the ſkins, by carefully wrapping them up.

When he came again upon deck, he gave orders for unloading the boats, which was done in a moment, after which he took his leave, and would not permit us to make the ſmalleſt preſent to the boatmen.

The proviſions received on board, conſiſted of twenty-five ſacks of rice, four pots of ſoft ſugar, four jars of tea, one jar of tobacco very finely cut, eight hogs, ſixteen jars of preſerved fruits, a quantity of onions, oranges, lemons, pine-aples, and other fruits, two caſks of ſalt fiſh, ſix caſks of a very agreeable kind of wine, and about fifty fowls; but that which afforded the greateſt pleaſure to my companions, was the ſight of three barrels of very ſtrong ſpirits.

Day break ſurprized us in our labour of hoiſting theſe good things on board. The wind, during the whole night, blew from the ſouth, and in the morning, we had a ſlight breeze from the northward, which, however, did not laſt above half an hour. At ſix I ſaw a boat arrive, called, in the language of the country, periaqua, with three men. They came along ſide, and put a young man on board, who was very handſomely cloathed, and, by his geſtures, appeared deſirous of converſing with me; but as it was impoſſible

Digitized by Google

impoſſible for me to comprehend him, I cauſed Bocſarew to be awakened, who, after many explanations, informed me, that the Japaneſe came to acquaint me, that a great number of people were deſirous of ſeeing the veſſel, but that they were afraid of the cannon, called in Japaneſe tippo. I informed him as well as Bocſarew could, that every one would be welcome, and, in order that he might poſitively underſtand me, I cauſed the tompions to be put into the guns in his ſight, upon which he made an infinity of ſalutations, and at laſt retired. After his departure, I gave orders to waſh and clean the veſſel for the reception of the company who might come, and we had ſcarcely ended this work, when at nine o'clock we ſaw three boats rowing towards us. In each of theſe boats we obſerved a perſon of diſtinction with a paraſol. Mr. Wynbladth informed me, that he had ſeen one of theſe writing with the lord of the caſtle. As ſoon as they came along-ſide, they came on board, and we ſaluted them by repeating the words fiaſſi guzarimaz. Bocſarew being appointed to ſerve as my interpreter, was well cloathed, and followed my inſtructions with wonderful accuracy, for, at every word he ſpoke, he made the moſt profound bows. Indeed, I am of opinion, that his greateſt merit conſiſted in this ceremonial, for it was impoſſible for me to gather any information by virtue of his ſkill in interpreting. But as I clearly underſtood, that the Japaneſe meant to teſtify their friendſhip, I gave myſelf very little concern about the reſt. With a view, therefore, to add ſtrength to their good intentions, I took them aſide, and gave each two marten's ſkins, which they received with infinite joy, and a great many complimentary marks of acknowledgment. This proceeding ſeemed to

Digitized by Google

have done us great ſervice in their opinions. After the preſents were received, they informed me that they were deſirous of ſeeing the veſſel, I, therefore, conducted them myſelf every where. One among them being provided with a pencil and paper, formed different characters, and when he returned upon deck, he examined the cannon, and wrote again upon his paper, no doubt an account of their number; after which he was deſirous of knowing how many we were on board, which he ſoon learned, for I had brought all my people on the quarter-deck. He counted them all, and wrote down their number; but when they perceived that there were women on board, their curioſity was extreme. They behaved with great delicacy, and ſignified by their ſigns, that our female companions muſt have ſuffered much; after which they departed. About eleven, A. M. we received two boats of proviſions, and a portrait, together with twenty-ſix caſks of water and two of ſpirits; the boatmen, as ſoon as their lading was hoiſted out, refuſed to receive any thing from us, and departed. A light breeze from the ſouthward.

According to the report, one ſick. At anchor in the Bay Uſilpatchar.

Saturday, July 30. Though I was extremely deſirous to go on ſhore, my companions would not conſent, but requeſted me to defer my intention, becauſe the good diſpoſition of the natives could not be depended upon. This day the people were employed in ſetting up the rigging. At three, P. M. we ſaw thirty boats rowing towards us with ſtreamers flying, and when they came near, we heard the ſound of different inſtruments and ſinging. All the veſſels ſtopped at the diſtance of half a cable, except three that came alongſide. Out of one of the boats an old man came on board

Digitized by Google

with two boys richly cloathed. The old man preſented a written paper to me, which, however was uſeleſs, as I had no one on board who could read the Japaneſe writing: for this reaſon, I ſent for the Sieur Bocſarew, who, after having cauſed the old man to repeat his words at leaſt twenty times, informed me, that the Ulikamhy, or King, ſent me theſe two youths as hoſtages, in order that I might come to him with confidence. I anſwered, and ſhewed by ſigns, that I was ready to go on ſhore, but that I would not permit the hoſtages to remain on board, becauſe I had the greateſt confidence in their Ulikamhy. I immediately gave orders to man the ſmall boat, and went on board with four aſſociates, the Sieur Bocſarew, and the old man, with the two boys, leaving the command to Mr. Cruſtiew. When we came near the fleet of ſmall boats, all the Japaneſe called out Uli Ulan, and immediately preceded us, and the others followed three and three at an equal diſtance.

As ſoon as we came on ſhore, carpets were ſpread for myſelf and companions to ſit on; immediately after which, tea and preſerved fruits were preſented to me. Litters were then brought, on which we were carried about a quarter of a league, followed by an armed troop, and conducted by thirteen officers. We were ſet down oppoſite a ſpacious garden, at the gate of which ſtood two Japaneſe centinels, who cried out Uli Ulan. As ſoon as we had entered the garden, we were received by two gentlemen richly cloathed, who firſt ſpoke to our old man, and afterwards ſaluted me by three profound inclinations. After this ceremony, they took me by the arms, and conducted me towards a ſmall houſe, built in the middle of the garden. When we came near the houſe, the gentlemen made me underſtand that

Digitized by Google

was in the houſe, where, in fact, we found him in the ſaloon, ſeated on a yellow ſopha. His cloathing was green and blue ſilk, with a yellow girdle. Immediately after I had ſaluted him, a ſopha was likewiſe brought me, of a red colour, upon which I ſat down. Ulikamhy propoſed three queſtions, who I was? whence I came? and for what reaſon I had come to Nipou? I replied, by the aſſiſtance of Bocſarew, that I was a warrior of Europe, arrived at Japan by accident, and the impetuoſity of the weather; but as Ulikamhy could not well comprehend my interpreter, he bethought himſelf of uſing the aſſiſtance of painters, who having taken paper and pencils, painted figures, by which he informed me of the objects he was deſirous of ſpeaking of. The firſt picture which he preſented to me contained my portrait, very little reſembling me, it muſt be confeſſed, but diſtinguiſhable by my cloaths, and that of Ulikamhy, who preſented me a heart. To ſhew that I underſtood the explanation, I preſſed the figure of Ulikamhy to my breaſt, who being very well contented, cauſed me to come near and join hands with him. He then ſpoke a ſhort time to his people, who ſoon after cauſed my four aſſociates to come in, whom I had ſelected expreſsly. Their ſize and tallneſs ſurprized him, and he ordered them to be meaſured, and their portraits to be taken, which was done in an inſtant, for the figures were merely ſketched out. By his geſtures and ſigns, I underſtood that he wiſhed to know why I was ſhorter than my people. In anſwer, I cauſed a low ſtool to be brought to ſupport my right foot, and then he ſaw me in my natural height, which likewiſe was ſome ſurprize to him. It was with much difficulty that I could make him underſtand, that in conſequence of a wound in battle, my right

Digitized by Google

right leg was ſhortened four inches, which cauſed me to lean towards that ſide, and deprived me of ſo much in height. The evening having ſurprized us in the midſt of our diſcourſe, the Ulikamhy propoſed to me to paſs the night with him, and he informed me, that he was deſirous I ſhould ſtay three or four nights together, becauſe a man would ſoon arrive who was able to converſe with me, which I very ardently wiſhed, in order to gather ſome information reſpecting the country.

About nine in the evening, Ulikamhy departed with his attendants, and we were likewiſe conducted to a houſe adjoining to his palace, where we were regaled with tea, rice, dried fiſh, roaſt meat, preſerved fruits, &c. and towards the end, with a very ſweet kind of wine. We made a very bad ſhift to eat with their little ſticks, and the ſervants had a good deal of trouble in teaching us.

After ſupper, cuſhions were laid for us on the carpet, where we paſſed a very good night. At eight in the morning, I received the report from on board, by which I found the Japaneſe had ſupplied us with one hundred ſacks of rice, and twenty hogs, with a great quantity of fruits and dried fiſh, wine, and poultry. This report was brought by a Japaneſe, whom I ſent back with orders to ſet up our water caſks.

About ten, A. M. we were informed, that Ulikamhy was coming. I went out to meet him, and ſaw him accompanied with three Bonzes, who had very large chaplets at their girdles. One of them ſaluted me in very good Dutch. The King came to me, gave me his hand, and made ſigns for me to ſpeak with the Bonze newly arrived. I complimented him on his ſpeaking a foreign language ſo well, and he politely

Digitized by Google

politely thanked me, by aſſuring me, that he ſhould be happy to do me any ſervice. This Bonze informed me that he was born at Touza, but that his parents, having been obliged to live at Ximo, he had had an opportunity of learning the Dutch language at Nangaſaki, and that he had become a Bonze, to deliver himſelf from the yoke of the ſecular power. With regard to Ulikamhy, he informed me, that he was King of the province, and had married one of the daughters of the Emperor; that he was one of the moſt learned men in the country, being acquainted with aſtronomy in the higheſt degree, and that his ſoul was endued with celeſtial qualities, having never done harm to any one; that he was adored in his own province, and deſired in all the others. He then requeſted I would inform him who I was, and how I came to Japan? I gave him a deſcription of my country, and of Europe in general, which, he ſaid, he had heard ſome accounts of. I informed him, that having fell in battle, I was taken priſoner by the Ruſſians, who had violated the common law of nations, by ſending me into exile at Kamchatka, from whence I had delivered myſelf with courage, to return to my own country, but that contrary winds having obliged me to touch at Japan, I had come thither with fear, on account of the relations the Hollanders had wickedly publiſhed, that the Japaneſe put the Chriſtians to death. Upon theſe laſt words, he replied, that it was true, that there was a decree of the Emperor not to admit any Spaniſh or Portugueſe Chriſtian into the country, but that the decree did not affect the Chriſtians of other nations, who had never done harm to the empire. He was going on with his diſcourſe, when Ulikamhy ſent for us: we therefore went to him at his palace in the garden, where we were regaled with fruits and tea.

The

Digitized by Google

The Bonze related to Ulikamhy, what he had learned from me, upon which he propoſed ſeveral queſtions concerning the manner of fighting in Europe. He condoled with me upon my fate, and made me an offer to remain at Japan, where he promiſed he would procure from the Emperor an important command in his armies. I thanked him for his goodneſs, but excuſed myſelf on account of my family, the ſituation of which could not but be an object which I held too much at heart. The King approved my ſentiments, and afterwards queſtioned me reſpecting the Hollanders, whoſe true hiſtory I thought it proper to relate, at the end of which, he thanked me for having told him the truth; for, he ſaid, he knew very well that the Hollanders were but a ſmall merchant people, who were ſubjected to a Prince who received money of them, as a reward for defending them with his troops. I took the liberty likewiſe to aſk the King, whether he thought the Hollanders were Chriſtians, and he replied, that merchants had no religion, their only faith conſiſting in getting money, while they gave themſelves very little trouble about the belief of a God. Being well ſatisfied with this anſwer, I was deſirous of propoſing ſeveral other queſtions, but we were informed dinner was ready. I was ſerved upon a ſmall table, two feet high, oppoſite that of Ulikamhy. The repaſt conſiſted of rice, roaſt meat, preſerves, and a great variety of ſweetmeats, with a liquor reſembling hydromel. During the whole dinner, the King talked continually with the Bonze, and it was not till the ſerving up of the deſert, that he aſked me whether I was a Chriſtian, ſtrong enough to die in defence of the Croſs. I replied, that I had no other reſpect for the Croſs than what the value of its materials might demand, and that certainly I ſhould never expect to find a nation

Digitized by Google

nation ſo abſurd as to put me to death for ſaying, with truth, that wood was neither more nor leſs than wood. Hereupon he informed me, that I had not underſtood him, as he meant to aſk, whether I was reſolved to die for my God? I anſwered, that by dying for my God, I ſhould likewiſe die for the God of the Japaneſe, becauſe I acknowledged one only God, who had created every material and viſible thing. This anſwer ſatisfied him, for he exclaimed Namandabaz, and cauſed me to be told, that I was truly a Japaneſe in my religion, if I believed in nothing elſe. I was contented to inform him of my faith, that I had no other belief than in the only God, the creator of all things, and that my whole religion conſiſted in doing as much good to my fellow-creatures as was in my power, and to injure no one. After this information, the King embraced me, and ſaid Sindaulla, Sindaulla, which denotes very well, very well, and then he retired to take his evening's repoſe.

After his departure, I walked in the garden with the Bonze, who gave me an account of this rich and extenſive country, its government and policy; I made a few notes at that time, to enable me to commit my obſervations to paper more at large at a convenient opportunity.

Sunday, July 31, 1771. At the palace of the King Ulikamhy, at Japan, at the bottom of the Gulph of Uſilpatchar. The Bonze requeſted me, at three in the afternoon, to give orders to accompany him on board my veſſel, which he was deſirous of ſeeing. I directed Mr. Bocſarew to accompany him, with orders to make him a preſent of ſables, and to receive him with kindneſs and reſpect. At the ſame time, I ſent inſtructions to bring on ſhore ſix pair of fine beaver

Digitized by Google

ſkins, twenty-four foxes ſkins, and twenty-four ſables, with forty good muſkets well cleaned, and two pieces of cannon on their carriages. Theſe cannon were models which I had found in Kamchatka; and, as the Bonze had procured for me the order and permiſſion to bring my people on ſhore, I allowed a certain number of the company to land every day. After the departure of the Bonze I laid down to reſt, on account of a violent head-ach I was afflicted with. When I awoke, that is to ſay, at eight in the evening, the Bonze returned, and thanked me for the politeneſs with which he had been received on board, and the preſents which had been made. We ſupped alone, for the King, with all his attendants, was gone to a neighbouring town. During our ſupper, and afterwards, we continued our converſation, and I found abundance of good ſenſe and underſtanding in the diſcourſe of the Bonze. It was very late before we ſeparated; and as the reſt I had taken after dinner prevented me from ſleeping, I walked out into the garden, whereupon, approaching the houſe of the King, I heard a female voice, accompanied by ſome ſtringed inſtrument. The muſic and the ſong appeared to be not deficient in melody.

At day-break I received an account, that the preſents I had ſent for were on their way, and that Meſſ. Panow, Baturin, and Kuzneczow were coming, in order to be preſented to the King; that all was quiet on board, and that the aſſociates behaved in ſuch a manner as to make themſelves beloved by the natives.

At ten Mr. Panow, with his companions arrived, and the preſents were carried into my apartment. About eleven, the return of Ulikamhy was announced by a noiſe, and the

Digitized by Google

ſound of an hundred different inſtruments. The Bonze recommended me to meet him, and preſent my companions, which I immediately did. The firſt converſation conſiſted only of the ordinary civilities; but, as the Bonze had ſeized a favourable opportunity to inform him of the preſents, he expreſſed ſo ſtrong a deſire to examine them himſelf, that he poſtponed dinner, and repaired to my apartment. When I preſented the articles, I pronounced a diſcourſe, which was received with the moſt engaging attention; I then accompanied the King, where I found thirty-five covered tables for three perſons at each table. Every thing was ſerved up with ſurpriſing elegance and order. During the time of dinner ſeveral inſtruments were heard, which, though confuſed, were nevertheleſs agreeable. After dinner we proceeded to the garden, where the arms were tried at a certain diſtance. The butt was a round piece of wood, covered with paper, and ſeveral of my companions diſtinguiſhed themſelves. The King was at laſt deſirous of making a trial himſelf, and after having charged one of the muſkets, he cauſed a horſe to be brought, at which he fired with ſo good an aim, that it fell down lifeleſs. His ſatisfaction was extreme, and, in the fulneſs of his joy, he aſſured me, that I might make any requeſt I choſe, with the certainty of obtaining it. I availed myſelf of this favourable inſtant, to requeſt permiſſion, that I might return into his dominions, to open a trade under his protection. His anſwer ſurprized me, for he granted me this favour without heſitation; obſerving, at the ſame time, that my character had deſtroyed the prejudices he had imbibed by tradition, and that he not only granted me his protection in his dominions, but likewiſe would exert his influence with

Digitized by Google

the Emperor, to obtain permiſſion, that my veſſels might enter all his other harbours. He aſſured me I might depend on his promiſe, as long as my views ſhould be directed to trade only, and I ſhould not aim at eſtabliſhing any change of religion, or endeavour to acquire power by building fortreſſes. He concluded his diſcourſe, by informing me, that before my departure, he would contract engagements with me under the confirmation of a mutual oath.

Monday, Auguſt 1. Towards the evening, I ſaw preparations made for a grand illumination, and, as my interpreter, the Bonze was abſent, I was anxious to know the cauſe. He arrived later than ordinary, and informed me, that the King had convened the great men of his country, to whom he was deſirous of preſenting me, for which reaſon I was requeſted to wait upon him; and, as he thought it neceſſary to inform me of the formalities to be obſerved, he took that trouble upon himſelf, after which he led me towards the great hall, where I was received at the foot of the ſteps by two gentlemen richly cloathed, who introduced me into the hall, and placed me immediately oppoſite the King, who was ſeated on very rich carpets, having a quantity of armed gentlemen, with their ſabres drawn, beſide him. In a right line between myſelf and the King, I ſaw eighteen principal Japaneſe ſeated on carpets, and a number of armed men behind each of them.

Such was the order in which I found the aſſembly. The Bonze ſtood up beſide me, and near the King ſtood the literary lords, with paper, ink, and pencils in their hands. One of them demanded, with a loud voice, who I was? why I came to Japan? whence I came? and whither I was bound. The Bonze interpreted theſe demands, and I

Digitized by Google

made the ſame anſwer I had before given to the King. The next queſtion was, whether I was deſirous of eſtabliſhing a trade for my nation, and what it would conſiſt in. To the firſt part I anſwered in the affirmative, but excuſed myſelf with regard to the ſecond, becauſe, not being a merchant by profeſſion, I could not ſpeak determinately to it; but I promiſed, that at my firſt voyage, I would bring merchants with me, and ſhould be able to enter into formal ſubmiſſions. The King was content to reply, that the veſſels ſhould be loaded with furs, which I abſolutely promiſed. The laſt of all his demands were, that I ſhould bind myſelf never to bring to Japan any book treating of religion, and ſtill leſs any Bonze of my own country, which I likewiſe promiſed; after which the Bonze told me I might retire. He ſoon afterwards came to me, to inform me that Ulikamhy was about to retire to the town of Kilinigue; but that before his departure, he would make me preſents, and give me a flag, by which I might be known on my return to Japan; and that the King, moreover, was deſirous of entruſting me with a gentleman, to make the voyage with me, on condition that I ſhould bring him back the earlieſt opportunity.

About nine in the evening I received advice from on board, that all was in readineſs for ſailing; that the ſhip was full of proviſions; and I learned with pleaſure, that the women on board had received viſits, and ſeveral preſents, from the Japaneſe women. About ten, ſupper was ſerved up in my apartment, at which the Bonze and my officers were preſent. At ſix in the morning I was informed of the arrival of the preſents of the King, which were brought by two gentlemen, the Bonze preceding them.

He

Digitized by Google

He declared that he had orders to accompany me on board, or to remain with me all the time I might chuſe to ſtay until my departure. The preſents conſiſted of a ſabre, ornamented with gold, and ſuſpended to a belt wrought with fine pearls; a complete ſervice of porcelain, gilt; a quantity of tea and tobacco; a flag, to be diſplayed upon my return, containing an inſcription, of which figure 1, plate 16, is a copy; a little box filled with different jewellery; and another box, containing fifty pieces of gold, each weighing two ounces and a quarter, intended to defray the expences of the voyage of the young gentleman whom the Bonze preſented to me.

Being informed that the King was already gone, I acquainted the Bonze, that I was likewiſe determined to go on board, which being interpreted to a gentleman preſent, palanquins were ſoon brought, in which we were carried to the ſea ſide: here we found a prodigious number of people, who cried out "Uli ulan," &c. As ſoon as we came to the harbour, near thirty boats appeared, with whom we went on board, in company with the Bonze and two gentlemen, who perceiving that my ſmall boat was worn out, ſent on ſhore for another, which was built in a ſuperior manner, quite new, and varniſhed. They preſented us with this in the name of the King; and for my part, I made new preſents to the Bonze and the two gentlemen. Theſe laſt put into my hands two rolls of papers, containing, as the Bonze informed me, permiſſion to return to Japan. They all three recommended to my care the young man, who was to go the voyage with me; and I did not obſerve any embarraſſment in him, at finding himſelf among ſtrangers. They then returned to the ſhore, and

Digitized by Google

and on my arrival on board, Mr. Cruſtiew informed me, that the aſſociates had carried on a very advantageous trade with the Japaneſe, to whom they ſold a quantity of furs, and received in exchange, gold, porcelain, pearls, and other articles.

According to the report, all well.

Tueſday, Auguſt 2. On board the corvette, St. Peter and St. Paul, at anchor in the gulph of Uſilpatchar. A light breeze from the eaſtward, and fine weather. This day I aſſembled the whole company, to determine whether we ſhould carry our project into execution, and make an incurſion, according to the plan ſtipulated at the iſland of Liquor; but not one of them ventured to reply. I then took advantage of their ſilence, and declared, that I thought it would be moſt advantageous to continue our courſe to Canton, in China, where we might ſell our furs, and return to Europe; and afterwards, under the protection of ſome ſovereign power, carry into execution a more certain project of forming a permanent colony, in which we could not fail, as we had had the good fortune to open the trade of Japan. Theſe words were ſcarcely ſpoken, before the whole company cried out, that I might follow my own pleaſure in all things, and they would punctually obey. Upon this aſſurance, I gave orders to hoiſt our Japaneſe colours, and ſet ſail. At three, P. M. having ſaluted the country with twenty-one guns, we ſet ſail to the ſouthward. We met an immenſe quantity of fiſhermen in our way, all whom, at ſight of us, called out "Uli ulan." The night continued fair, with a light breeze.

According to the report, all well. Latitude in 34 degrees, 0 minutes; longitude in 341 degrees, 30 minutes.

Wind,

Digitized by Google

Wind from the eaſtward; current from the ſouth; courſe ſouth-weſt.

Wedneſday, Auguſt 3. Under ſail. Several of the aſſociates threw themſelves at my feet, and intreated me to anchor again upon the coaſt of Japan, in order to procure them new opportunities of trading, and turning their furs to account. I granted their requeſt the more readily, as I was deſirous of becoming acquainted with the coaſt; but I promiſed to conſent to their wiſhes on condition, that they ſhould behave with the moſt exact ſubordination. At ſun-ſet, the weather appeared ſqually to the northward. At day-break we diſcovered an European veſſel before us. I reſolved to chace her, but I ſoon obſerved the Dutch colours; and as the veſſel ſtood to the ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, I purſued my courſe, and ſuffered her to go on unmoleſted. I ſailed along the coaſt of what I took to be a peninſula.

According to the report, all well. Latitude in 33 degrees, 36 minutes; longitude in 340 degrees, 20 minutes. Wind eaſt-ſouth-eaſt; current ſouth-eaſt; courſe ſouth-weſt one quarter ſouth.

Thurſday, Auguſt 4. On the coaſt of Japan, in ſight of land, and in ſoundings of twenty-eight fathoms; coarſe ſand and ſhells mixed with coral; all ſails ſet, weather lowering, and a riſing ſea, with a freſh breeze from the ſouth-eaſt. The night was dark, and at ten P. M. a ſtorm began, attended with thunder and lightning. About three, P. M. a heavy ſhower fell, and abated the wind. At day-break, we found ourſelves driven on the coaſt by a ſtrong current from ſouth to north. Finding that we were near an opening, which promiſed to lead us into ſome good road or harbour, I ſuffered the ſhip to drive, and at laſt came

Digitized by Google

came to, in ſixteen fathoms. The ſmall boat was immediately lowered into the water, and Meſſrs. Kuzneczow and Panow, with eight aſſociates, went on board; and the Japaneſe paſſenger, who was to be put on ſhore in the ſhallop, with ſixteen armed aſſociates, followed under the command of Mr. Cruſtiew, to ſupport the ſmall boat, in caſe of need. After the diſpatch of the boats, I gave orders for cleaning and loading our arms, and priming our great guns afreſh.

According to the report, all in good health; the ſhip making no water. Latitude in 33 degrees, 34 minutes; longitude in 339 degrees, 12 minutes. Wind ſouth-eaſt; a ſtrong current from the ſouth; courſe ſouth-weſt, but the current drove us to the north-weſt.

Friday, Auguſt 5. At anchor on the coaſt of Japan, to the weſtward of the kingdom of Idzo. At two, P. M. the boats returned with a large Japaneſe veſſel. When they came near us, Mr. Kuzneczow called to us to weigh our anchor, and ſend out towing ropes to the ſmall boat, the ſhallop, and the Japaneſe veſſel, to carry us into the harbour, which I accordingly did. Mr. Kuzneczow coming on board, informed me, that having happily arrived on ſhore, the Japaneſe, at firſt ſight, fled before him; but after they heard the Japaneſe paſſenger call to them, they returned, and in conſequence of his information, they had been very eager to ſhew their politeneſs to our people; that they proceeded to a village, where they were received with acclamations of joy, and the inhabitants gave them rice, tea, fruit, and a very agreeable liquor; that during their repaſt, a Japaneſe, armed with a ſabre and lance, came and converſed with the paſſenger; after which he addreſſed his

Digitized by Google

his diſcourſe to Mr. Kuzneczow, by pronouncing the words, "Nanghaſaki Kallas Tohollandi Fiaſſi Guzarimas," and that immediately he ordered a boat to be got ready, giving them to underſtand, by ſigns, that he propoſed to follow us, to conduct the veſſel into the harbour, which he performed to our very great ſatisfaction. Annexed is the view * of the land, and the ſituation of the harbour, named Miſaqui Iphima Kallas.

At ſix we arrived at the mouth of the harbour, where we moored in eleven fathoms, muddy bottom. The Japaneſe boat quitted us, to go on ſhore, and ſoon returned with five others, which towed us to another ſituation, where we anchored in five fathoms, good anchoring ground, conſiſting of mud. The Japaneſe ſeeing us ſafely at anchor, left us, when I took the precaution to moor the ſhip. At ten, a well-cloathed Japaneſe came on board, who informed me, by the interpretation of Mr. Bocſarew, that he was appointed to guard us; after which he immediately retired, and we ſoon perceived three long boats at anchor near us, each having three ſignal lights. On my ſide I likewiſe kept a ſharp look out on board, with lighted matches hanging beſide the guns. In the night the wind veered round to the ſouth-weſt, and blew with ſuch violence, that we thought ourſelves fortunate that we were in a harbour. At ſeven in the morning a boat came alongſide, and three gentlemen came on board, who queſtioned me, whence I came? how long I propoſed to ſtay? whither I was bound? whether I was a Hollander? and in that caſe

* Theſe drawings never came to the hands of the editor.

Digitized by Google

they requeſted a letter for Nanghaſaki; and, after all, they deſired to inſpect the veſſel, and demanded how many people we were on board. My anſwer was, that I came from afar, and was on my way to Nanghaſaki; that I had anchored there to avoid the tempeſt; that I was in want of proviſions and water; that I was deſirous of trading; and, laſtly, that our number amounted to one hundred and fifty men, who were in want of every thing, but that the veſſel ſhould not be inſpected. I know not whether Bocſarew interpreted well or not, but I perceived they were not ſatisfied with us, for they made ſigns that they did not believe we were Hollanders, pointing to our beards and cloathing, and at the ſame time exclaiming, "Hay, to Gollandi, To Pilipines;" whence I underſtood that they took us for Spaniards, coming from Manilla. I gave them a letter for the Hollanders, to the following effect:

Copy of the letter given to the Japaneſe, in the Bay of Miſaqui, to be forwarded to the Hollanders at Nanghaſaki.

"Health to the officers in chief of the Factory of the "Dutch Eaſt India Company.

"I ACQUAINT you, gentlemen, that finding my-"ſelf upon the coaſt of Japan, whither I was driven by a "ſeries of thoſe incidents which often at ſea compel the "navigator to ſeek his ſafety where-ever he can, I find my-"ſelf in diſtreſs, which cannot be deſcribed; for which "reaſon I have thought proper to addreſs myſelf to you,

Digitized by Google

" and to requeſt you to ſend me an interpreter, and aſſiſt-
" ance to conduct me to your port. My ſhip is a corvette,
" with near one hundred perſons on board. An anſwer,
" if you pleaſe.

" I have the honour to be,

" GENTLEMEN,

" Your ſervant,

" MAURICE AUGUST. BENYOWSKY."

" P. S. In order that you may not be prejudiced by ſuſ-
" picions againſt me, I declare to you, that having been
" chief of the confederacy of Poland, I had the misfor-
" tune to be made priſoner by the Ruſſians, whoſe ſove-
" reign exiled me to Kamchatka, from whence I have
" made my eſcape, by the exertion of courage and valour,
" with ninety-ſix companions; and in conſequence there-
" of I am now upon the coaſt of Japan, in my way to re-
" turn to Europe."

After the departure of the Japaneſe, my companions, deſpairing of being able to open the trade without fighting, requeſted me to leave the harbour as ſoon as the wind ſhould ſlacken; to which I conſented, and immediately got under way, with a favourable breeze from the north-north-weſt.

According to the report, all in good health. Under way, ſailing out of the port of Miſaqui.

Digitized by Google

Saturday, Auguſt 6. Saw ſeveral thouſand fiſhing boats, many of whoſe nets we broke, not being able to avoid them. We continued our courſe, with all ſails ſet, the ſea being calm, and a ſtrong current from the ſouth. At day-break no land nor veſſel was in ſight.

According to the report, all in good health. Latitude in 32 degrees, 56 minutes; longitude in 338 degrees. Wind north one quarter weſt; current from the ſouth; courſe weſt.

Sunday, Auguſt 7. Wind and weather as yeſterday. About ſun-ſet, ſaw twenty or twenty-two veſſels ſtanding to the north-eaſt. My companions being enraged at the diſappointment of their hopes, at our ſecond anchoring place, requeſted me to fall on thoſe veſſels; but I refuſed, as I did not mean to give the ſmalleſt cauſe of diſcontent to Ulikamhy; I therefore continued my courſe, with the wind and tide in my favour.

According to the report, all well. Latitude in 32 degrees, 53 minutes; longitude in 336 degrees, 18 minutes. Wind north by eaſt; current from the ſouth; courſe weſt.

Monday, Auguſt 8. A pleaſant breeze; the ſea ſomewhat irregular, and fine hot weather. Continued our courſe, with all ſails ſet, The night was clear ſtar-light.

According to the report, all in good health. Latitude in 32 degrees, 51 minutes; longitude in 333 degrees, 15 minutes. Wind north-north-eaſt; current from the ſouth; courſe weſt.

Tueſday, Auguſt 9. Fine weather, as yeſterday. About ſun-ſet we thought we ſaw land in the north-weſt quarter. At midnight ſaw ſeveral headlands. At day-break, found ourſelves

Digitized by Google

ourſelves on the coaſt, and the wind being in our favour, I determined to come to. At noon, perceiving the entrance of a bay, I proceeded, and anchored in eighteen fathom water, coarſe greeniſh ſand.

According to the report, all well. Latitude in 32 degrees, 45 minutes; longitude in 330 degrees, 22 minutes. Wind north-eaſt; current from the ſouth; courſe weſt one quarter ſouth.

Wedneſday, Auguſt 10. The poſition of the veſſel not permitting me to ſee all that happened on ſhore, I ordered Mr. Kuzneczow and Mr. Wynbladth, with eight aſſociates, to land, and endeavour to inſinuate themſelves into the minds of the inhabitants; but the violent reception my companions met with, gave me reaſon to apprehend diſagreeable conſequences; but happily my fears were calmed, by the prudence of Mr. Kuzneczow, who, ſeeing the Japaneſe determined to defend the landing, returned. After the arrival of the boat, and upon the aſſurance that there was a town ſituated upon the coaſt of the bay, I weighed, and approached within one hundred fathoms of the ſhore, where I anchored in ſix fathoms; the night favoured my enterprize, and at day-break we were moored before the town. At ſeven in the morning I ſent Meſſrs. Panow and Cruſtiew, with Bocſarew as an interpreter, and twenty-two armed aſſociates, having likewiſe mounted two pieces of artillery in the ſhallop.

After having diſpatched the ſhallop and the ſmall boat, I embarked myſelf in the Japaneſe yawl, which I had received as a preſent at Uſilpatchar, and as it was the lighteſt, I landed firſt. The Japaneſe ſeeing us near the ſhore, preſented themſelves armed with lances and ſabres, and appeared

Digitized by Google

peared diſpoſed to oppoſe our deſcent; but perceiving by our countenance that we were determined, at any rate, to land, they retired to a ſmall diſtance. When I came on ſhore, I made ſigns to the Japaneſe to approach, and immediately an old man, of a good appearance, advanced, and demanded by what right we had landed in their country, and whether we had the permiſſion of Daiſi; obſerving, that the Dutch never came on ſhore without orders. I cauſed him to be anſwered, that we were neither Hollanders nor Spaniards, but men, and friends, who came for water and proviſions. Whereupon the man replied, that we ſhould have proviſions and water ſent on board, but that it was neceſſary we ſhould ourſelves go on board again. But as I declared that I would not quit the land before I had received proviſions and water, the Japaneſe haſtened to load three boats, with which I went on board. Several of the Japaneſe having come on board, began to trade with my people, and haſtened to return again to ſhore, whence they arrived with ten other boats, laden with copper, porcelain, tea, ſabres, ſilk, and gold, which they exchanged for furs. Theſe commercial tranſactions familiarized them with us, and ſeveral among them teſtified their attachment; among others, a young man ſaid much to me, without being able to make himſelf underſtood; when, being out of patience, he repeated, "To Hollandi, To Sindzi, Pu "pu Tippo," which I underſtood, and in anſwer, led him to the guns, and ſaid, "To Gollandi, pu." Towards noon the Japaneſe retired.

According to the report, all in good health. At anchor on the coaſt of the iſland Xicoco, in the harbour of Touſa.

Thurſday,

Digitized by Google

Thurſday, Auguſt 11. Extremly hot weather, with ſome ſhowers at intervals. About two, P. M. we heard a great noiſe on ſhore, reſembling the beating of many drums, and ſoon after we perceived on ſhore a quantity of men on horſeback, armed with lances and darts, and a ſtill greater number on foot, who haſtened on board an infinite number of boats. Upon this appearance, I immediately ſent Mr. Panow, with Bocſarew, and eighteen aſſociates, to declare to the Japaneſe, that I was deſirous of being informed of their intentions, that I might receive them either as friends, or enemies. But they had hardly put off before I perceived three ſmall boats rowing from the ſhore, the middle one of which had five flags, and near fifteen ſtreamers. I took theſe for marks of diſtinction, and therefore prepared myſelf to ſalute them on their arrival. Our ſmall boat at laſt accoſted the Japaneſe, and performed its commiſſion; and afterwards returning with them, I ſaluted the Japaneſe by a running fire of muſquetry, intermixed with the diſcharge of ſix of our great guns. This mark of politeneſs was ſufficient to have driven our viſitors back, for their fear was ſuch, that they fell on their faces in their boats, and could ſcarcely be perſuaded to riſe by any encouragement of Bocſarew, who urged them to proceed. But as I was ignorant of all this, I gave orders to fire ſix additional guns, at the inſtant the Japaneſe gentleman entered the ſhip, which was accordingly performed. His terror at this noiſe was ſo great, that he fainted away, and it was more than a quarter of an hour before he was able to ſpeak. To revive his ſpirits, I gave him ſome Japaneſe wine mixed with ſugar, which comforted him, and reſtored his courage. I then cauſed Mr. Bocſarew to aſk what he had to

ſay

Digitized by Google

ſay to me. He informed me, that he was Uchaymi Mamas, commander of the guard of the coaſt of the kingdom Touza; and that being informed that we were ſtrangers, who arrived in the country without orders of the Emperor, he was come to arreſt us; and to prove that we ought to obey him, he drew a large roll of paper from beneath his habit, which he preſented to me. Upon this, pretending to be ignorant, or not to underſtand what he ſaid, I received the roll, and gave it to Mr. Cruſtiew, with orders to keep it; at ſight of which the poor devil requeſted his paper, and pointed to his neck, to ſhew me, that by loſing his deputation, he ſhould be puniſhed with death. To ſet him at eaſe, I cauſed his paper to be returned; but informed him, by my interpreter, that I eſteemed his maſter, and ſhould be his friend, as long as I ſhould be convinced that he was juſt, but when aſſured of the contrary, I ſhould deſpiſe him. At theſe words Mimam ſhut his ears, and I found great difficulty in making him underſtand, that he might think himſelf very happy that I did not arreſt him himſelf. The tone of aſſurance with which he ſaw me ſpeak to the interpreter, ſoftened him, and I ſeized the opportunity to make him a preſent of a beaver ſkin, and ſix ſables, which he was very glad of; and I ſaw him retire with ſatisfaction, and promiſes of friendſhip.

After his departure, being convinced that we could not carry on any regular commerce at this place, I weighed, and taking the advantage of a breeze from the northward, made ſail, and ſtood to the ſouth. At day-break we ſaw a veſſel, on which I fired, but he would not come to, until a ſhot ſtruck him. I then ſent my ſhallop on board, but we

Digitized by Google

we found her to be only a fiſhing veſſel, and let her depart in peace.

According to the report, all well; the ſhip making no water. Latitude in 32 degrees, 15 minutes; longitude in 350 degrees, 16 minutes. Wind north; no current; courſe ſouth.

Friday, Auguſt 12. Fine clear weather, and exceſſive hot, with a moderate breeze. Doubling a cape we ſaw four barks; after which I ſtood for a ſhort time, but as they directed their courſe to the north-weſt, I gave up the chace, and ſtood again to the ſouthward. At ſix, P. M. ſaw land on the ſtarboard bow, at the diſtance of five leagues, for which reaſon I kept only the topſails ſet. About three in the morning we were ſo near the ſhore, that we heard the breakers; and at day-break we ſaw the danger we had happily avoided. At ſeven we ſaw another land a-head, and as we approached it very rapidly, we ſaw it very diſtinctly, at ten, bearing due ſouth, and a ſmall iſland ſouth-weſt. My companions propoſed to me to make a deſcent in a bay, then in ſight, and I could not reſiſt their preſſing ſolicitations. I therefore anchored in twenty-two fathoms, between the ſmall and the large iſland; but at a very ſhort diſtance from the latter. Mr. Kuznec-zow was immediately diſpatched, with eight aſſociates, and I ſent the ſhallop after him. When we had entered the ſound, which we at firſt ſuppoſed to be a bay, the ſmall boat paſſed very near a large bark at anchor, whoſe crew ſhot at them with arrows, and at the ſame time near ſixty boats put off from the ſhore, ſo that my people were in great danger. I was adviſed of this by two reports of the pateraroes which I heard, and I immediately weighed, and proceeded to

Digitized by Google

ſupport my detachment, by entering the ſound. I ſoon perceived the ſtate of affairs, and ſtanding towards the great bark, I fired two ſhots into her, which drove all her people from the deck. The ſhallop then went alongſide, and took poſſeſſion of the veſſel, while, on my part, I approached the ſhore, and anchored in four fathoms and an half, at the diſtance of half a cannon ſhot off ſhore, whither I likewiſe cauſed the Japaneſe bark to be brought, in which we found fifty-ſix men, four of them being mimas, or gentlemen; revenue officers of the Emperor. The lading of the bark conſiſted of tobacco, ſugar, ſilk, varniſh, porcelain, one hundred pieces of leather, ſome bales of cotton and ſilk, ſeveral cheſts of ſabres, belts, and other articles of wearing apparel.

According to the report, two ſick; the ſhip making no water. Latitude in 30 degrees, 38 minutes; longitude in 329 degrees, 51 minutes. Wind north; current north-eaſt; courſe ſouth one quarter weſt.

Saturday, Auguſt 13. At anchor near the iſland Tacaſima. I aſſembled the company, to decide what was beſt to be done; and the ſociety determined to take the lading of the bark on board, and quit the iſland. But that which gave me the moſt ſatisfaction, was, that my Japaneſe paſſenger, who had accompanied Mr. Kuzneczow, was wounded by an arrow in the attack. We provoked him, and he declared to Bocſarew, that he ſhould be very glad if we would kill all the priſoners, as he aſſured us that they belonged to the iſland Ximo, all whoſe inhabitants were wicked, and good for nothing. Mr. Bocſarew ſucceeded in making himſelf more clearly underſtood by him, for which reaſon I availed myſelf of the ſervices of both, to ex-

Digitized by Google

amine the officers who were priſoners. They replied, that they were civil officers, charged to collect the revenues of the iſland Tacaſima, and of the iſland Nanghaſaki; that they had entered the harbour only a moment before us, having ſeen at a diſtance the chace I had made of ſeveral barks, likewiſe carrying officers to collect the revenues in the ſouthern provinces; that they had entered Tacaſima with no other view than to put the inhabitants on their guard againſt us; and that they had only done their duty in attacking our people. I cauſed my interpreter to anſwer them, that I approved their zeal, and that their want of ſucceſs was no fault of theirs; but that, as they were now in my power, I thought it proper to prevent them from doing me any injury, and for that reaſon I ſhould confine them till my departure. They entreated that I would not detain them, for they ſaid that they were ordered to repair, in the courſe of eight days, to the port of Vranda, to join the convoy, which would depart about the end of the month, to the number of five hundred veſſels, for the port of Oſachta; but when they underſtood that they were no longer permitted to hope that I would reſtore their veſſel, they ſhewed ſigns of the utmoſt deſpair. Their prayers, however, were in vain, for my companions certainly were not diſpoſed to attend to them; and all that I could obtain was, that the lives of theſe unhappy people ſhould be ſpared.

At five in the evening, I ſent four of them on ſhore, to demand boats, that the reſt might be landed; but it was not till ſeven in the evening that ſix boats came off, in which I ſent them away, under the conduct of ſixteen of my aſſociates. About nine I weighed, and made ſail, and with much difficulty (by the aſſiſtance of the boats which towed

Digitized by Google

us) we got out of the ſound. As ſoon as we were in the open channel, we continued our courſe to the ſouth-weſt during the whole night; and as my companions were unacquainted with the manner of working the bark, I was forced to take her in tow, which impeded my courſe. For this reaſon I determined to take her lading on board, which was done in the courſe of the day, after which we ſcuttled and ſunk her. The cargo of this bark would have been worth three or four hundred thouſand livres, French money, if we had been in Europe.

According to the report, one ſick. Sprung a leak. Latitude in 30 degrees, 0 minutes; longitude 328 degrees, 0 minutes. Wind north; no current; courſe ſouth-weſt by ſouth.

Sunday, Auguſt 14. Exceſſive hot weather. The leak continually increaſing, demanded our exertions to prevent its conſequences. After ſome ſearch, it was at laſt diſcovered that the water entered in a ſtream as large as a man's arm, through a cleft in the fore part of the ſhip. This misfortune was, no doubt, occaſioned by the careleſsneſs of my aſſociates, who, in diſcharging the Japaneſe bark, and coming alongſide, had knocked the oakum out of ſome of the ſeams under water; and as it was impoſſible for us to remedy this misfortune, we were extremely alarmed. At ſun-ſet the wind ſlackened, and the water became agitated, with a noiſe reſembling that of a river falling into the ſea. From ſix, P. M. till noon, the pumps were kept conſtantly at work, without being able to clear the well, in which we had continually three or four feet water.

At eight, a breeze ſprung up in the north-eaſt quarter, and the man at the maſt-head called out land. Unfortunately

Digitized by Google

nately the ſhip's cargo was ſhifted by the water ſo much, and ſhe heeled to ſtarboard to ſuch a degree, that the pumps could not be worked, and the water entered upon the deck. In this moſt deplorable ſituation, finding myſelf at the mouth of the ſtreight, between the two iſlands, the direction of which I could ſee but very confuſedly in the night, I determined to advance with the lead going. The ſhip ſoon after being ſomewhat righted, I employed all my people in pumping and baling, for there were near five feet water in the hold. During this laborious buſineſs I ſent Mr. Kuzneczow on ſhore, to diſcover a good anchoring place; and about two in the morning he returned, with the news that he had found a good and commodious harbour. I therefore reſolved to proceed to it; and as I durſt not fatigue the veſſel by weighing the anchor, I ſlipt the cable, and ſtood forward under the topſails. At half paſt three we arrived at the place Mr. Kuzneczow had pointed out. I found the entrance dangerous; and perceiving the wind increaſing, and diſpoſed to be ſtormy, I was extremely alarmed, and lowered down the Japaneſe yawl, in which I went a-head with four aſſociates, after having given orders that the ſhip ſhould ſtand after us with all the ſail ſhe could ſet. At four we had a dreadful ſtorm, the ſea being all in a foam, and notwithſtanding our efforts to keep a-head, the ſhip over-ran us; and to complete our misfortune, the yawl ſtruck on a rock off the ſouthern point of a bay, and overſet, at the diſtance of about two hundred fathoms from the ſhore. I uſed the utmoſt exertions to reach the port by ſwimming, but the ſea was ſo rough, that it was not till after the greateſt exertions that I reached the ſhore, quite exhauſted. I loſt all recollection of what followed,

Digitized by Google

followed, until I was rouzed by my companions, who, having taken notice of the rock on which the yawl overſet, ſent the ſmall boat to take us up. Loginow, one of the people who was with me, called to them, and they at laſt found me in a ſtate of ſtupefaction, at the foot of a tree. The information I received from them, that the ſhip was at anchor in a good harbour, and that the iſland was inhabited, made me forget the paſt misfortune, and I preſſed them to return; but underſtanding that three of my aſſociates were ſtill wanting, I engaged them to proceed in the ſearch of theſe unfortunate men, of whom we found one, named Andreanow, alive, and the other two dead upon the beach. After this we embarked, almoſt lifeleſs, and went alongſide the ſhip, which was at anchor in four fathom water, and ſo deeply immerſed, that I determined to run her aground upon a ſand bank. At eleven, I was, by my own orders, carried on ſhore; for the fatigue had exhauſted me ſo much, that I could not ſtir any of my limbs. My aſſociates ſet up a tent, while others were employed in unloading the cargo; and Mr. Baturin undertook to bury the two people who were drowned. Plate XIV. No. 3, exhibits a plan of the harbour of the iſland of Uſmay Ligon.

According to the report, ſeven ſick; the veſſel aground. Latitude in 29 degrees, 00 minutes; longitude in 326 degrees, 20 minutes. Wind north-eaſt; current from the northward; courſe ſouth-weſt one quarter ſouth.

END OF VOLUME I.

Digitized by Google

DIRECTIONS TO THE BINDER.

The Plates are numbered from I. to XXIX. but the Numbers III, IV, XII, XXIII, XXIV, XXV, are wanting.

Bind them together at the end of each Volume to which they belong, as is ſhewn by the reference in the corner.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

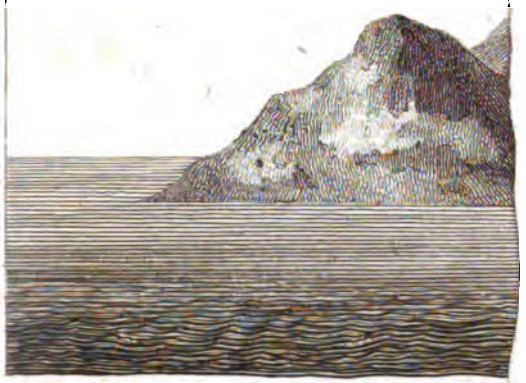
Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

N°I.

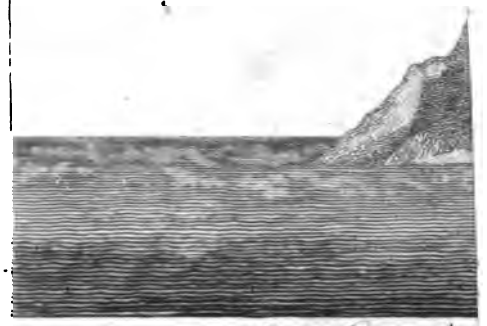


N°II.

Digitized by Google

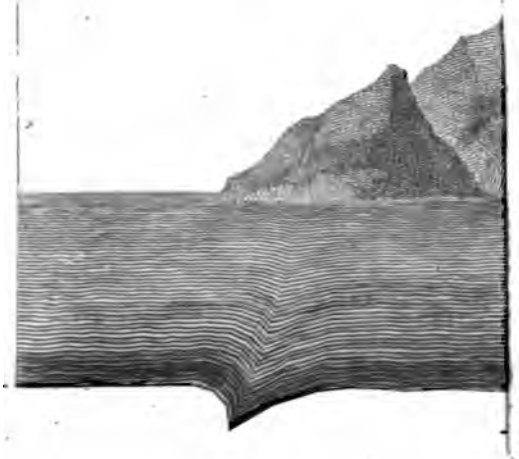
Digitized by Google

Nº I.



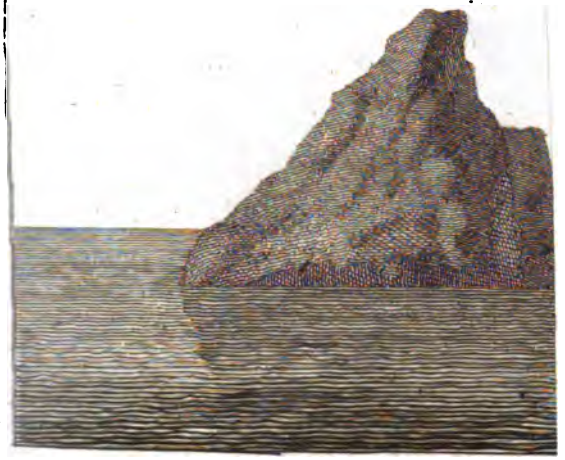
Head Land of St

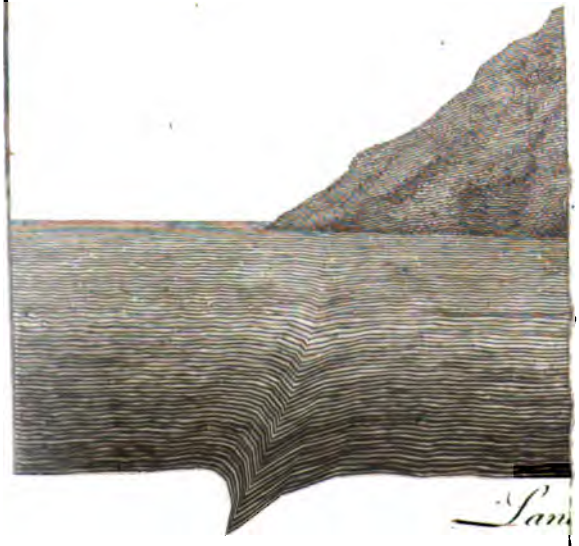
Nº II.



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

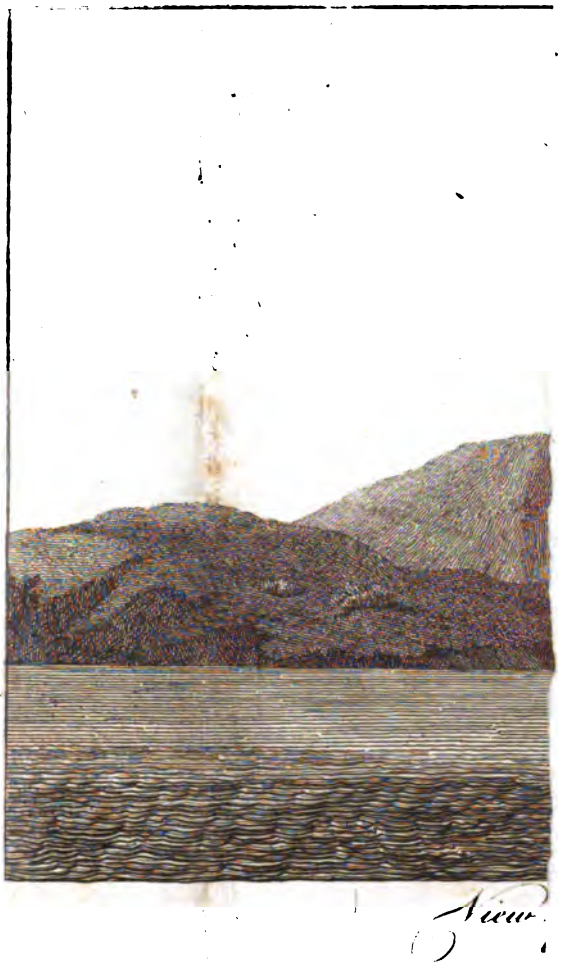




BIBLIOTHECA REGIA DRESDENSIS

Digitized by Google

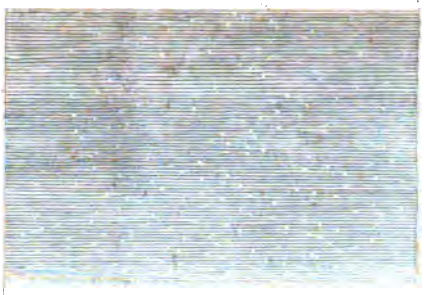
Digitized by Google

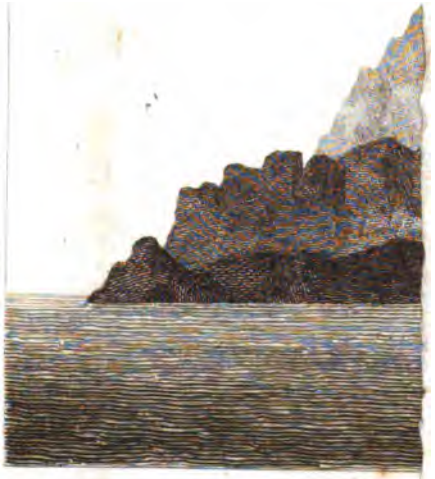


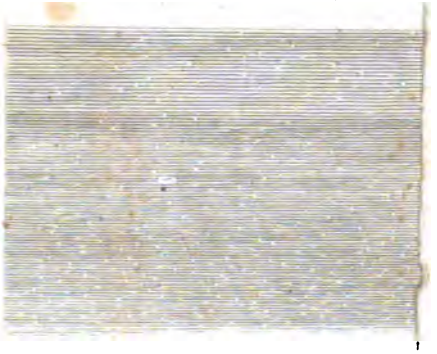
BIBLIOTHECA BODLEIANA

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

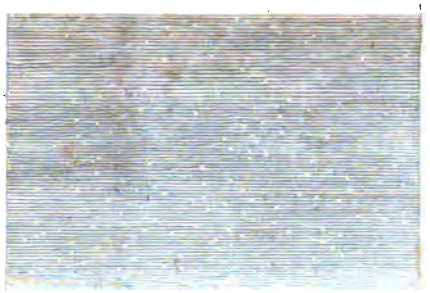


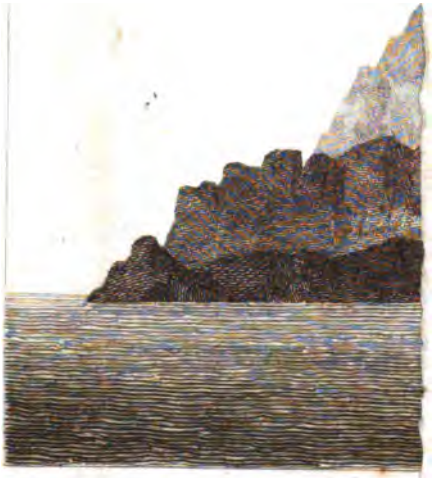


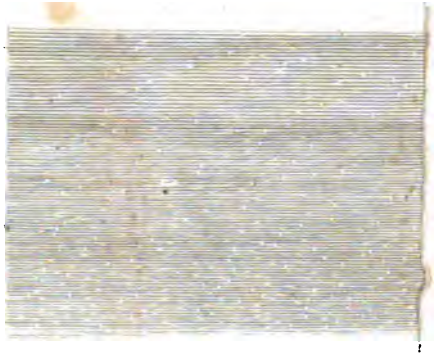


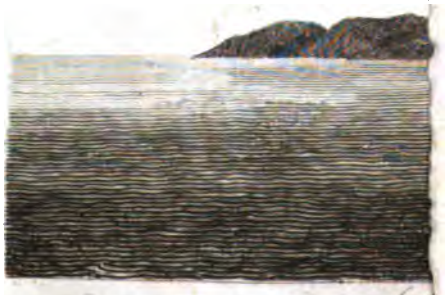
Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



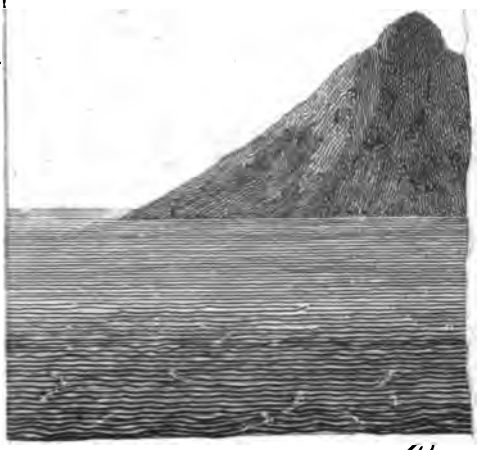




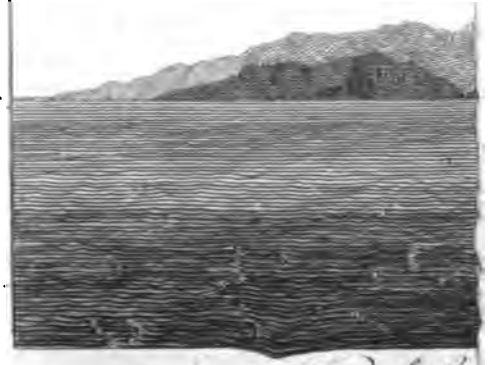


Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Cape



View of the

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

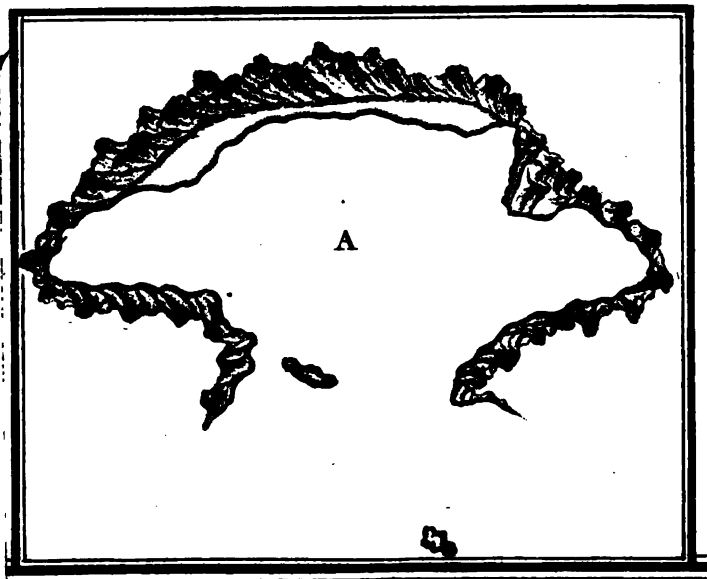
The order of the Japanese March

Digitized by Google

Publ as the Act directs Nov.r 12. 1789. by G. Robinson and Partners.

Digitized by Google

N°I.



Mitikas

R. Monas Kallas

The Sound of USMAY LIGON in 29°.00′ N. Lat. Vol.I. p.422.

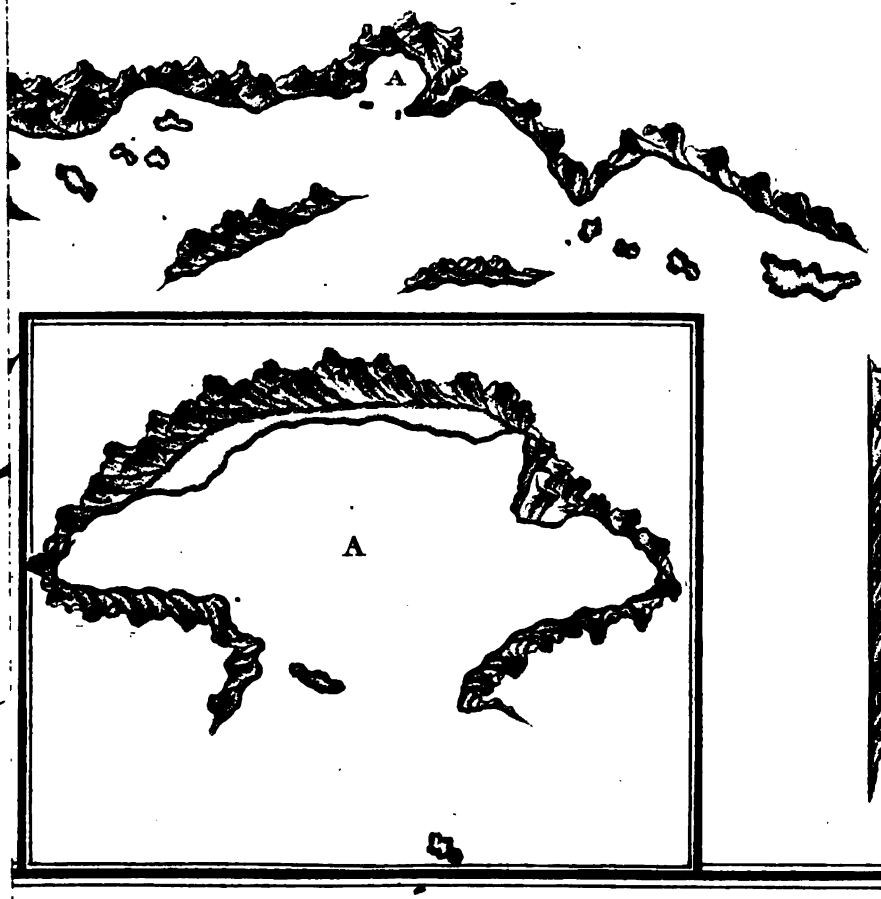
of the BA
the Coast of
Latitude 3
the Ya

AB. A

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

No. I.



Mitikas

R. Minas Kallas

The Sound of USMAY LIGON in 29°. 00′ N. Lat. Vol.: 1. p. 422.

of the BA
the Coast of
Latitude 3
the Ye

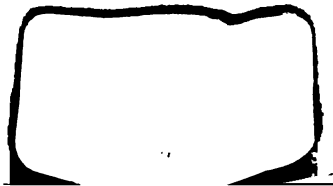
MB. T

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google